

1 rls

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Testimony of T/5th Grade Willie Ellis taken
2 at Seattle, Washington on 25 September 1944 by
3 Lieutenant Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6
7

8
9 Q State your name, rank, serial number, and organization.

10 A T/5 Willie Ellis, 650th Port Company, 38547467, Fort Lawton,
11 Washington.

12
13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir.

16
17 Q Are you sure?

18 A Yes, sir.

19
20 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, I believe you have testified
21 that you went to your barracks about 9 o'clock?

22 A Yes, sir.

23
24 Q Did you go to bed?

25 A Yes, sir.

26
27 Q And did you go to sleep?

28 A Yes, I slept awhile.

29
30 Q What time did you go to bed?

31 A I don't know, between 9 and 10 somewhere.

32
33 Q Were you later awakened during the night?

34 A Yes, sir.

35
36 Q About what time were you awakened?

37 A I don't know, it was kind of late that night, after eleven I
38 think.

39
40 Q Eleven o'clock in the evening?

41 A Yes, sir.

42
43 Q What awakened you?

44 A Noisedown in the Italian Area.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

883

(ELLIS)

2

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q When you were first awakened, what noise did you hear?
2 A Some trucks and things going down in the area and I could hear
3 a lot of talking.
4
5 Q Could you hear screaming?
6 A No, sir.
7
8 Q Yelling?
9 A Just hear some boys talking loud.
10
11 Q You could hear rocks being thrown against buildings?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q And glass being broken?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q You got up then?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q And you went outside the building?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q What barracks do you sleep in?
24 A It was-- I forget the number-- it was on the edge of the foot
25 of the hill.
26
27 Q In one of the black barracks?
28 A In a white one.
29
30 Q Was it 719, right across from the mess hall?
31 A Yes, seven something, I forget the other number.
32
33 Q Anyway, you were awakened and got up from your bed.
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q I believe you stated you went downstairs?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q When you got downstairs what did you see.
40 A I went downstairs.
41
42 Q After you had gotten downstairs on the bottom floor, who did you
43 see down there that you remember?
44 A I don't remember seeing anyone I could recognize.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

884

(ELLIS)

3

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Were any guards placed on the doors at that time?
2 A At the back door?
3
4 Q Yes.
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Did you see Sergeant Tanner? Do you know Sergeant Tanner?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Then you went outside?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q Did you go over near the mess hall after you were outside?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q When you got to the mess hall, or in the vicinity of the mess
17 hall, whom did you observe there?
18 A There was an Italian-- I didn't recognize anyone.
19
20 Q Wait a minute. When you arrived in the vicinity of the mess hall
21 did you see anyone you recognized?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q Then where did you go?
25 A I turned around and I came back.
26
27 Q You turned around and went back where?
28 A To the barracks, sir.
29
30 Q Now, why did you go back to the barracks?
31 A The first sergeant, I could hear him telling the rest of the
32 boys to don't go down.
33
34 Q Who was the first sergeant?
35 A Robert Aubry.
36
37 Q You heard him telling some of the boys not to go down there?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q And you turned around and went back to your barracks?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q After you went back to the barracks, what did you do?
44 A I went upstairs and got in bed and finally an MP came up there
45 and I could hear them talking and the Major and OD came up and told them
to cut out the lights.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

385

(ELLIS)

4

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q You then went to sleep?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q When you left the vicinity of the mess hall and went toward the
5 Italian Area, what road did you take into the Italian Area, Lawton
6 Road?
7 A Yes, sir.
8
9 Q When you arrived in the vicinity of Building 708, the first
10 building behind the mess hall, what was going on there?
11 A All the lights was out in the barracks.
12
13 Q Inside the building?
14 A The two on the outside was out, but the one in the mess hall
15 was lit up.
16
17 Q In back of the mess hall?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q And you could see individuals there, couldn't you?
21 A They got down the street.
22
23 Q You mean they were walking away from Building 708 toward the
24 orderly room.
25 A Yes, sir, behind the first barracks.
26
27 Q They were between 708 and 709?
28 A The first two buildings on the other side of the barracks.
29
30 Q Did you go behind 708?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q Did you go between 708 and 709?
34 A You mean the two barracks?
35
36 Q Yes.
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q Where did you go in the Italian Area?
40 A Between the mess hall and the first barracks. That is when I
41 heard the first sergeant telling the fellows not to go down there.
42
43 Q While you were down there standing between the mess hall and
44 Building 708, who did you see you recognized?
45 A I didn't see anyone, but someone throwed at me, it was kind of

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

5

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 dark. I was further from the mess hall and closer to the barracks.

2 Q In other words, you were inside the Italian Area?

3 A I reckon so, between the mess hall and the first barracks.

4 Q Near the barracks?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q While you stood there you state someone threw at you?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q Did you see who did that?

9 A No, sir, it was on the left hand side of me.

10 Q What did they throw at you?

11 A I don't know, a rock I reckon.

12 Q Did it hit you?

13 A No, sir, it was about 4 feet away.

14 Q After they had thrown at you, you went into the Italian Area, is
15 that it?

16 A No, sir, that is when the first sergeant was objecting and calling
17 the fellows and telling them not to go down there.

18 Q As you went from the vicinity of Building 700 into the Italian
19 Area, did you pick up anything to defend yourself with?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q What?

22 A Rocks, a couple of them.

23 Q Where did you find the rocks?

24 A Laying on the ground.

25 Q Why did you take the rocks into the Italian Area?

26 A Sir, the rocks was already there.

27 Q Why did you take them with you?

28 A I didn't take any with me, I just picked them up where I was.

29 Q After you got into the Italian Area you picked up some rocks?

30 A Yes, sir.

31 Q Why?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

27

(ELLIS)

6

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A Just to defend myself.
- 2 Q No one had thrown at you at that time?
- 3 A Yes, that is when I picked up the rocks.
- 4
- 5 Q After they threw at you you picked up the rocks?
- 6 A Yes, sir.
- 7
- 8 Q You hadn't picked them up before that time?
- 9 A No, sir.
- 10
- 11 Q Did you take a club with you?
- 12 A No, sir.
- 13
- 14 Q Didn't you come by building 700 where the 2-by-4's are and didn't
- 15 you pick one up and carry it with you?
- 16 A No, sir.
- 17
- 18 Q The only weapon you had was two rocks you picked up after you
- 19 were thrown at?
- 20 A No, sir, just one rock.
- 21
- 22 Q Did you throw it at anyone?
- 23 A No, sir, I didn't see anyone to throw it at.
- 24
- 25 Q You were down in the Italian Area, in the vicinity of Building
- 26 700 and didn't see anyone?
- 27 A They had-- when I got up they had come around the other side
- 28 of the barracks.
- 29
- 30 Q When you stood there there weren't men passing back and forth
- 31 between the Italian Area and building 700?
- 32 A I seen some MP's. They was coming around the end of the barracks
- 33 in a jeep about that time, the MP's was.
- 34
- 35 Q When did the MP's arrive there?
- 36 A I don't know.
- 37
- 38 Q Before you got there or afterwards?
- 39 A I saw them before I got there. That is what woke me up, those
- 40 trucks going down in the area.
- 41
- 42 Q You state now you were awakened by trucks moving into the Italian
- 43 Area?
- 44 A Talking and hollering, loud talk around there.
- 45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

7

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Isn't it a fact, Ellis, you were awakened by the hollering in
2 front of the barracks and the loud talking and that you got up and went
3 outside and were outside when the trucks arrived there?

4 A Yes, sir.

5 Q It wasn't the trucks, it was the hollering outside the building
6 that awakened you?

7 A2 I reckon so.

8 Q The trucks came after you were outside.

9 A Some jeeps were already down there.

10 Q How do you know they were already down there?

11 A Some was going by.

12 Q After you had gotten outside the building?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q You had heard none while you were inside the building?

15 A No, sir, I just heard the rocks and things.

16 Q You heard a bunch of men kicking the boards out of a fence, didn't
17 you?

18 A No, sir, I don't remember.

19 Q You didn't hear them kicking down the fence and picking up
20 boards and taking them to the Italian Area?

21 A No, sir, because a bunch of fellows were upstairs-- I don't
22 know-- some of the fellows upstairs were shooting dice or something like
23 that and making a lot of noise up there.

24 Q Did you hear the soldiers in front of Building 700 kick the
25 boards off the fence and did you see them later pick up the boards and
26 take them to the Italian Area?

27 A No, sir.

28 Q You remember the fence in front of Building 700?

29 A Yes, sir, I remember it.

30 Q Did you hear the colored first sergeant hollering at the men to
31 leave that fence alone and to get away from it.

32 A I didn't hear that. The only time I heard the first sergeant say
33 anything was when I was going in the area.

34 Q That was Sergeant Aubry?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

8

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2
- 3 Q When you stood between Building 700 and Barracks 708 you have
- 4 testified you heard the first sergeant tell the men to get back in their
- 5 barracks?
- 6 A Yes, sir. They had started down in the area because I heard
- 7 all those coming back and they didn't go down there and that is when I
- 8 turned around.
- 9
- 10 Q You just came out and went back to your barracks?
- 11 A Yes, sir.
- 12
- 13 Q While you stood in the Italian Area between buildings 700 and
- 14 708, did you hear the fight in the orderly room?
- 15 A Yes, sir.
- 16
- 17 Q You could hear the Italians screaming?
- 18 A Yes, sir.
- 19
- 20 Q And you could hear the clubs hitting individuals?
- 21 A I could hear sticks and rocks and things being thrown.
- 22
- 23 Q Couldn't you hear licks being hit on what sounded like human
- 24 beings?
- 25 A I could hear someone hollering, "Oh, Oh!"
- 26
- 27 Q Didn't that sound like someone being hit?
- 28 A Yes, sir.
- 29
- 30 Q From where you stood at the end of building 708, you could see
- 31 the orderly room, couldn't you?
- 32 A I was on the end, I was standing right this way, I wasn't
- 33 exactly around the light.
- 34
- 35 Q You wouldn't have to be in the lighted area between buildings
- 36 700 and 708, if you were nearer 708 you could see the orderly room.
- 37 A I was between the mess hall and the barracks.
- 38
- 39 Q You could see in the area?
- 40 A It was dark at that first barracks.
- 41
- 42 Q Wasn't the light on in front of the second barracks?
- 43 A No, sir, I didn't see any.
- 44
- 45 Q Wasn't there a light on in the orderly room?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

330

(ELLIS)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2
- 3 Q Wasn't the door open?
- 4 A Yes, sir, I could see lots of boys down there but I didn't
5 recognize who they were.
- 6
- 7 Q Didn't the light shine into the area surrounding the building?
- 8 A I don't remember.
- 9
- 10 Q You could see the boys standing in front of 713?
- 11 A I could see them, but I didn't recognize them.
- 12
- 13 Q Isn't it a fact that when you stand in front of 708 you can't see
14 the orderly room?
- 15 A I don't remember sir, I could see the tents around there.
- 16
- 17 Q But you couldn't see the orderly room?
- 18 A No, sir, I never been in that area before, I couldn't tell the
19 orderly room, there was a bunch of people down there.
- 20
- 21 Q Isn't it a fact you were down in the orderly room?
- 22 A No, sir.
- 23
- 24 Q Isn't it a fact you went around this tent?
- 25 A No, sir.
- 26
- 27 Q And you saw the people right up close here?
- 28 A No, sir, I didn't go close to the tents, I was at the first barracks.
- 29
- 30 Q Why did you tell us you could see the people standing in front
31 of the orderly room?
- 32 A I could see them around the tents, I don't know how far from the
33 orderly room, but I could see fellows around those tents.
- 34
- 35 Q But you didn't recognize any of them?
- 36 A I could recognize some of them after they came back and were
37 talking.
- 38
- 39 Q Who did you talk to after they had moved out of the Italian
40 Area and returned to the barracks? Who told you they were in the fight?
- 41 A After they came back I was already in the barracks.
- 42
- 43 Q After they came back you talked to a lot of them?
- 44 A Well, yes, some of the fellows came upstairs and they was talking
45 and I could recognize those.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(ELLIS)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q What were the names of the fellows that came back and talked about
2 being in the fight?

3 A Arthur Stone.

4 Q Is he a member of the 650th?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q What are the names of the others?

7 A Russell Ellis.

8 Q Is he a member of the 650th?

9 A Yes, sir. Nathaniel Spencer.

10 Q Is he a member of the 650th?

11 A Yes, sir. Sergeant Hurks.

12 Q Is he a member of the 650th?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q Others?

15 A There was one fellow, I can't think of his name, I know him.

16 Q Think of his name, we will give you a little time.

17 A Larkin, I think it was Luther Larkin.

18 Q Any others you remember?

19 A No, sir.

20 Q Let's go over those again.

21 A There is Freddie Lee Simmons.

22 Q Is he a member of the 650th?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q Is that all you remember talking about being in the fight?

25 A Yes, sir, that is the only men I remember being in the fight.

26 Q Did you talk to them about it?

27 A They came upstairs, a bunch of fellows.

28 Q Arthur Stone, what did you hear Arthus say concerning his
29 participation in the fight?

30 A He came upstairs and was talking about who was down there
31 and some of the fellows said they wasn't there. I was sleeping in
32 the-- I was in the front bed in the middle isle of the barracks and he

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 said, "Did you go?" and I said, "No, ¹ started and got between the first
2 barracks and the mess hall," and he said, "All the men that didn't go
3 down there were yellow."

4
5 Q Did he say he had been there?

6 A Yes, sir.

7
8 Q Did he say he had hit any people there?

9 A No, sir, he said all that didn't go were hellow.

10
11 Q Did he say what kind of a club he took?

12 A No, sir.

13
14 Q Did he tell you what part he had taken in the fight?

15 A No, sir, he just said those that didn't go there were yellow.

16
17 Q He didn't say he had gone in the orderly room and had hit
18 Italians in that room?

19 A No, sir, I didn't hear him say that.

20
21 Q Russell Ellis, what conversation did you have with him or what
22 did you hear Russell Ellis say about his participation in the fight?

23 A He is a Private-- I am not sure about his rank-- but I
24 just heard him say he was in the area and he said he had some fun.

25
26 Q Did he say what form that fun took?

27 A No, sir.

28
29 Q Did he say he had hit some Italians?

30 A No, sir. Some more soldiers were in there, but I don't recognize
31 who they were, they had just been transferred in. I didn't know what
32 all they were talking about having fun.

33
34 Q Now the others, Nathaniel Spencer, what did you hear him
35 say?

36 A He said, "I went down there and had myself a ball." I don't
37 know what he is talking about.

38
39 Q Did he say who he had hit?

40 A No, sir.

41
42 Q Did he say where he was doing the fighting?

43 A No, sir, he said he was in the area.

44
45 Q Did any of them exhibit their weapon or show blood stains on their

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 clothing that they had received in the fight?

2 A I don't remember seeing blood stains.

3
4 Q Were there any others whom you heard conversing about being
5 in the fight?

6 A Freddie Simmons, he said he was in the area somewhere, in the
7 orderly room and he looked around and an Italian had a stick and he
8 figured he was going to hit him and he ducked out of the way of it.
9 I don't know whether he did or not.

10
11 Q Simmons didn't say whether he hit the Italian after he made
12 a pass at him, did he?

13 A No, sir. I remember him saying he was in the orderly room
14 and the Italian was fixing to hit him and he said if he had it would
15 have killed him.

16
17 Q Was this conversation which you overheard among all the
18 participants of the fight in your part of the barracks?

19 A All in my part of the barracks.

20
21 Q Was it a formal get together to tell each other who had been in
22 there and condemn those who had refused to join?

23 A I don't know, there was lots of doing and lots of talking.

24
25 Q Let me get this straight. Were all those who had made admissions
26 they had been in the fight opposed to those who had not gone to the fight?

27 A Yes, sir.

28
29 Q And they called those who didn't go to the fight yellow?

30 A Yes, sir, Arthur Stone did.

31
32 Q You heard Arthur Stone say that all who didn't go down there
33 were yellow?

34 A Yes, sir.

35
36 Q Ellis, at the time you left your barracks and went into the
37 Italian Area, isn't it a fact that you realized the colored and
38 Italian soldiers were fighting there?

39 A Yes, sir.

40
41 Q Isn't it a fact that your purpose in going into the Italian
42 Area was to assist the colored members of your company in the fight
43 against the Italians?

44 A Yes, sir.

45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

13

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Ellis, as you stood in between Building 700 and 708, did you
2 see any colored soldiers in the vicinity of Building 713, the orderly
3 room?

4 A Well, as I said, I couldn't swear they were in the orderly room,
5 it was in that area.

6 Q In the area of what?

7 A The Italian Area.

8 Q Around the tents?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q In other words, the people you saw striking the Italians were in
11 the vicinity of the two pyramidal tents in the Italian Area?

12 A Yes, sir.

13 Q Near the orderly room, isn't that right?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q And you saw outside the building colored soldiers striking the
16 Italians who were running?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q Were these Italians screaming?

19 A No, sir, they was running and you could hear some of them
20 hollering, I don't know whether they were screaming.

21 Q You could see the colored soldiers using clubs on them?

22 A Yes, sir, but I didn't recognize any of them.

23 Q You could see the colored soldiers w ielding clubs against the
24 Italians?

25 A Yes, sir.

26 Q Although you say you couldn't see, it was light enough for you
27 to see they were Italians running and you could distinguish they were
28 Italians and you could see the colored soldiers. Now, why is it you
29 can't identify some of the individuals with clubs?

30 A I can't identify any of them, there was just a bunch running
31 around, just a lot of fellows that came in that company and in that
32 area.

33 Q What company are you referring to now?

34 A The 651st.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033

By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

14

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q You know the members of your company quite well, don't you?

2 A Yes, sir, most of them.

3
4 Q Wasn't it light enough so that you could have seen the individuals
5 who were using the clubs?

6 A Yes, but I just couldn't recognize their name.

7
8 Q Isn't it a fact that the names of some of these people you have
9 given are some of the men using those clubs?

10 A No, sir, I don't remember seeing them with any clubs, that is
11 when I heard them saying it, after they returned to the barracks.

12
13 Q As you heard the soldiers of your company in conversation
14 concerning their part in the riot on the night of August 14th, 1944,
15 did you observe any torn clothing or ruffled clothing that they were
16 wearing which would lead you to believe they were in the riot?

17 A I don't know, sir, I can't remember.

18
19 Q Then if you observed any you don't remember it now?

20 A Yes, sir, I don't remember it now. I might be guilty, but I am
21 going to tell you the right story now. On the evening, on Monday the 14th,
22 we was getting ready to leave the next day in the evening and I was down
23 to the PX drinking, myself and Floyd Hawkins and Leslie Stewart and
24 Aguinaldo Thomas, he was there, and another fellow, I don't know him, he
25 come out to see Sergeant Veeder, and he was drinking some and another
26 fellow, John L. Williams, he was drinking some and some more fellows
27 were standing around and I drank two or three bottles of beer or something
28 like that, and Floyd Hawkins said, "Come with me," and I said, "OK".
29 I got no money, I sent all the money home, I was going to keep our pay
30 somewhere else and I didn't drink much and Sergeant Veeder came and talked
31 to us and Sergeant Martin come in there and he told me to get up and go to
32 the mess hall, to help clean up the mess hall and the other fellows, I
33 don't remember their names, we cleaned up the mess hall and it was between
34 8 and 9 when I got out and I came back and I went to sleep in bed and there
35 was some fellows in there gambling, shooting dice and they pushed my
36 bed back and they said, "Do you gamble?" and I said, "Yes, I gamble sometime."
37 I got in bed and they was shooting dice and when I woke up there was
38 hollering going on. I got up then, I was wearing leggins-- I put
39 on the leggins, just hooked the straps around and got my fatigue hat and
40 put it on and I goes in the area. I got to-- it must have been this
41 building here where I could see--

42
43 Q You mean it must have been building 709 instead of 708?

44 A Yes, I got to this building and I could see them and I didn't
45 still have no rocks thrown at me and I got a rock and I started in there

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
896

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

15

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 and I could hear the first sergeant hollering, in fact, I didn't go back
2 right then, I could see two fellows and there was a jeep standing there
3 and they got in this jeep, but I didn't see much but a bunch of people
4 out there, both companies, and in the meantime I saw some boy get in the
5 jeep and knock these two tents down.

6
7 Q By driving the jeep against the tents?

8 A Yes, sir.

9
10 Q There were two boys in the jeep?

11 A One of them was Curtis Bibbs, he is about my height.

12
13 Q Is he a private?

14 A Yes, sir.

15
16 Q Who else?

17 A Sanders, but he is gone with the company.

18
19 Q John Sanders?

20 A No, sir.

21
22 Q Robert Sanders?

23 A It must have been Robert.

24
25 Q Is he a Private?

26 A Yes, sir, I think he is, I am not for sure.

27
28 Q Tell me what they did.

29 A They was in the jeep and they knocked two tents down and
30 I could see some new fellows around there and they had sticks, but I
31 couldn't recognize them.

32
33 Q Are any of those new fellows that just joined your company
34 being held in the guard house?

35 A No, sir, one of them I think is Black, he is a tall brown-skinned
36 fellow that just came from New Orleans and two or three of them have
37 got the same last name, but the first name is different.

38
39 Q This man you recognize you say is Black?

40 A Yes, sir, he is a tall fellow.

41
42 Q What kind of clothes was he wearing?

43 A I am not for sure because I wasn't-- I didn't recognize them,
44 most of them had on suntans or fatigues then.

45

307

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

16

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q You saw Black. Who else did you see at that time around the
2 tents that were battering the tents besides those in the jeep and the
3 ones with the clubs that you recognized?

4 A I want to tell the truth.

6 Q That is what we want, we know you are going to tell the truth.

7 A I am trying to think, I know them if I could see them, I would
8 know them.

10 Q There are a number of people you saw out in this area.

11 A There were those fellows in the jeep.

13 Q Who were the others you recognized?

14 A This other fellow, Black.

16 Q Who did you see with clubs or knives or axes or saw them striking
17 anyone?

18 A A fellow with the 651st, I could point him out, I don't know
19 his name.

21 Q Would you recognize him if you saw him again?

22 A No, sir, in the 651st there is a fellow, Robert Smith, he said
23 he knew the fellow in this company that had the ax.

25 Q Who did you say his name was?

26 A I don't know, but Robert Smith is still with us. He told me when
27 he came back to the barracks that this fellow said that he had an ax or a
28 hatchet.

30 Q And chopped down the door?

31 A He didn't say that.

33 Q After you observed that you observed others going in the
34 building?

35 A Yes, sir, at that time two MP's came down in a jeep and they
36 went in, they didn't say anything, they went in, and John Pinckney was
37 one of them.

39 Q While you were standing in here, around these two tents, you
40 must have seen a great many soldiers go in that door next to the tents
41 and saw some hit the Italians inside the building.

42 A Yes, sir.

44 Q Who were those that went in there? Did you see Ceaser?

45 A Johnnie Ceaser?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

338

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

17

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Do you know him?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Did you see him?
5 A I don't remember.
6
7 Q Did you see King?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Where was King?
11 A He was in that area. When I seen him he was down there, I don't
12 know where.
13
14 Q What was King doing when you saw him?
15 A He had a stick and was trying to tell the fellows to quit fighting.
16
17 Q He was trying to tell the fellows to try to quit fighting?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Wasn't he talking to Hughes at that place?
21 A Frank Hughes was there.
22
23 Q You saw him?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q You couldn't hear King talking to him?
27 A No, sir.
28
29 Q Did you hear King trying to get the fellows back to their barracks?
30 A He was going around the place trying to get them back to their
31 barracks.
32
33 Q Who was that he was telling that to? I want his name because he
34 was in the area?
35 A I don't know, I don't remember, sir, right now.
36
37 Q Who did you see inside the building besides King? There were
38 others inside the building you saw.
39 A It was the fellows you called out awhile ago.
40
41 Q Did you see them down there, all those fellows?
42 A Yes, sir, I seen all those fellows, the ones I named.
43
44 Q Stone?
45 A I saw him.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

899

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

18

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Stone was there?
2 A Yes, sir, I don't know how that building was made.
3
4 Q It is a little building and this is the window here.
5 A There was a window on the side?
6
7 Q Yes, then there is a door that goes into this room and then another
8 one that leads into another room. There is an entrance here with a door
9 and there are windows here. Here are the two tents here and this jeep was
10 busting into that tent and there was a civilian car sitting there.
11 A I couldn't tell, it was covered all the way down.
12
13 Q That is right, that was a car.
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q As you stood here you saw King in this door and there was somebody
17 here, do you remember who that was?
18 A No, sir, there was a bunch of boys.
19
20 Q But you saw Stone?
21 A Stone was coming in here somewhere.
22
23 Q In this building?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Let the record show Stone was passing
27 back and forth between rooms Y and X.)
28
29 Q You saw him pass from Room Y into Room X?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q Where did you see him go, did you see him strike anyone with a
33 club or a stick? Could you see Stone if he had used a club?
34 A He had a stick.
35
36 Q What kind of a stick, a 2-by-4, or a 2-by-2 or a white stick?
37 A It wasn't a 2-by-4.
38
39 Q What do you think it was? Was it a limb off a tree?
40 A It looked to me like a round stick.
41
42 Q And he was carrying that as you saw him go from Room X to Y?
43 A Yes, sir, he had a stick.
44
45 Q Where did you see Stone again?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

300

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

19

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A The next time I saw him he was in the barracks?
2
3 Q He was in the barracks?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q Stone was bragging about being there and hitting people?
7 A Yes, sir, he said he was down there and he said all those that
8 didn't go down were yellow.
9
10 Q Stone was telling the others that in your presence?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q And you knew he was there because you had seen him?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q And you knew he wasn't lying?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q After you saw Stone through this door, whom did you see?
20 A Nathaniel Spencer.
21
22 Q Where, in the tent right here?
23 A The front door.
24
25 Q Entering Room Z?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q What did he have, a stick?
29 A A stick, a slat.
30
31 Q A flat board or a 2-by-2?
32 A It wasn't that large.
33
34 Q Was it a 1-by-2?
35 A Yes, sir, but it was split.
36
37 Q And he was going through Door E into Room Z?
38 A Yes, sir. When he got here I could see Italians, I reckon that
39 is what they were, they was standing in that door and I heard him say,
40 it was an American.
41
42 Q After you saw Nathaniel Spencer enter Room Z through Door E and
43 approach Door B, you saw Nathaniel Spencer having some conversation with
44 some Italians in Room X, is that right?
45 A It was a bunch of Americans.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

901

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

20

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q You heard the conversation?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q What was the conversation which Nathaniel Spencer was having with
5 the Italians inside Room X?
6 A Nathaniel, when he got there, he said-- I remember hearing this
7 fellow, he asked why they were jumping on some men in our company, that
8 is when he asked them that, why did you jump on those men in there and they
9 said, "Because you are Italians," and he said, "We are American soldiers."
10
11 Q He said, "We are American soldiers"?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q In other words, the man Nathaniel talked to informed Nathaniel
15 he was an American soldier?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q What did Spencer do then?
19 A Some of them had on clothing with Italy on them and he said,
20 "You aren't American soldiers."
21
22 Q And hit him?
23 A I didn't see him hit him.
24
25 Q As you observed Nathaniel Spencer after his conversation with
26 the persons who informed him they were American soldiers and who you saw
27 had on Italy brassards, then did you see Nathaniel strike one of them?
28 A He raised up like that.
29
30 Q He raised his club?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q Threateningly?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q Toward the Italians?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q Who stood inside Room X? Did you?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q Was there a bunch standing there?
43 A There was some more fellows standing there.
44
45 Q Some more what?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
302

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

21

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A Colored soldiers.

2

3 Q There were some more colored soldiers standing near Nathaniel?

4 A Yes, sir, some in front of him and some between him and the

5 Italians and one or two fellows had been transferred to the company were

6 standing on the side.

7

8 Q Do you know the names of any others around Door B as Nathaniel

9 Spencer made motions to strike some Italians inside the room?

10 A No, sir, but I could recognize them if I saw them.

11

12 Q Give me the names of those that were standing there at the door?

13 A At that time I saw Nathaniel Spencer and Freddie Lee Simmons.

14

15 Q Is Freddie Lee a member of the 650th?

16 A Yes, sir.

17

18 Q What was Freddie doing?

19 A He was standing there.

20

21 Q He had a club?

22 A Yes, sir.

23

24 Q What kind of a club did he have in his hand?

25 A A long stick that looked like the one Arthur Stone had.

26

27 Q Was it one of the white sticks?

28 A Yes, sir.

29

30 Q About three inches in diameter?

31 A Yes, sir, about that big around.

32

33 Q About three inches in diameter?

34 A Yes, sir.

35

36 Q Was he standing beside Door B in Room Z when you saw him?

37 A Yes, sir.

38

39 Q Was there any Italians coming out of that door?

40 A After the MP's came.

41

42 Q We haven't got to the MP's yet. Who else did you see around that

43 door?

44 A I seen Walter Jackson.

45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

903

(ELLIS)

 DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
 By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

22

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Where was Walter standing in reference to Door B?
 2 A In between.
 3
 4 Q In between Spencer who stood on the right side of the door and
 5 Simmons who stood on the left-hand side?
 6 A Spencer was in the center-- anyway, Simmons was on one side and
 7 another fellow, Jackson, they were in kind of a circle in front of the door.
 8
 9 Q Jackson, Simmons, and Spencer were standing in a semi-circle
 10 enclosing Door B?
 11 A Yes, sir.
 12
 13 Q There was another fellow there, there were four of them there,
 14 what was his name?
 15 A I cannot tell you now.
 16
 17 Q Where were you when you saw these four fellows at door B?
 18 A Back out this way.
 19
 20 Q How far from the door, 3 or 4 feet?
 21 A No, sir, further than that. You know where the tent was?
 22
 23 Q The tent that was broken down?
 24 A Yes, sir. I was standing around there.
 25
 26 Q You observed Simmons, Spencer and Walter Jackson?
 27 A I can't think of this other fellow's name. I know there were
 28 four fellows there.
 29
 30 Q There were four there?
 31 A Four men including Simmons.
 32
 33 Q And Walter Jackson and Nathaniel Spencer?
 34 A Yes, sir.
 35
 36 Q And one other man that you don't know now?
 37 A I can't think of his name right now.
 38
 39 Q If you think of it tell us. As you observed these four men standing
 40 near Door B, you were outside the building looking through Door E?
 41 A Yes, sir.
 42
 43 Q The tent had been knocked down by the jeep?
 44 A Yes, sir.
 45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
 304

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

23

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q As you stood out there and watched the proceedings in Room Z, didn't
2 you see the fighting going on in Room Y in the corner over here?
- 3 A Well, there was something going on in there, I wasn't paying
4 any attention.
- 5
- 6 Q Could you hear the Italians in that room screaming?
- 7 A Oh, yes, you could hear screaming.
- 8
- 9 Q Loud?
- 10 A Yes, sir.
- 11
- 12 Q You didn't see someone walk up to the window and reach through it
13 and hit on the desk inside the room? You saw it, didn't you?
- 14 A Yes, sir, but--
- 15
- 16 Q You saw someone reach through--
- 17 A Some men out of the 651st was involved in this too.
- 18
- 19 Q Did you see Roy Montgomery?
- 20 A No, sir, I never seen him down there.
- 21
- 22 Q Willie Basden?
- 23 A I know I saw Townsell.
- 24
- 25 Q Booker Townsell?
- 26 A Yes, sir, his last name is Townsell.
- 27
- 28 Q Where did you see Townsell?
- 29 A He was standing at this window.
- 30
- 31 Q The window that leads into Room Y?
- 32 A Yes, sir.
- 33
- 34 Q What was he doing?
- 35 A He was talking; he said he didn't know what was going on and he
36 come out to see, he said he just come from the show and he had a stick.
- 37
- 38 Q What kind of a stick did Townsell have in his hand?
- 39 A A green stick, panted.
- 40
- 41 Q A 2-by-4?
- 42 A It wasn't that big.
- 43
- 44 Q It was only an inch thick?
- 45 A Yes, sir, it was long.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

905

(ELLIS)

 DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
 By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

24

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q What was he doing with it when you observed him, was he reaching
 2 through the window and striking someone that was lying on the floor?
 3 A No, sir.
 4
 5 Q You did not see him reach through with his arm and make a downward
 6 motion?
 7 A No, sir, he was standing there talking to all the men and fellows
 8 around there, they was all standing in a circle and had their backs to me.
 9
 10 Q Who else was standing talking to Townsell?
 11 A They were men out of the other company.
 12
 13 Q The 651st?
 14 A Yes, sir.
 15
 16 Q Who were they?
 17 A I don't know very many.
 18
 19 Q Give me the names of those that you do know.
 20 A Those I know?
 21
 22 Q Yes.
 23 A Those fellows I know wasn't there.
 24
 25 Q The only person you recognized who stood between door E and the
 26 window that leads into Room Y was Townsell?
 27 A Yes, sir.
 28
 29 Q And you could not recognize any others talking with Townsell?
 30 A No, sir, because they was standing in a circle.
 31
 32 Q All those talking to Townsell had clubs?
 33 A Yes, sir, I can tell you how many there were.
 34
 35 Q How many?
 36 A Three.
 37
 38 Q Besides Townsell?
 39 A Yes, sir.
 40
 41 Q They were discussing what part they had played in it up to that
 42 point; is that right?
 43 A They was telling them they heard the Italians jumped on some
 44 men in the 651st and they come down to help.
 45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

306

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

25

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Who else did you observe as you stood by the tent?
2 A That is when I left.
- 3
4 Q After you left your position beside the tent, where did you go?
5 A I came around the front of the building.
- 6
7 Q You say you went around Door A?
8 A Yes, sir.
- 9
10 Q As you went around Door A, what did you observe happening in that
11 area?
12 A Pinckney was there and Stone was there and John Lee Hamilton.
- 13
14 Q After you arrived at Door A and before the MP's arrived in the
15 area, what did you observe happening in the vicinity of Door A?
16 A There was some Italians laying there that got hit.
- 17
18 Q Where?
19 A In this room.
- 20
21 Q In the room where the isle goes?
22 A There was a door it looked like back in here.
- 23
24 Q The Italians were lying in Room X?
25 A Yes, sir.
- 26
27 Q Did you observe any Italian in Room X?
28 A I remember seeing one lying back here, he was over here.
- 29
30 Q Was that Italian you observed bleeding?
31 A Something like bleeding on the arm.
- 32
33 Q You saw other Italian and American soldiers in there, white American
34 soldiers?
35 A I seen a tall white American soldier.
- 36
37 Q Was he wounded?
38 A I didn't see any blood.
- 39
40 Q Didn't you see Italian and American soldiers lying on the floor
41 inside Room X?
42 A This soldier was standing up telling them he was an American
43 soldier and asked what they was fighting about.
- 44
45 Q What did the colored soldiers reply to that remark?
A He said, "They jumped on some of our boys."

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

907

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

26

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Did you see anyone as you stood there in the vicinity of
2 Door A strike the tall American soldier?

3 A No, sir.

4 Q But he was bloody on the arm?

5 A This tall American soldier?

6 Q Yes.

7 A No, sir, I never saw any blood.

8 Q He didn't have on an Italian brassard, did he?

9 A No, sir, he didn't have on anything but pants, I think they were
10 fatigue pants and he had on the white top of an undershirt.

11 Q What colored soldiers did you observe in Room X as you stood
12 near Door A?

13 A That is when Stone and John Lee were there.

14 Q Stone and-

15 A John Lee Hamilton.

16 Q What was Stone doing when you observed him from Door A?

17 A At that time he was standing up talking.

18 Q Did he have a club in his hand?

19 A Yes, sir.

20 Q Who was he talking to, American or Italian soldiers?

21 A Some men, there were a lot of white Italians standing with the
22 American, I think he is a Pfc.

23 Q But Stone was talking to the men?

24 A Yes, sir.

25 Q What was Stone saying, were they still talking about being
26 American soldiers?

27 A Yes, sir, this one soldier was telling them they was American
28 soldiers and they asked why they were fighting or something like that
29 and he told them they jumped on some fellows and this American soldier
30 asked what he could do to help them.

31 Q Didn't some of the colored soldiers then and there take the
32 American soldier out of the building, escort him out of the building?

33 A Escort him out?

908

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

27

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Yes, help him out?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q You didn't see that?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q As you watched Stone from then on what did he do, did he renew
8 his assault on these Italians?
9 A I never saw Stone hit anyone, they was all talking and cussing.
10
11 Q The other man that was talking to Stone, what was his name?
12 A John Lee Hamilton.
13
14 Q And as you saw John he had a club?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q What was he doing?
18 A John Lee?
19
20 Q Yes.
21 A Most of the time just talking.
22
23 Q John Lee is the man we are talking about now.
24 A I didn't see John Lee do anything.
25
26 Q He was just standing there talking and holding a club in his
27 hand?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q You didn't see him strike some Italians?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q Didn't you see him while he was inside Building 713, didn't
34 you see John Lee Hamilton strike some Italians?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Who else did you see in the room at the time John Lee Hamilton
38 and Stone were inside?
39 A Robert Sanders.
40
41 Q Where did you see Robert Sanders?
42 A After they left the jeep him and Richard Barber came inside.
43
44 Q You observed Roberts Sanders and Richard Barber in Building 713
45 through Door A?

303

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033

By SJA/NARA Date 06/12/02

28

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A Yes, sir, they came in the same room Stone and the other fellow
2 was.

3 Q What did Sanders and Barber have in their hands?

4 A They had sticks.

5 Q Clubs?

6 A Yes, sir.

7 Q After they entered Door A where did they go?

8 A They were just coming through.

9 Q Through Door D into Room X?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q What did they do then?

12 A They came through here and Stone and this other fellow were
13 coming into this part.

14 Q When Sanders and Barber entered Door D, Stone and--

15 A John Lee.

16 Q -- went out of Room X through Door B; is that right?

17 A Yes, sir.

18 Q When Barber and Sanders got inside Room X they started to fight?

19 A No, sir, they said this fellow in here is sure messed up and they
20 came back in here.

21 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Let the record show Sanders and Barber said,
22 "These fellows in here are sure messed up," and then they went through
23 Door C into Room Y.)

24 Q What did they do then?

25 A They came in here, there was a fellow in there that had been'
26 beat up and they said, "We ain't got nothing to do," and they came
27 on back and the MP and everything was down there.

28 Q They were in here and they said they didn't have anything to do
29 and they came out of Door C and went in Room X. Didn't you see them
30 strike some of the fellows here next to the window?

31 A No, sir, I was standing on this side and after they left there
32 wasn't no one around and I could see them and when they got in here they
33 were standing up in here.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
910

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

29

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Who else did you observe go in Door A as you stood over here
2 next to the door?
3 A I didn't see anyone else.
4
5 Q The only two you saw enter this door were Sanders and Barber?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q Any others?
9 A Stone and Hamilton was here.
10
11 Q They had gone in this way?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Who else besides those four?
15 A Sanders and Barber.
16
17 Q Now, there were others, weren't there?
18 A Yes, sir, there was a bunch around there.
19
20 Q Do you know any of them? Think for a minute.
21 A Simmons and Walter Jackson.
22
23 Q Did you see Simmons?
24 A He was standing in this door here, around this door here with
25 Nathaniel.
26
27 Q What about Freddie Simmons?
28 A At that time I didn't see him doing anything but after he returned
29 he told me what happened that night in that area.
30
31 Q Did you see Jesse Sims down there that night?
32 A I don't remember seeing him that night.
33
34 Q Sergeant Hurk, you say you saw him?
35 A Sergeant Hurk was all up and down this thing, going from one
36 room to another.
37
38 Q He was one that was really hitting people?
39 A Well, I will be frank, I didn't see him hit anyone. He did have
40 a club.
41
42 Q Where were you standing when you first observed Sergeant Hurk
43 in Building 713, were you standing around the building?
44 A I was in this room when he was coming back after these fellows.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

311

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

30

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q After Stone, Hamilton, Barber, and Sanders entered Building 713
2 through Door A you saw Sergeant Hurk come in through the door?
3 A He came in here through Door A?
4
5 Q And through Door D?
6 A No, sir, that is when I left. I left Door A and went around to
7 observe through the window that leads into Room Y.
8
9 Q As you stood there you didn't see Hurk enter room Y?
10 A No, sir, I didn't see him any more. It must have been around
11 here somewhere, I saw Sergeant Hurks in Room X through Door D.
12
13 Q What kind of a weapon did he have in his hand?
14 A Sergeant Hurks?
15
16 Q Was it a big club?
17 A He had a club, kind of short.
18
19 Q Did you see Sergeant Hurks strike anyone with that club in
20 Building 713?
21 A No, sir, I didn't see him strike anyone.
22
23 Q William G. Jones, did you see him down there?
24 A When I first saw Jones he was standing on the outside.
25
26 Q Where in reference to the doors that lead into Building 713 did
27 you see William G. Jones?
28 A I would say to the right side of this door.
29
30 Q The right side of Door E?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q Where did Jones go as you observed him?
34 A He was walking along.
35
36 Q He had a club?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q What kind of a club did Jones have?
40 A It was kind of slim like.
41
42 Q A 2-by-2?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q Was it a white club they use for butt can holders?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(ELLIS)

312

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

31

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A It was a 2-by-2, it didn't look white.
2
3 Q It was a 2-by-2?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q What was Jones doing all the time?
7 A Just walking around with it in his hand.
8
9 Q Did you see him strike any Italians?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q Did you see him run after any of them?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q Did you see him reach through the window?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q Which door did he go in when he first entered the building?
19 A I never did see him enter.
20
21 Q You never did see him go inside the building?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q How about Willie Prevost?
25 A I didn't see him.
26
27 Q You didn't see him down there that night?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q Joseph Scott, where did you see Joseph Scott?
31 A He is in the 651st, I don't remember seeing him.
32
33 Q If he was down there you don't know, you don't know Joseph
34 very well?
35 A Yes, sir, I know him. I don't remember seeing him.
36
37 Q Elva Shelton, where was he when you first saw him in the
38 Italian Area?
39 A He must have been there, I don't remember seeing him, he could
40 have been there.
41
42 Q Samuel Snow, where did you first see Snow? He was the one
43 that got hit.
44 A I didn't see him until the next morning.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

913

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

32

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q You didn't see him that night?
2 A No, sir.
3
- 4 Q You didn't see him in the Italian Area when he was hit?
5 A No, sir.
6
- 7 Q Leslie Stewart, where did you see Leslie Stewart in the Italian
8 Area on the night of August 14, 1944?
9 A No, sir, I didn't see him, but he told me he had been down there.
10 I didn't see him.
11
- 12 Q What did Leslie tell you he did while he was in the Italian Area
13 on the night of August 14, 1944?
14 A He said when he got there everything was just about over; the
15 MP's were down there and there wasn't nothing for him to do and he came
16 back.
17
- 18 Q Do you know Richard Suttliff?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
- 21 Q Did you see Richard down there in the Italian Area on the
22 night of August 14, 1944?
23 A No, sir.
24
- 25 Q Did you talk to Richard concerning his part in the fight?
26 A I asked him if he was down there during the time of the fight.
27
- 28 Q What was his reply?
29 A He said he was shooting dice, which they were when I left, they
30 were shooting dice, a bunch of men were.
31
- 32 Q Do you know Samuel Thomas?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
- 35 Q Where did you see Samuel?
36 A I don't know, sir, I never did remember seeing Samuel. They
37 slept in the barracks on the hill.
38
- 39 Q You didn't see Samuel, as you recall, in the Italian Area on
40 the night of the 14th of August?
41 A No, sir.
42
- 43 Q Did you see Joe Trice?
44 A I just remember him since I have been in the stockade.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

914

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

33

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Since you have seen him in the stockade, do you remember seeing
2 that same face in the Italian Area on the night of the 14th of August 1944?

3 A No, sir, I don't remember seeing him.

4 Q Arthur Williams, did you see him?

5 A I am not sure, I think he was cutting hair at that time, I am not
6 for sure.

7 Q Do you know Wallace Wooden?

8 A When I seen Wallace we was coming out of the area.

9 Q Is that the first time you saw him?

10 A Yes, sir.

11 Q Where in the Italian Area did you see Wallace and what conversation
12 did you have with him concerning his part in the fight?

13 A I first saw him at the end of Building 709 as we were coming
14 out of the area.

15 Q What conversation did you have with Wallace concerning his part
16 in the fight?

17 A I didn't say anything to him because some of the men were
18 coming out of the area and I never did say anything to him, we just came
19 out.

20 Q What did Wallace have in his hand when you first saw him?

21 A I couldn't tell because the light was knocked out on the front
22 of the barracks. The only way I could see, there was an MP around there
23 with a light and they shined it on Wallace and he had a stick in his hand.

24 Q Did you have any further conversation with Wallace on the
25 night of the 14th of August?

26 A No, sir.

27 Q Then you didn't talk to him as you and he departed the Italian
28 Area?

29 A He didn't come back with us, he went by himself. I could see
30 the MP, you know, telling them to get back to his barracks, the MP was
31 telling them to get back to their barracks and he was just standing up
32 there, then I left and went on and he came behind me and I didn't talk
33 to him.

34 Q William D. Montgomery, do you know him?

35 A No, sir, I don't know him, but I have met him since.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

915

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

34

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Willie Basden, where did you first see Willie?
2 A I don't remember seeing Willie.
3
4 Q Do you know Willie Basden?
5 A Yes, sir, he is kind of a short fellow.
6
7 Q But you didn't see him on this night?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q On the night of August 14, 1944, did you know Willie?
11 A Yes, sir, I knew him.
12
13 Q Had you seen Willie in the Italian Area you would have recognized
14 him?
15 A If I had seen him I would have.
16
17 Q You state you didn't see Willie?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q Thomas Battle, do you know Thomas?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q Milton Bratton?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q Sergeant John S. Brown from the 578th, do you know John?
27 A No, sir. That is the first time I seen him was out here.
28
29 Q You didn't know John S. Brown on the night of the 14th of August?
30 A No, sir.
31
32 Q Johnnie Ceaser?
33 A Yes, sir, I know him.
34
35 Q Where did you first see Johnnie?
36 A I don't remember seeing Johnnie Ceaser, he might have been
37 there, but I didn't see him.
38
39 Q You didn't see Ceaser standing talking to King when King was
40 talking to someone down there, didn't you see Ceaser there?
41 A I don't know, sir, I can't place him right now.
42
43 Q If you saw Ceaser you certainly would remember him?
44 A I know him well.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
916

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SSA NARA Date 06/12/02

35

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q You don't remember seeing him?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q James Chandler, do you remember him?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Do you remember seeing him?
8 A No, sir I didn't see him.
9
10 Q You didn't see him?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q You state definitely you didn't see him?
14 A Yes, sir, I state definitely I don't remember seeing him, he
15 could have been there, there was a bunch of fellows.
16
17 Q Alvin Clark, do you know him?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Did you see Alvin down there that night?
21 A Let's see-- He went down early in the fight, he and Luther
22 Larkin.
23
24 Q He went with Alvin when the fight first started?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q Did you observe what instrument or club Luther and Alvin
28 took with them?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q They had clubs?
32 A I don't remember seeing them with anything.
33
34 Q You saw them leave the vicinity of Building 700, didn't you?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q And they took some club with them but you don't know what it was?
38 A I don't remember seeing them do anything but I did see them.
39
40 Q Larkin, where did you first see Larkin after he entered the
41 Italian Area?
42 A I don't remember seeing Larkin in that area. When I first
43 seen Larkin he came upstairs and he told about the Italians jumping on
44 him and he was hunting a whistle.
45

917

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02~~35x~~ 36~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Did he find the whistle?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Did he go outside?
5 A He was about half way down the stairway steps.
6
7 Q Did he go outside the building?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Did you later hear a whistle blow outside?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q Then you went outside?
14 A Later on I went out.
15
16 Q Did you see Larkin there at that time?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q When did you see Larkin and Clark go into the area?
20 A I seen Clark down there in the area and I think it was at this
21 front end of the building I first saw Clark near the front end of Building
22 713.
23
24 Q What was he doing?
25 A He come running out of the orderly room and when he run out he
26 fell and some fellows, you know, colored boys, picked him up and he was
27 hit.
28
29 Q Someone hit Clark as he ran out of Building 713?
30 A I didn't see anyone hit him.
31
32 Q He had been inside the building fighting?
33 A Yes, sir, I imagine he had. I didn't see him, but he ran out.
34
35 Q While Clark was inside the building there was fighting inside
36 the building?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q Wasn't there a lot of screaming going on inside the building at
40 that time?
41 A Screaming?
42
43 Q Yes, people being hit and hollering?
44 A Yes, sir, there was some hollering going on.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

37

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q What kind of a club did Clark have in his hand when he came out
2 of the building?

3 A I didn't see him have anything when he ran out.

4 Q When he went in what did he have?

5 A I don't believe I saw him.

6
7
8 Q But when the fight started in Room X Clark entered through
9 Door A and went into the room?

10 A But he didn't stay there long, he came out.

11 Q When you saw Clark run into the building the first time, what
12 kind of a club did he have in his hand?

13 A There was a fence in front of the barracks when I got there
14 and the fence was gone. I am not for sure they had torn up the fence,
15 but anyway--

16
17 Q All I want you to tell me is what Clark had in his hand when he
18 went in that building, just that one little thing.

19 A He had a stick, kind of flat like.

20
21 Q A flat board?

22 A Yes, sir.

23
24 Q When he went in the building he didn't stay very long?

25 A No, sir.

26
27 Q He came back and as he departed he fell?

28 A Yes, sir.

29
30 Q Did anyone go to him?

31 A Yes, sir.

32
33 Q Who went to help Clark?

34 A Let me see-- I don't know exactly.

35
36
37 Q You should know some of the fellows that went up and helped carry
38 him out. Did you help carry him out?

39 A No, sir.

40
41 Q When Clark fell you say some fellows went around and picked him
42 up?

43 A Yes, sir.

44
45 Q About how many?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

919

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

20

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A Three or something like that.
2
3 Q Was one of them Fred Brown?
4 A I don't know Fred Brown.
5
6 Q Ira Linten?
7 A I don't know him so well.
8
9 Q Riley Buckner? Was he one of the boys that helped?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q Riley Buckner was one of the boys that helped carry Clark?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q Where was Riley standing when you first saw him?
16 A He was on the back when Clark came out.
17
18 Q Riley Buckner and others were standing on the north side
19 of Building 713, were they?
20 A Yes, sir, there was some more around there.
21
22 Q Who were the others standing on that side of the building
23 besides Buckner?
24 A I don't know, I never did come around. Riley was standing
25 here and he came out when Clark fell.
26
27 Q Who else came up besides Buckner?
28 A Some more fellows, I don't know.
29
30 Q You saw a bunch of boys that stood on the north side of the
31 building and looked in through a window and you can't name a single one of
32 them?
33 A I didn't go around on this side.
34
35 Q The only one you saw that you knew was Riley Buckner who came
36 to assist Clark?
37 A Yes, sir. There was some more men came out, but I don't know
38 them.
39
40 Q The people standing on the north side of the building didn't
41 remain stationary, they came around the building where you could see them?
42 A I don't know any of them if they did.
43
44 Q Do you know Willie Curry?
45 A No, sir, I don't know Willie Curry.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

920

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

39

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Do you know Roy Daymond?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Where did you first see Roy?
5 A I don't remember seeing Roy, he could have been there, but I don't
6 remember seeing him.
7
8 Q You didn't see Roy Daymond in the Italian Area on the night of
9 August 14th?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q Lee Dixon, do you know him?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q Where did you see him?
16 A I didn't see him down there.
17
18 Q Herman Gentry, do you know him?
19 A Not so well.
20
21 Q Did you see him down there?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q You have only known him since you have been placed in the
25 stockade?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q Sergeant Bennett, do you know Sergeant Bennett who runs the 578th
29 mess hall?
30 A I don't know him.
31
32 Q Do you know Corporal McDaniels?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q On the night of August 14th when you were in the PX drinking
36 beer, do you know where the two colored MP's were that were on duty in
37 the PX? To refresh your recollection one was Sergeant McGinnis and
38 the other was Oran Lee?
39 A I don't know them.
40
41 Q Did you observe them in the PX?
42 A Yes, sir, I remember seeing them, the two colored MP's in the PX.
43 I don't know them.
44
45 Q Did you, after observing them in the PX, later that night see them

921

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

40

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 in the Italian Area?

2 A No, sir.

3
4 Q When you were in the Italian Area on the night of August 14th
5 did you see any colored MP's other than John Pinckney?

6 A No, sir.

7
8 Q You didn't see any other MP's other than John Pinckney in the
9 Italian Area?

10 A No, sir.

11
12 Q Going back to Sergeant Hurks in the Italian Area, was he doing
13 anything to keep the colored boys from fighting?

14 A I didn't see him, he may have been.

15
16 Q He seemed to be one of the participants in the fight?

17 A Yes, sir.

18
19 Q In these groups of soldiers you saw around the area, you said
20 many of them had clubs and sticks in their hands. Do you recall
21 seeing any individual with a rope in his hand?

22 A No, sir, I didn't see anyone with a rope.

23
24 Q When you first saw Luther Larkin you say it was right before the
25 fight started?

26 A Yes, sir.

27
28 Q Was William G. Jones with him?

29 A Yes, sir. I didn't see William G. Jones when he came upstairs.
30 He asked for a whistle.

31
32 Q Who asked for a whistle?

33 A Larkin. He asked for a whistle, he asked who had a whistle and
34 didn't no one say anything, someone over there was shooting dice and
35 some one said, "What the hell do you want with a whistle?" He said,
36 "These Italians jumped our boys." He stood around downstairs and came
37 back half-way up the stair steps and he blew the whistle.

38
39 Q Did he blow it inside?

40 A Down on the stairway steps.

41
42 Q Did any of those fellows get up out of the crap game when he blew
43 the whistle?

44 A No, sir, didn't any of them. I didn't see any of them give up their
45 shooting dice.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

922

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

41

1 Q Did you hear anybody running through the barracks hollering,
2 "Come on, let's get those Italians?"

3 A Some of them says, "Who is the man he hit?" and a bunch jumped
4 up and they went out.

6 Q Did you hear any one man running through the barracks hollering,
7 "Come on, let's go," and trying to turn the whole company out?

8 A Yes, sir, there was lots of hollering, but I can't identify any
9 of them, there was just a crowd of them in the barracks all talking.

11 Q Do you know Russell Ellis?

12 A Yes, sir.

14 Q Where did you first see Russell in the Italian Area on the night
15 of August 14th in this building?

16 A He was the fellow that was around here.

18 Q He was the fourth man?

19 A He was around Nathaniel, Walter Jackson, and Freddie Lee Simmons.
20 He is the fourth man that I couldn't give a moment ago that stood in the
21 semi-circle around Door B.

23 Q What club did Russell Ellis have in his hand as he stood near
24 Door B?

25 A Kind of long, about this long.

27 Q Was it a 2-by-2, a small narrow board that wasn't painted?

28 A No, sir, it didn't look like it was.

30 Q Did you see Russell after he left the vicinity of Door B?

31 A No, sir, I left from there and came around here and I didn't
32 see him any more until I came back to the barracks.

34 Q After you got back to the barracks you knew Russell had been
35 in the Italian Area because you saw him down there?

36 A Yes, I knew he weren't down there for nothing.

38 Q After you entered the Italian Area on the night of August 14,
39 1944, did you see any Italian soldiers jump from the window of Building
40 709?

41 A No, sir, I did not.

43 Q While you were in the Italian Area, did you see any colored
44 soldiers leading or dragging an Italian across the area toward the wooded
45 patch behind the chapel?

323

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

42

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A No, sir.

2

3 Q But you didn't see any colored soldiers leading any Italian

4 toward the woods on the night of August 14th, 1944?

5 A I didn't see them leading any.

6

7 Q You saw them chasing one?

8 A I saw them chasing one that came from this building here, I saw

9 him coming from this Barracks 708, I saw one man running out of Barracks 708

10 and was being chased by two colored soldiers.

11

12 Q In what direction did they chase him?

13 A They come around this barracks here.

14

15 Q From the south side they ran around the west end and in between

16 Building 708 and 709?

17 A Yes, sir. I was coming down this Lawton Road when I saw it and

18 when I got to the back of the Barracks 708 I didn't see anyone at that

19 time, I didn't see those two running.

20

21 Q Do you recall how the Italian was dressed that was being chased

22 by the two colored soldiers?

23 A Yes, sir. This one did not have on anything, he didn't have on

24 no clothes, nothing but underwear.

25

26 Q He appeared to be wearing a pair of shorts?

27 A Yes, sir.

28

29 Q And a shirt?

30 A Just an undershirt.

31

32 Q Shorts and an undershirt?

33 A Yes, sir, he was dressed in underwear.

34

35 Q Did you see him after he went behind building 708 and in between

36 708 and 709?

37 A No, sir, I didn't see him.

38

39 Q Where did you go after you saw him being chased?

40 A I came down to this area here.

41

42 Q Did you hear any screaming or begging in between 708 and 709 as you

43 passed between those two buildings?

44 A No, sir.

45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
324

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

43

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Do you know whether the colored soldiers that were chasing the
2 Italian ever caught him?
- 3 A No, sir, I really don't, sir.
- 4
- 5 Q Can you describe the colored soldiers chasing the Italians?
- 6 A It seemed like two smaller fellows, I can't recognize them enough
7 to call their names, but this was a little fellow, he seemed to be.
- 8
- 9 Q You don't know who they were?
- 10 A No, sir.
- 11
- 12 Q Don't you know, really?
- 13 A No, sir. It was dark.
- 14
- 15 Q He was out ahead of them?
- 16 A Yes, sir, but they was running behind him.
- 17
- 18 Q Were they throwing at him?
- 19 A No, sir, they had sticks in their hands.
- 20
- 21 Q Was the Italian saying anything?
- 22 A No, sir, he was just running.
- 23
- 24 Q Did you later learn who it was from the fellows, who was chasing
25 the Italian?
- 26 A No, sir, I don't know who they were.
- 27
- 28 Q You don't know their names?
- 29 A No, sir.
- 30
- 31 Q You don't know whether you could identify them if you saw them
32 again?
- 33 A No, sir, if I could I would.
- 34
- 35 Q After you returned from the Italian Area and went into your
36 barracks, did you see Sergeant Hurks in that barracks?
- 37 A Yes, sir.
- 38
- 39 Q Were you present when Sergeant Hurks was conversing with two
40 MP's concerning the riot that just happened?
- 41 A Yes, sir.
- 42
- 43 Q What was the conversation you heard Sergeant Hurks have with the
44 two MP's?
- 45 A He was telling the MP's they had given the Italians a good whipping.

925

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

44

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What was the reply the MP's made to that statement of Sergeant
2 Hurks'?

3 A They said, "You done a damn good job and saved us a job."
4

5 Q Do you know, or have you seen those MP's that were talking at
6 the entrance of Barracks 719 to Sergeant Hurks?

7 A No, sir, Sergeant Hurks and the two MP's were in a jeep in
8 front of the barracks.
9

10 Q Could you identify either of the MP's if you saw them again?

11 A No, sir, I couldn't tell much about them because they was witting
12 in the jeep and Sergeant Hurks was standing in the front door by them.
13

14 Q Do you know Private Lomax of the MP's?

15 A No, sir, I don't know any MP.
16

17 Q Did you see the MP's close enough to determine whether one of them
18 had sideburns?

19 A No, sir, it wouldn't come down more than right down there.
20

21 Q Do you know the rank of the MP's that were conversing with
22 Sergeant Hurks in the vicinity of Building 719?

23 A I am not for sure, I didn't see anyone have any kind of a stripes.
24

25 Q In what kind of a vehicle were the MP's riding?

26 A In a jeep.
27

28 Q There were only two of them in the jeep?

29 A Yes, sir.
30

31 Q Is there any further description, whether I have asked you or not,
32 you can give me concerning these two MP's that were conversing with Sergeant
33 Hurks near Building 719?

34 A No more than how they were dressed.
35

36 Q All the MP's wear the same uniform. Is there any other description,
37 his voice or anything?

38 A They didn't have heavy voices.
39

40 Q Did they have guns, did you notice that?

41 A They just had clubs, those two.
42

43 Q Did they say where they had been during the riot?

44 A No, sir, they never did say it.
45

326

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Were they colored or white MP's?
2 A White MP's, sir.
3
4 Q After you returned from the Italian Area and went to your room
5 in Building 719, did you at that time observe this dice game still going
6 on?
7 A No, sir, I didn't see any dice game going on at that time.
8
9 Q The game you previously observed in Building 719 had, upon your
10 return to the building, ceased?
11 A Yes, sir, it had.
12
13 Q Did you see any of the participants of that dice game in
14 Building 719 after you returned there?
15 A Yes, sir, I saw Richard Suttliff and he was downstairs.
16
17 Q What was Richard doing when you saw him?
18 A Just standing back and looking.
19
20 Q Did he say he had been in the fight?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q After you saw Richard, who else did you observe?
24 A Willie Scott, he was in when I left, he was running the game
25 and when the fight was over Scott said, "Let me out, I got to go to
26 my barracks," and he went out. The fight was over then.
27
28 Q Who did he tell to let him out so he could go to his barracks?
29 A A bunch of boys crowded in the door.
30
31 Q No guards were put on the doors of 719?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q Did you see Simmons?
35 A Yes, sir, I seen him before I left.
36
37 Q You didn't see him after you returned?
38 A No, sir, I don't remember seeing him.
39
40 Q Did you see Jackson?
41 A Walter Jackson?
42
43 Q Willie Jackson?
44 A I don't believe I know him.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

927

(ELLIS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

46

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Henry Jupiter, did you see him?

2 A Yes, sir, he was playing before I left.

3 Q Did you see him when you returned to the barracks?

4 A No, sir, I never did see him.

5 Q If we established that the fight or the riot was over between
6 11:45 and 12 O'clock, what time would you say it was that you returned
7 to your barracks?

8 A Sir, when I returned to my barracks there was still lots of them
9 in the area.

10 Q When you left the area the fight was over in the orderly room?

11 A Yes, sir.

12 Q How much time elapsed then until you returned to your barracks?

13 A About 5 minutes.

14 Q After the fight was over and you left the area, you would estimate
15 you arrived at your barracks 5 minutes later?

16 A Yes, sir.

17 Q And you definitely state there wasn't any poker game or crap
18 game going on in Building 719 when you returned?

19 A Not upstairs. I didn't go in downstairs, I went upstairs and
20 I didn't see anyone gambling.

21 Q Is there anything else or any other information you would like
22 to add to your testimony?

23 A Not that I remember right now. Of course, if anything comes
24 in my memory I will notify you.

25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
928

(ELLIS) (END)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

47

1 Further testimony of Pfc. John H. Pinckney, taken
2 at Seattle, Washington on 26 September 1944 by Lieut.
3 Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5
6 The witness was reminded he was still under oath and
7 of his rights as a witness under the 24th Article of War.
8
9

10 Q When you left your barracks on the night of August 14th, 1944
11 with your brassard and MP club, you went directly to the vicinity of
12 Building 700, didn't you?
13

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q When you arrived at Building 700, what was happening there?
16

17 A The colored men were standing out in the area, the 700 area,
18 arguing and discussing about the Italians that hit one of the colored
19 boys and the ones that--

20 Q Didn't those boys up around Building 700 say they were going down
21 and kill those Italians?

22 A I don't recall whether those words were spoken, but something
23 on that order.
24

25 Q Were the words you heard used the strongest words used up there
26 among the people in the vicinity of Building 700?

27 A "Let's go down and bring those God damn Italians out of there."
28

29 Q Now, John, when you arrived at Building 700, there was already
30 a fight going on in that Italian Area, some of the boys had gone into that
31 area?
32

33 A Yes, sir.

34 Q You could hear the fighting going on down there?
35

36 A Yes, sir.

37 Q Do you know approximately how long it had been going on when
38 you got to the vicinity of Building 700?
39

40 A No, sir.

41 Q When you left your barracks, could you hear rocks being thrown
42 against the buildings in that area?

43 A No, sir, all I heard was a loud noise and when I got in the
44 vicinity of Building 700 then I could hear the rocks being thrown and
45 glass being broken in the Italian Area.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

48

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q You could hear glass being broken in the Italian Area?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
- 4 Q And the first thing you heard when you were hanging out your
5 clothes was this fence being torn down around Building 700?
6 A I wasn't hanging any clothes out, I was in the barracks and
7 after I got my clothes on I went to the orderly room of the 650th Port
8 Company and then proceeded to the vicinity of Building 700.
9
- 10 Q How long did you remain around Building 700 before the MP's
11 arrived?
12 A Approximately 2 or 3 seconds, I had no more than got to the
13 area before the MP's got there.
14
- 15 Q Who did you hear conversing or talking concerning their going
16 down into the Italian Area and bring the Italians out?
17 A Just a whole bunch of men.
18
- 19 Q Definitely, who said it?
20 A I couldn't say definitely, sir, because I don't know just who
21 it was that said it.
22
- 23 Q You don't remember who it was?
24 A No, sir.
25
- 26 Q You can't think of one of them?
27 A The only thing I remember definitely, those words were spoken,
28 but to point out one certain man, I can't do that.
29
- 30 Q How many, approximately, of those whom you saw around Building 700
31 later went down into the area?
32 A I think I stated before, sir, that just the white MP's and
33 myself were the only ones that proceeded down into the area, after we
34 stopped that bunch of men in the vicinity of Building 700 the white MP's
35 and myself were the only ones that went into the area.
36
- 37 Q They went then?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
- 40 Q How many after you got there did you see who you had previously
41 seen around Building 700?
42 A I couldn't say whether Wallace Wooden was there.
43
- 44 Q Robert Barber?
45 A No, sir, he was in the orderly room, I don't know, I don't
think he was up there.

930

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJA NARA Date 06/12/02

49

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q How about Luther Larkin, was he in the orderly room when you were
2 there or did he follow you down there?
3 A No, sir, he didn't follow us down there.
4
5 Q He was already there?
6 A He may have been.
7
8 Q You didn't see him?
9 A When I saw him it was shortly after I had gotten into the MP
10 jeep and had came back up on the road, then I saw him. He was taking
11 someone over to one of the barracks.
12
13 Q Some wounded fellow?
14 A I cannot say-- he wasn't wounded.
15
16 Q Why was he taking him over there?
17 A I cannot say, he was in Building 719 and then they were coming up
18 the sidewalk and I didn't see whether Luther Larkin was down in the area
19 or not, he could have been.
20
21 Q Did you talk to him when he was taking this fellow from 719
22 across the street? Did you talk to Luther?
23 A I am not for sure, it looked like I-- Yes, sir, I did.
24
25 Q What did you talk to Luther about, about the fight?
26 A No, I asked him, if I am not mistaken, where he was going to take
27 this fellow and he said he was going to take him over to his barracks, he
28 was scared or something.
29
30 Q Do you remember who the man was that he was taking over there?
31 A No, sir, I don't.
32
33 Q It was a member of your company, wasn't it?
34 A Yes, sir. See, Colonel, there was a bunch of new men that had
35 been transferred to the 650th.
36
37 Q These fellows came from New Orleans?
38 A I don't know where they came from.
39
40 Q There was a lot of them you didn't know?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q Have you seen that man Larkin was taking out since that time?
44 A I can't say whether I have or not, it was dark and too hard to
45 identify anyone.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
931

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

50

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q You immediately recognized Larkin and it looks like if you knew
2 the other fellow you would have recognized him.

3 A The reason I recognized Larkin, he called my name and I called
4 my attention to him, but I can't recall who that fellow was.

5
6 Q Well, try and think who it was because we would like to know where
7 he was going and why he was so scared.

8 A I don't recall.

9
10 Q What kind of a looking fellow was he? Was he a small or a large
11 fellow?

12 A He was of medium build.

13
14 Q The clothes he had on, do you remember if they were fatigues or
15 suntans?

16 A I don't recall what he had on.

17
18 Q Haven't you heard his first name?

19 A No, sir, in fact, if I recall correctly, I don't think there was
20 any names called.

21
22 Q Haven't you heard his name since that time?

23 A No, sir, not that I know of.

24
25 Q Larkin was taking him up to the black barracks so he undoubtedly
26 lived in that area.

27 A2 More than likely, yes, sir.

28
29 Q Did Larkin say he had been hit?

30 A No, sir, I don't think so.

31
32 Q What did he say, he was scared?

33 A He mentioned he was scared.

34
35 Q Did he mention why he was scared?

36 A No, sir, he didn't.

37
38 Q Did he say he had been in the fight?

39 A I don't know whether he had been in the fight or not.

40
41 Q Did Larkin mention he had been and was trying to get this fellow
42 back up there?

43 A No, sir, I don't think those words were mentioned.

44
45 Q Larkin didn't mention he had been in the fight?

932

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

51

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A No, sir, I don't think so.
- 2
- 3 Q Did Larkin mention to you that he had beat the hell out of those
- 4 Italians or something like that?
- 5 A As near as I recall those words wasn't spoken. That MP I was
- 6 riding with, he and I were riding together all the time and when Larkin
- 7 spoke to me the MP and I, we were still sitting in the car.
- 8
- 9 Q Lomax was the one you rode with?
- 10 A Sir, I don't know who he was.
- 11
- 12 Q Did Lomax, while you were in the jeep, have some conversation
- 13 with some other boys around the door of Building 719? Didn't you stop
- 14 and talk to them?
- 15 A Yes, sir.
- 16
- 17 Q Wasn't Hurks talking to Lomax? You know Hurks?
- 18 A Yes, sir.
- 19
- 20 Q Didn't he come out and talk to Lomax by Building 719 and Hurks
- 21 said they had beaten the hell out of the Italians and Lomax replied that
- 22 they did a good job, that the white MP's were going to have to do it,
- 23 or something like that?
- 24 A I don't recall, sir.
- 25
- 26 Q Well, you wouldn't say it wasn't said?
- 27 A No, sir, I wouldn't say it wasn't said and I wouldn't say it was
- 28 said.
- 29
- 30 Q If it was said you don't recall it; is that it?
- 31 A Yes, sir.
- 32
- 33 Q Have you heard Lomax talking to Hurks?
- 34 A I heard Lomax talking, whether it was Hurks I couldn't say.
- 35
- 36 Q You heard him talking in front of the door to Building 719?
- 37 A Yes, sir.
- 38
- 39 Q And you heard all the conversation about the fight because wasn't
- 40 that what Lomax and Hurks were talking about?
- 41 A Whether it was Hurks or not I couldn't say, but there was someone
- 42 there on the door and what conversation was passed on, I don't recall
- 43 at the present time.
- 44
- 45 Q But Lomax was talking to some noncommissioned officer in front

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

933

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

52

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 of Building 719?
2 A I think it was, yes, sir, a noncommissioned officer.
3
4 Q Wasn't it Hurkes he was talking to?
5 A I cannot say definitely.
6
7 Q You have an idea whether it was Hurkes, you know him well enough
8 to remember whether he was standing there?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q But whether it was Hurkes or not you cannot say?
12 A I cannot say definitely.
13
14 Q But you recall there was a conversation in front of Building
15 719?
16 A Yes, sir, all I know there was a conversation going on.
17
18 Q Between Lomax and some noncommissioned officer in front of
19 Building 719?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q After you and the two MP's left the vicinity of Building 700, you
23 went down Lawton Road going toward Building 713?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q After you arrived in the Italian Area and before you got into
27 the building, who did you first see in that area you recognized?
28 A I went down Lawton Road.
29
30 Q Who did you first see after you passed that building right there?
31 A We had proceeded down to Building 713 because there were soldiers
32 up in this area, Building 708 and 709, and I couldn't recall who they
33 were, but when we arrived in here, Building 713, there were two men
34 standing on the outside.
35
36 Q Whom you recognized?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q Who were they?
40 A Wallace Wooden and Frank Hughes.
41
42 Q Wallace Wooden and Frank Hughes were standing outside the building?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q On what side of the door was Wooden and Hughes standing?

934

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJA NARA Date 06/12/02

53

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A The left-hand side.
- 2
- 3 Q And Frank and Wallace both had blubs in their hands, didn't
- 4 they?
- 5 A I can't say what they had.
- 6
- 7 Q What were they doing as you saw them standing on the left hand
- 8 side of the door of Building 713?
- 9 A It looked like they were standing up talking or looking,
- 10 I can't say which.
- 11
- 12 Q As you approached Building 713 there was a lot of fighting
- 13 going on inside?
- 14 A Yes, sir.
- 15
- 16 Q There was a fight going on outside too wasn't there? Over
- 17 in this area here?
- 18 A Over by the tents, I imagine it was.
- 19
- 20 Q When you were going in this building you saw Wooden and Hughes
- 21 on the left side--
- 22 A As I forestated, when we were entering Building 713, we single
- 23 filed in, which is on the outside by those tents and there was a lot of
- 24 talk and cussing going on, but I couldn't say definitely whether there
- 25 was a fight going on.
- 26
- 27 Q As you went in and heard the cussing and talking in the vicinity
- 28 of the building, did you recognize any voices you heard out there?
- 29 A I cannot say.
- 30
- 31 Q You wouldn't say you didn't recognize some of the voices?
- 32 A No, sir.
- 33
- 34 Q You know the boys well enough that you can tell the voice of
- 35 the sergeant or the corporal of the squad and you were undoubtedly
- 36 getting some of that conversation, weren't you?
- 37 A I don't recall whether or not there was any fighting going
- 38 on outside, but there was a lot of cussing and voices. I can't distinguish
- 39 the voices well enough to identify a person.
- 40
- 41 Q Then if you couldn't distinguish the voices, do you think you know
- 42 who was out there?
- 43 A No, sir.
- 44
- 45 Q Had this tent been broken down when you arrived?

935

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

54

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A I cannot say for sure.
- 2
- 3 Q You didn't observe the tent as you went in?
- 4 A No, sir.
- 5
- 6 Q Was a jeep sitting in front of the tent when you arrived there?
- 7 A I cannot say.
- 8
- 9 Q Was there a car covered with a sheet there?
- 10 A Yes, sir.
- 11
- 12 Q But you didn't see a jeep sitting there?
- 13 A No, sir.
- 14
- 15 Q Did you observe anyone on the right side of the door as you went
- 16 in that you knew?
- 17 A There were men there but I didn't see their faces and I don't
- 18 know who they were.
- 19
- 20 Q On the outside of the building the only two individuals you
- 21 observed was Wallace Wooden and Frank Hughes?
- 22 A Yes, sir.
- 23
- 24 Q Then you went into the building?
- 25 A Yes, sir.
- 26
- 27 Q As you entered the door and went into the room, who was the
- 28 first group you remember there?
- 29 A The only one I saw was those Italians wounded laying on the
- 30 floor.
- 31
- 32 Q That is Room Z?
- 33 A Yes, sir.
- 34
- 35 Q Weren't there any colored soldiers in Room Z?
- 36 A No, sir.
- 37
- 38 Q Were there any standing in the door as you went in?
- 39 A Yes, sir.
- 40
- 41 Q And as you went in some fellow hit at you and missed you and
- 42 hit one of the other boys in back of you?
- 43 A He didn't swing at me.
- 44
- 45 Q You perhaps had passed him and didn't see him.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

936

(PINCKNEY)

 DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
 By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

55



1 A I was the third one in the door.
 2
 3 Q He swung and hit the next fellow, as the testimony will show.
 4 Who was the fellow that swung or who was standing in a position so he
 5 could swing at somebody?
 6 A I cannot say.
 7
 8 Q Didn't you see the people gathered around the door trying to
 9 push you away?
 10 A I think if I recall I stated we went in single file.
 11
 12 Q You had to because there were so many boys that you couldn't
 13 go in any other way. Who did you see around the door that you knew
 14 besides Wooden and Hughes?
 15 A I can't say.
 16
 17 Q You don't remember one of them?
 18 A I think I stated before it was dark and I don't recall any faces.
 19
 20 Q Don't you remember seeing Hamilton?
 21 A Which Hamilton?
 22
 23 Q John Lee Hamilton, didn't you see him in that door?
 24 A No, sir.
 25
 26 Q Didn't you see Spencer there standing inside that door?
 27 A No, sir.
 28
 29 Q Robert Ellis?
 30 A I think if you asked the MP there wasn't anyone standing in the
 31 doorway beyond that little bunch there at 713 at that landing.
 32
 33 Q Let's get this straight. You got passed the landing and was
 34 going in the door and there was a boy inside that swung as you came
 35 in--
 36 A I don't recall anyone, there wasn't anyone swung at us when we
 37 were inside of that building.
 38
 39 Q Then you saw no one in Room Z?
 40 A No, sir.
 41
 42 Q After you entered Room X, the big room where you saw the Italians
 43 wounded, you saw a bunch of colored fellows in there. Who did you first
 44 observe you knew after entering the big room?
 45 A Robert Barber.



337

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

56

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Robert or Richard?
2 A Richard Barber.
3
4 Q What was Richard doing when you first saw him?
5 A He was standing up with a rock or a club or a knife in his
6 hand. What it was I don't recall, the weapon.
7
8 Q Was he talking to someone?
9 A I don't know if he was talking to anyone or not.
10
11 Q That is the first fellow you observed there?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Who was with Richard?
15 A I think I said there wasn't no one with Richard.
16
17 Q Let's forget what you said before. You definitely saw Richard
18 Barber?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q With Richard you say there was no one?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q Who else was in the room?
25 A I said there was a bunch of men in there but I couldn't
26 recognize any of them because I didn't know them, but there were a bunch
27 of men in the room when we came in and they fled out the windows and
28 doors?
29
30 Q You definitely saw Richard?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q After you observed him who else did you observe secondly?
34 A I said I saw some men, I don't recall who they were because
35 I don't know them.
36
37 Q You mean all those fellows in the big room were people you
38 didn't know? Of course, you know all the old men in the 650th and
39 651st?
40 A All the 650th, very little dealings I had with the 651st.
41 Colonel, there is 3 or 4 different companies around there.
42
43 Q There are the 650th, the 651st, and the 578th.
44 A Yes, sir, it is hard to remember the names of the boys.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
938

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

57

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q The thing that strikes me as being peculiar is this; The MP's
2 went with you and they didn't know any of those fellows and you come along
3 and the first three fellows you saw you recognized, Wooden, Hughes, and
4 Barber, you know they were there?

5 A Yes, sir.

6
7 Q You definitely state they were there?

8 A Yes, sir. I don't recall anyone I know that was in that room.

9
10 Q How about Milton Bratton?

11 A No, sir.

12
13 Q You didn't see him when he was in Room X?

14 A Yes, sir.

15
16 Q You know Milton?

17 A I know of him, yes, sir.

18
19 Q You didn't see him?

20 A No, sir, as near as I recall.

21
22 Q How about Willie Basden?

23 A I don't know him.

24
25 Q How about Thomas Battle?

26 A I don't know the man.

27
28 Q John S. Brown, he is a T/4?

29 A I don't know Brown.

30
31 Q Johnnie Ceaser?

32 A Again I say as near as I recall I didn't see Johnnie Ceaser in there
33 but it was later stated he was in there.

34
35 Q Did Johnnie tell you he was in there?

36 A No, sir.

37
38 Q Who was the person that told you that?

39 A I don't recall right now, but it was discussed in the company that
40 Ceaser was in there.

41
42 Q What did they say Ceaser was doing?

43 A Didn't say.

44
45 Q Didn't they say he was striking the boys, hitting the Italians

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
938

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

58

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 that ran outside?

2 A No, sir, they didn't say he was.

3 Q James Chandler, did you see him there?

4 A I said they were going out when I opened the door, there were
5 men that I didn't know, but they were going out the window.
6

7 Q You mean out of the people there you didn't know many of them?

8 A Again I will say, sir, that there was more than one company
9 around there and I don't recall but one or two men.
10

11 Q How about Willie Curry, do you know Willie?

12 A No, sir.

13 Q You know Roy Daymond?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Do you remember seeing him there?

16 A Sir, I didn't see him.

17 Q You didn't see him either outside or inside the building?

18 A No, sir.

19 Q Did you see him in the area that night?

20 A I don't know him.

21 Q You don't know him and you didn't see him in the area that
22 night?

23 A No, sir.

24 Q How about Lee Dixon, he is a T/5?

25 A I don't know him.

26 Q How about Willie Ellis?

27 A I know him.

28 Q Did you see him?

29 A I didn't see him there.

30 Q Did you see him standing outside the building when you came out?

31 A I didn't see him at all.

32 Q How about Herman Gentry?

33 A No, sir, I don't know him, I have heard that name.
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
940

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

59

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q How about Addison George, he is a good friend of yours?
2 A I don't know, he isn't a friend of mine.
3
- 4 Q Is he in the same company?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
- 7 Q You know him pretty well?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
- 10 Q Where did you last see him?
11 A I didn't see him at all.
12
- 13 Q You didn't see him in the area?
14 A No, sir. Colonel, I think I said once before they put the light
15 out there and you couldn't see your hand before you.
16
- 17 Q I realize that.
18 A Yes, sir.
19
- 20 Q Yet you saw Hughes and the only light was shining out of the
21 window from the orderly room and you could see him plainly.
22 A Yes, sir.
23
- 24 Q After you got inside you could see because they had a 200-watt
25 bulb.
26 A Yes, sir.
27
- 28 Q They had the light on in the room?
29 A Just in the orderly room.
30
- 31 Q Wasn't there any light in Room Y where they had the Italians?
32 A No, sir.
33
- 34 Q Out in front where the two counters are, they had a light there,
35 didn't they?
36 A There wasn't any light, they were in the orderly room.
37
- 38 Q That is why I say it looks rather strange that you don't know
39 some of the fellows that jumped out of the window, because the bright
40 light shone plainly there.
41 A Again I will say if I knew who they were I would be glad to tell
42 you so we could get this straightened up.
43
- 44 Q I am not doubting your work, I want you to be definite about
45 it.

941

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

60

1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q Where did you last see Hamilton?
4 A I didn't see Hamilton at all.
5
6 Q Where was Johnson?
7 A I don't know him.
8
9 Q William G. Jones, you know him?
10 A The last time I saw Jones was up on the road.
11
12 Q Before you went down in there?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q What was he doing up there?
16 A He was up there with the rest of the crowd.
17
18 Q What was he doing?
19 A Standing in the bunch and Hurks was telling them to keep back.
20
21 Q Wille was talking with all of them and he was with this crowd
22 that were hollering about putting them out?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q He was among the crowd?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q He and Hurks both?
29 A Hurks was one I thought who stayed back.
30
31 Q You didn't see him doing anything, did you?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q You heard Hurks talking among that group?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Wasn't he talking with that group that was there?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q Did you hear him say anything?
41 A No, sir, I didn't.
42
43 Q Henry Jupiter, did you see him?
44 A I didn't see Jupiter.
45

942

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

61

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Robert Mathis?
2 A I don't know Robert.
3
4 Q Roy Montgomery, you testified you saw Montgomery.
5 A I don't know him, I know William Montgomery.
6
7 Q Willie Prevost?
8 A I didn't see him down there.
9
10 Q Edward Sanders?
11 A I don't know him.
12
13 Q Alva Shelton?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Jesse Sims?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Where was he?
20 A I didn't see him.
21
22 Q Samuel Snow, did you see Samuel?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q Leslie Stewart?
26 A I don't know him.
27
28 Q Richard Suttliff?
29 A I didn't see him. I know him, but I didn't see him.
30
31 Q Samuel Thomas, did you see him?
32 A I don't know him.
33
34 Q Booker Townsell?
35 A I know him, but I didn't see him.
36
37 Q Joe Trice?
38 A I didn't see Trice.
39
40 Q Arthur Williams, do you know Arthur?
41 A I didn't see him down there.
42
43 Q William D. Montgomery?
44 A No, sir, I never saw him down there, I saw him after he said he
45 had been beaten.

943

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

62

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q When they had him on the ground?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Now, we are in Room X over there, the big room, did you recognize
5 anyone in that big room, Room X?
6 A No, sir.
7
8 Q You went in Room Y, didn't you?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q And evidently that looked all quiet in there?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Who did you see there you recognized?
15 A No one.
16
17 Q Were there any colored soldiers in there?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q Did you see any go out the window?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q Did you see any after you got in and looked through the window?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q You didn't see Hughes and Wooden standing there then?
27 A No, sir.
28
29 Q They had gone away?
30 A I imagine so.
31
32 Q You could see if you looked through the window?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Where did you go after that?
36 A I never did leave Room X.
37
38 Q As you stood there I believe you stated you saw someone
39 standing in the door or in the isleway that goes between A and D?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q Who are the people you saw there?
43 A I don't recall who those were.
44
45 Q I believe you mentioned one the other day when you talked to me.

944

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

63

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A I don't think I mentioned anyone. One of the MP's and myself
2 picked up two Italians and brought them into Room X that leads into the
3 orderly room.

4 Q But that is through the front door?

5 A Yes, sir.

6
7
8 Q When you went in and looked through the hallway, this door had
9 been knocked down and this is where you picked up the two Italian
10 fellows?

11 A Over here and here is where I saw Richard.

12
13 Q You saw Richard standing in this door?

14 A Standing in this isleway.

15
16 Q You saw Richard there?

17 A Yes, sir.

18
19 Q Who were the others in the hallway with Richard?

20 A I said there wasn't anyone in that isleway with Richard.

21
22 Q He was by himself?

23 A Yes, sir.

24
25 Q Was anyone in back of him?

26 A No, sir.

27
28 Q That is where he stood when he had the rocks in his hand?

29 A He had something, I couldn't say what it was.

30
31 Q Was there anyone else that came in while you were looking toward
32 that hallway besides Richard?

33 A No, sir.

34
35 Q You were located where you could see him?

36 A I told the MP to go stand in the door.

37
38 Q He stood at the first door, he didn't stand outside the door?

39 A No, sir, he went outside the door and stood.

40
41 Q That was the white MP?

42 A Yes, sir.

43
44 Q Didn't you use any deputized colored soldiers to help you?

45 A No, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

945

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

64

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q You didn't use any of them?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q You just used the MP's you had?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Now, after the fight was over there you went back to your
8 barracks?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q After you had finished all of your work that night didn't you
12 go back to your barracks?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q When you got back to your barracks most of the boys were in the
16 barracks because they didn't go to work that day?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q When you got back there who did you talk with?
20 A The only ones I can remember is Sergeant Smith Williams and
21 Sergeant Aubry.
22
23 Q That is the first sergeant?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q When you came back in your barracks, did they make fun of you?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q Who was it that made fun of you and that you resented because
30 you had done a good job? Who was it that made fun of you?
31 A I don't recall who it was.
32
33 Q Wasn't there someone in your barracks that made fun of you?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q Who made the remark about you?
37 A They said I takes MP on myself and I went down and run those
38 guys out. As near as I recall they said, "There is old MP Pinckney
39 himself" and I said it didn't make a damn whether I did or not, it was
40 all over with me and I hoped those that didn't like me taking up MP
41 would start a fight with me.
42
43 Q Who was it that was talking to you?
44 A He is one of the new fellows that came in, I don't recall his name,
45 he hasn't been in the company very long.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

946

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

65

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q What did Sergeant Aubry say when he was there?
2 A He just said, "That's enough of that."
3
4 Q What else did he say?
5 A He didn't say anything
6
7 Q What did Williams say?
8 A He didn't say anything.
9
10 Q Was he in the room?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q Didn't he tell those fellows to shut their mouths?
14 A Williams didn't say anything, Sergeant Aubry was the one that
15 said, "That is enough."
16
17 Q Did you and Williams get along pretty well?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Who are the fellows you didn't like in the outfit that were making
21 fun of you?
22 A I don't dislike any of them.
23
24 Q Did you tell them you had just found an Italian hanged?
25 A No, sir, I reported that to the company commander.
26
27 Q Didn't you mention it when you came in there that he had been
28 hanged?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q When did the boys learn about the hanging?
32 A They didn't learn until after we went into the other barracks
33 and we went down to get our rifles inspected and when we came back the
34 rumor dropped out someplace.
35
36 Q Who told them first?
37 A I cannot say.
38
39 Q But they knew it?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q Did you hear the boys talking it over?
43 A They asked-- wondered who did the hanging and wondered how long
44 he had been hung.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

947

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

66

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Did the boys say they knew who did that or that they had a good
2 idea?
- 3 A No, sir.
- 4
- 5 Q You didn't hear anyone say that?
- 6 A No, sir.
- 7
- 8 Q That is about all they talked about, they wondered who did it
9 and nobody made a conjecture as to who did it?
- 10 A No, sir.
- 11
- 12 Q Did they say who took the rope or who had the rope?
- 13 A No, sir.
- 14
- 15 Q Did they know where they got the rope?
- 16 A No, sir.
- 17
- 18 Q None of them mentioned about where they got the rope?
- 19 A No, sir, I didn't hear about who hung him, the only remark made
20 was they said they wondered who hung him and how long he had been hung.
- 21
- 22 Q They didn't say, "That is good enough for the Son-of-a-bitch"?
- 23 A No, sir.
- 24
- 25 Q Or, "It would be good if they hanged the whole bunch"?
- 26 A No, sir, those remarks wasn't made.
- 27
- 28 Q After this remark about the hanging, have you since that time
29 heard anyone talking about it since you have been over at the stockade?
- 30 A I was only asked who found him and I made the remark, "I am the
31 one that found him hung, another MP and myself."
- 32
- 33 Q What did they say?
- 34 A They asked me how he looked, how a hung man looks.
- 35
- 36 Q Did they ask you where he was hung and everything?
- 37 A Yes, sir.
- 38
- 39 Q And you told them?
- 40 A Yes, sir.
- 41
- 42 Q While you were talking about the hanging, do you remember a bunch
43 of them saying they were in the area where he was hanged?
- 44 A No, sir.
- 45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

348

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJPNARA Date 06/12/02

67

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Did a bunch of them say they had chased an Italian through that
2 place and didn't see him?
3 A No, sir.
4
- 5 Q No one told you they were chasing Italians so far as you know and
6 they were surprised they didn't see him?
7 A No, sir.
8
- 9 Q Did any of them say they heard a bunch of people down there that
10 night?
11 A No, sir.
12
- 13 Q How long have you known Richard Barber?
14 A Since I have been in the 650th Port Company.
15
- 16 Q About how long has that been?
17 A I am not for sure whether Richard Barber came in January or March,
18 it was back there someplace, approximately 5 or 6 months.
19
- 20 Q Have the two of you been friends?
21 A Only in seeing each other going from one place to another.
22
- 23 Q There in the company?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
- 26 Q Have you ever had words or anything like that?
27 A No, sir.
28
- 29 Q Have you had any conversation with Richard about his being in
30 the area and in this fight since it happened?
31 A No, sir.
32
- 33 Q You haven't talked with him?
34 A No, sir.
35
- 36 Q The only reason you are willing to identify Richard and not any
37 of the other boys down there--
38 A The only reason is that I saw Richard and I know him, that is the
39 only reason.
40
- 41 Q There is no particular reason you wanted to identify him and not
42 some of the others?
43 A No, sir.
44
- 45 Q He is the only one you can tell us about that was in the orderly

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
949

(PINCKNEY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJD NARA Date 06/12/02

68

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 room.

2 A Yes, sir.

3
4 Q And you can remember specifically the conversation you had with
5 him.

6 A yes, sir.

7
8 Q You say there was a lot of conversation and you have trouble in
9 remembering and identifying folks that you saw, but you do remember
10 Richard. Doesn't that look strange to you?11 A No, sir, because I forestated that Wallace Wooden and Frank
12 Hughes-- I told them to clear out of the area and they may have did that
13 because when I looked out the window I couldn't see them and there wasn't
14 any other men of the 650th that I can recall that I remember seeing in
15 that area that I had any dealings with.16
17 Q Did you give any orders to anyone other than Richard Barber,
18 Hughes, and Wooden?19 A Other than the group of men we told to clear out of the area of
20 the orderly room.21
22 Q You told a bunch of them to clear out of different places?

23 A Yes, sir.

24
25 Q You were clearing them out as you went through?

26 A Yes, sir.

27
28 Q Whom else did you address that order to?29 A As I said, other men that was in the area. Again I will say
30 that the men that was down there was from four companies and it is hard
31 to identify the men you don't know and don't have close dealings with.32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

950

(PINCKNEY) (END)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

103

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Further testimony of Pfc. Roy L. Montgomery,
2 taken at Seattle, Washington on 26 September 1944
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5
6 The witness was reminded he was still under oath and
7 of his rights as a witness under the 24th Article of War.
8
9

10 Q On the night of August 14, 1944, you have previously testified
11 that when the fight started you went to the vicinity of Building 700.
12 That is this building here.

13 A After it had started, yes, sir.
14

15 Q You left your Barracks, Barracks 666 and went directly to Building
16 700, or in the vicinity of 700 where the riot was in progress then?

17 A Yes, sir.
18

19 Q And when you arrived at Building 700 you saw a large number
20 in the vicinity of that building?

21 A Yes, sir, over by 719.
22

23 Q And what were they doing at the time you first observed them?

24 A Standing up talking.
25

26 Q Talking about Willie D. Montgomery getting hit?

27 A When I heard about him getting hit I was around the end of this
28 building here.
29

30 Q You were getting ready to go down there?

31 A Yes, sir.
32

33 Q And a lot of them had clubs?

34 A I didn't see any clubs.
35

36 Q But later you saw them with clubs?

37 A Yes, sir.
38

39 Q After you went up and got the 2-by-4 in the vicinity of the
40 north side of Building 700--

41 A Yes, sir.
42

43 Q Then you went to the Italian Area?

44 A Yes, sir.
45

985

(MONTGOMERY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SPNARA Date 06/12/02

104

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Who did you see you first recognized after you first entered the
2 Italian Area, the first man you saw?
3 A That was this guy in the orderly room.
4
5 Q Didn't you see someone before you got to the orderly room?
6 A Yes, sir, I saw someone, but I don't remember who he was.
7
8 Q Don't you remember any of them outside the building?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q When you went up to the orderly room what door did you first enter?
12 A The front door, Door A.
13
14 Q Who did you see when you first entered the building that you
15 recognized?
16 A That is when I saw-- I didn't recognize anyone in this Room R.
17
18 Q Who did you first see that you recognized?
19 A That was this Curry and Ceaser.
20
21 Q You saw Willie S. Curry and John Ceaser?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q Where were they with reference to Door D?
25 A In the room this side.
26
27 Q They were in Room Z?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q What was Curry and Ceaser doing in Room Z?
31 A That is when they was coming from the outside and coming back into
32 Room X.
33
34 Q They had clubs in their hands, didn't they?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Did they strike anyone while you were standing there?
38 A I didn't see them.
39
40 Q Now, who else did you see in Room X that you recognized?
41 What colored soldiers did you see in Room X that you recognized?
42 A I didn't recognize any in there.
43
44 Q You mean you saw all of these people and you didn't recognize
45 any of them?

386

(MONTGOMERY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

105

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A No, sir, I didn't.
- 2
- 3 Q Did you notice a large number of colored soldiers there?
- 4 A There were but I couldn't recognize any of them.
- 5
- 6 Q There was none you knew?
- 7 A No, sir.
- 8
- 9 Q In Room Y who did you see that you recognized?
- 10 A I did not recognize anyone.
- 11
- 12 Q As you looked into Room Y who did you see standing there on the inside?
- 13 A I didn't recognize anyone.
- 14
- 15 Q While you were outside looking in the building who did you see
- 16 in the building you recognized besides John Ceaser and Willie Curry?
- 17 A Woodin was standing in Door A.
- 18
- 19 Q Did he have a club in his hand in Door A?
- 20 A I didn't recognize the club.
- 21
- 22 Q Who else did you recognize in the vicinity of that building?
- 23 A Mathis.
- 24
- 25 Q Robert Mathis?
- 26 A Yes, sir.
- 27
- 28 Q What was he doing when you first saw him?
- 29 A He wasn't doing anything.
- 30
- 31 Q But he had a club in his hand?
- 32 A Yes, sir.
- 33
- 34 Q And did he tell you what he had been doing?
- 35 A No, sir.
- 36
- 37 Q He didn't tell you about what he had been doing in the Italian
- 38 Area?
- 39 A No, sir.
- 40
- 41 Q Who else did you talk to about what they did in the Italian
- 42 Area on the night of August 14th, 1944?
- 43 A Well, I didn't definitely talk to anyone.
- 44
- 45 Q You heard some conversation?

937

(MONTGOMERY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

106

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2
- 3 Q Did you hear a conversation about their participation in the
- 4 fight in the Italian Area? Who did you hear?
- 5 A Mathis and Ceaser, Curry and Murray.
- 6
- 7 Q What was his name?
- 8 A Murray.
- 9
- 10 Q Did he say what he did on the night of August 14th, 1944?
- 11 A He didn't say what he did, he was in the conversation.
- 12
- 13 Q What was the conversation about, what they had done?
- 14 A They were just conversing about the fight.
- 15
- 16 Q Now, of these four men that you definitely identify as being in
- 17 the orderly room on the night of August 14th, 1944, what ones did you
- 18 see with the clubs they had in their hands?
- 19 A I didn't recognize anyone.
- 20
- 21 Q You never saw a lick being hit in that area?
- 22 A No, sir, I didn't.
- 23
- 24 Q The only lick you hit was the one you struck over the head
- 25 as he came through Door B toward E?
- 26 A Yes, sir.
- 27
- 28 Q And you hit him with a 2-by-4?
- 29 A Yes, sir.
- 30
- 31 Q Was he an Italian soldier?
- 32 A Yes, sir.
- 33
- 34 Q That is the only one you hit during the evening?
- 35 A Yes, sir.
- 36
- 37 Q Did you see anyone reach through the window that leads into Room Y
- 38 and strike a soldier?
- 39 A No, sir.
- 40
- 41 Q Did you hear anyone scream in Room Y while you were in the
- 42 building?
- 43 A Yes, sir, they was hollering.
- 44
- 45 Q What were they hollering?

908

(MONTGOMERY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

107

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A "Oh, Oh, mercy."
2
3 Q But at the time they were hollering you didn't have the
4 opportunity to look into that room, is that right?
5 A When I heard the hollering that is when I was looking.
6
7 Q Was anyone hitting them when they were hollering?
8 A They had been hitting them already.
9
10 Q They were all beat up lying on the floor?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q The men in Room X were seriously wounded?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Some of them had been stabbed?
17 A I don't know if any had been stabbed.
18
19 Q Some of them were lying on the floor?
20 A I didn't see them right on the floor in Room X, if I did I don't
21 remember.
22
23 Q Did you see a sergeant sitting on the desk that had blood on his
24 shirt?
25 A He had blood running down his forehead.
26
27 Q Onto his face?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q And did you see who had hit him?
31 A No, sir, I didn't.
32
33 Q That had been done before you entered the building?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q After you got in the building and entered Room X through Door B
37 and after you had seen the wounded soldiers in the room, did you hold
38 up your hand and then tell them to stop fighting?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q As you held up your hand you directed your attention toward
42 Door C and Door D?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q And you saw several soldiers through Door D while you were holding

989

(MONTGOMERY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

108

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 your hand up?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Who were those soldiers?
5 A I didn't recognize them.
6
7 Q After you went outside, did you see anyone on this side of the
8 building?
9 A I didn't go on that side of the building.
10
11 Q As you went by the tents did you see anyone in the vicinity of
12 the tents?
13 A There seemed to be some out in front-- no, that was before
14 I went in the building the first time-- when I went out the first time
15 Robert Mathis went between the tents.
16
17 Q When you met Robert between the tents, what was he doing?
18 A Well, I don't know if he came out of the latrine, I didn't see
19 which way he came from.
20
21 Q Before you went in the building you testified you saw a bunch of
22 men around the tents?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Who were those persons?
26 A I don't know that, it was dark.
27
28 Q Didn't you hear any of them talking?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q You saw them with clubs?
32 A Yes, sir, they did have clubs.
33
34 Q But you can't recognize any of them?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Do you have anything else you would like to add?
38 A No, sir.
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

990

(MONTGOMERY) (END)

109

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Further testimony of Pvt. John Lee Hamilton,
2 taken at Seattle, Washington on 26 September 1944
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5
6 The witness was reminded he was still under oath and of
7 his rights as a witness under the 24th Article of War.
8
9

10 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, did you lose your dogtags
11 during the fight?

12 A Yes, sir.

13
14 Q Did you ever find it?

15 A No, sir.

16
17 Q Do you know where it went?

18 A No, sir, I dropped it in the orderly room.
19

20 Q In the Italian orderly room?

21 A Yes, sir.
22

23 Q Did you have any fight with anyone in the Italian orderly
24 room?

25 A No, sir.
26

27 Q How do you account for you losing your dogtag?

28 A I had it on my dog chain and it kept coming off, even when I
29 slept, of course, I could find my dogtag in bed.
30

31 Q Weren't you afraid of losing your dogtags and didn't you make
32 any provisions for their security?

33 A No, sir, I never gave it any thought.
34

35 Q You knew you had to wear your dogtags all the time?

36 A Yes, sir.
37

38 Q And you knew you were getting ready to go overseas?

39 A Yes, sir.
40

41 Q And you didn't make any effort to fasten them on securely?

42 A I figured it would come off in bed.
43

44 Q How did you have them fastened on your neck, on a chain?

45 A Yes, sir, this is the chain and I took them off because they would

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

991

(HAMILTON)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 never stay on.

2
3 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER) Let the record show the chain the witness
4 testifies his dogtags were fastened onto was the normal silver coated
5 chain used by soldiers for the purpose of securing dogtags to the
6 individual.)

7
8 Q Which one of your dogtags did you lose, the upper one or the
9 lower one?

10 A I don't know which one it was, because when I got up the
11 next morning one of the dogtags was in the bed.

12
13 Q And then you knew you had lost one but you didn't know where
14 you had lost it?

15 A No, sir, I didn't know where I lost it.

16
17 Q Did they later tell you where it was found, if it was ever found?

18 A When I came up here they told me they found it down there.

19
20 Q Did they say where they found it?

21 A No, sir.

22
23 Q Do you know whether you lost it in Room X or Room Z?

24 A No, sir, I don't know.

25
26 Q Or if they found it in Room Y?

27 A I don't know. I can't explain how it got in there, I never
28 have been in that room, I never did go in here.

29
30 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 weren't you in Room Y?

31 A No, sir, these are the only two rooms I went in, those two
32 rooms there.

33
34 Q You didn't go in Room Y?

35 A No, sir.

36
37 Q And if your Dogtag was found in Room Y, someone carried it in
38 there?

39 A I wouldn't say anyone carried it in there, but I don't know
40 how it got in there.

41
42 Q If you didn't go in that room how do you account for the fact
43 it got in there?

44 A I can't explain that, I don't know how it got in there.

45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

002

(HAMILTON)

111

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q What else did you have on you that night besides your dogtag that
2 you lost?
3 A I never misplaced anything.
4
5 Q Didn't you own a knife?
6 A Yes, sir, I had a knife.
7
8 Q What did you do with that knife?
9 A The knife was given to the sergeant.
10
11 Q The night of the fight you had your knife?
12 A No, sir, the night of the fight I didn't have the knife.
13
14 Q Where was it?
15 A The platoon sergeant had it.
16
17 Q What was he doing with it?
18 A I had given it to him two or three days before the fight.
19
20 Q Why did you give it to your platoon sergeant?
21 A Because our company commander didn't want us toting them
22 around.
23
24 Q Did all the boys turn their knives in at that time?
25 A I don't know if all of them did.
26
27 Q Isn't it a fact it was a day or two or the next day after the
28 fight that the knives were picked up by the company commander?
29 A Yes, sir, they picked them up the day after the fight.
30
31 Q All right. On the night of the fight you had your knife?
32 A No, sir, I didn't.
33
34 Q Why did you turn it into the sergeant, you hadn't been ordered
35 to turn them into the sergeant.
36 A I think it was-- let's see-- what sergeant was it, the sergeant
37 told us the lieutenant didn't want us to keep those knives with us.
38
39 Q What sergeant told you that?
40 A It was--
41
42 Q Sergeant Hurks?
43 A No, sir, it wasn't Hurks.
44
45 Q Was it Sergeant Cabral?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(HAMILTON)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A No, sir, I think it was-- let me see what sergeant it was--
2 I don't know exactly what sergeant it was, anyhow, I had it taken later
3 that day. I had been cleaning out my stuff and I put it in my bag
4 and I had been cleaning out my bag so I took it and put it in my pocket
5 and I went to the show with it and then I was standing on the outside
6 and I pulled out my knife, I was feeling for my cigarettes and I pulled
7 out the knife to get my cigarettes or get some matches and there was
8 one of the boys that had a knife there, that owned a knife like that
9 and another fellow said I better turn it in, they want us to turn in all
10 knives so we won't be toting them.
- 11 Q Did you turn your knife in at the theater?
12 A No, sir, I kept it until the day after, the same day after we
13 marched to the theater.
14
- 15 Q You were at the theater at night time, weren't you?
16 A At night time?
17
- 18 Q Yes, it was during the night that you went to the theater?
19 A No, sir, it was a show they gave the boys, a regular show for
20 boys going overseas.
21
- 22 Q Then you went back to your barracks?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
- 25 Q After the show?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
- 28 Q And after you got back to your barracks you kept your knife
29 another night?
30 A No, sir, I turned it into the sergeant.
31
- 32 Q Do you know to whom you turned your knife in?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
- 35 Q What is his name?
36 A Sergeant Martin.
37
- 38 Q Sergeant Martin?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
- 41 Q Are you sure that is the man you turned it into?
42 A Yes, sir, I gave it to Sergeant Martin.
43
- 44 Q Will Sergeant Martin testify he took your knife from you the day
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(HAMILTON.)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 you went to the show?

2 A Yes, sir, if he don't testify to it he will be telling a lie.

3 Q When did you next see your knife after you turned it into
4 Sergeant Martin?

5 A Let me think-- it was the day after the fight when the sergeant
6 asked us to turn in our knives-- I think that morning, I think it was the
7 morning we had been somewhere, the company had been somewhere and came
8 back and the sergeant gave me my knife and I stuck it in my bag.

9
10 Q Did you examine it at all?

11 A Well, I just took it and cleaned it and put it in my bag.

12
13 Q Was there anything unusual about your knife when you put it in
14 your bag that you noted?

15 A Well, when I gave it to him I had a little small string tied on
16 that point there.

17
18 Q There wasn't anything unusual about your knife when you received
19 it back?

20 A Not that I noted.

21
22 Q Is that your knife?

23 A Yes, sir, that is my knife.

24
25 Q Did you have this string tied on it when you turned it into the
26 sergeant?

27 A No, sir.

28
29 Q Where did you have the string tied onto it when you turned it into
30 the sergeant?

31 A A little small string tied around here.

32
33 Q Around the sheath of the knife or around the handle?

34 A This part here, around here.

35
36 Q Was this string on it again when you got it back?

37 A Well, I seen the string on it.

38
39 Q What explanation do you have to refute the fact that when your
40 knife was tested it showed blood stains?

41 A Well, all I can say is if it had blood on it someone else got
42 if from the sergeant or he used it himself.

43
44 Q Did you see the sergeant down there that night?
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(HAMILTON)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A No, sir, I never saw the sergeant at all that night.
2
3 Q Did you see anyone that had your knife down there that night?
4 A No, sir, I never did see anyone with the knife.
5
6 Q This knife which I now hand you is hour knife, isn't it?
7 A Yes, sir, it is my knife.
8
9 Q This is the knife which you turned over to Sergeant Martin the
10 day before the fight?
11 A Yes, sir, two days before the fight.
12
13 Q And it was returned to you the day after the fight by Sergeant
14 Martin?
15 A Yes, sir, of course, he didn't give it to me, he told me the knife
16 was in on the desk and to go in and pick it up, he didn't bring it up
17 to me.
18
19 Q He said the knife was on the desk and for you to go get it?
20 A Yes, sir. He walked out of his room and I was standing there
21 and he said, "John, go get your knife there," and I walked in and got
22 it and I just took it and cleaned it up a little.
23
24 Q You never took it out of the sheath at all?
25 A No, sir.
26
27 Q You didn't take it out at all the day before you turned it over
28 or the day after the riot?
29 A No, sir, I never did take it out.
30
31 Q When was the last time it was taken from you?
32 A The last time it was taken from me?
33
34 Q Yes.
35 A The last time he took it from me, I turned the knife into the
36 sergeant. That is the only time I turned it in, that day.
37
38 Q My question was when was the last time the knife was taken from
39 you?
40 A The last time somebody had it out?
41
42 Q After the fight and after you had received your knife from
43 Sergeant Martin, when was the last time it was taken from you?
44 A The same day, that same morning.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

115

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q The morning of the 15th of August this knife you have identified
2 as being your knife was taken from you; is that right?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q By whom?

5 A It was taken by Sergeant Aubry, he come and took all of them, the
6 first sergeant.
7

8 Q Why did he say he wanted that knife from you on the 15th?

9 A Why did he say he wanted that knife?
10

11 Q Yes.

12 A That is when the Lieutenant came around and told us to turn in our
13 knives.
14

15 Q That is the only time you got official orders to turn in your
16 knife?
17

18 A Yes, sir, that was the only time.
19

20 Q Is that your dogtag?

21 A Yes, sir, that is my dogtag.
22

23 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Let the record show the dogtag bearing
24 the name John Lee Hamilton, 38547943, T-44, o-P was shown to the witness
25 and he identified it as being his dogtag.)
26

27 Q You lost this dogtag on the night of August 14th, 1944?

28 A Yes, sir.
29

30 Q In the Italian orderly room?

31 A Well, I imagine that is where it was lost.
32

33 Q Why?

34 A I had been down there.
35

36 Q You had been fighting while you had been down there too, hadn't
37 you?

38 A No, sir, I never did fight when I was down there, I never did.
39

40 Q And you took your knife and stabbed one American soldier?

41 A No, sir, I had no knife while I was down there.
42

43 Q And that is when the American soldier grabbed ahold of your
44 chain and jerked the dogtag loose, wasn't it?

45 A No, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(HAMILTON)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1
- 2
- 3
- 4
- 5
- 6
- 7
- 8
- 9
- 10
- 11
- 12
- 13
- 14
- 15
- 16
- 17
- 18
- 19
- 20
- 21
- 22
- 23
- 24
- 25
- 26
- 27
- 28
- 29
- 30
- 31
- 32
- 33
- 34
- 35
- 36
- 37
- 38
- 39
- 40
- 41
- 42
- 43
- 44
- 45

Q You remember someone grabbing the chain around your neck, don't you?

A No, sir, nobody ever grabbed me around the neck.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

117

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Testimony of Private Robert Mathis, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 27 September 1944 by Lieut.
3 Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6
7

8
9 Q State your name, serial number, and organization.

10 A Private Robert Mathis, 34642433, 651st Port Company, Fort
11 Lawton, Washington.
12

13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A I don't get that so well.
16

17 (24th Article of War read and explained to the witness)
18

19 Q Do you understand your rights now?

20 A Yes, sir.
21

22 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, were you out at Fort Lawton?

23 A Yes, sir, I was restricted to the area, I can't go in here.
24

25 Q You were confined to the post that night?

26 A Yes, sir.
27

28 Q And around about 9:30 you went up and met your girl friend?

29 A Yes, sir.
30

31 Q Did she come out from here?

32 A Yes, sir.
33

34 Q You went up and met her around about 9:30?

35 A Yes, sir, she came down here, I was with another soldier and he
36 came down and got me and said she was looking for me.
37

38 Q What is your girl friend's name?

39 A Gladys Patrick.
40

41 Q After you met her did you take her to the mess hall of this
42 outfit, the 651st?

43 A I don't know, that was a new company mess hall.
44

45 Q The 700 Area mess hall?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(MATHIS)

999

118

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A I don't know which one.
2
3 Q It was close to the PX?
4 A Yes, sir, that is it.
5
6 Q How long did you stay in the mess hall?
7 A We stayed there--- let me see--
8
9 Q Until about ten minutes to eleven?
10 A I guess it was about right around in that time.
11
12 Q While you were in the mess hall, Building 700, there was a guitar
13 playing, wasn't there?
14 A Yes, sir, that is right.
15
16 Q Who was playing the guitar?
17 A I don't know his name, I don't know the boy.
18
19 Q You all had beer there?
20 A A case of beer.
21
22 Q Who brought the beer in the mess hall?
23 A The first sergeant of our company.
24
25 Q That big first sergeant?
26 A The big fat guy.
27
28 Q Is his name Sergeant Tanner?
29 A I know him, I don't know his name.
30
31 Q Did you see Sergeant Bennett there?
32 A I don't know him if I was to see him.
33
34 Q And you had a little dance in the mess hall?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q How many were in the mess hall at that time?
38 A There was five girls and six boys when I first went in and later
39 comes a bunch of men, boys.
40
41 Q They came in to listen to the music?
42 A They came in to drink our beer.
43
44 Q You only had one case, however?
45 A That is all.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

119

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q After you had drunk the beer in there and continued to dance
2 awhile, who did you see come in the mess hall you knew?
3 A One boy, that is Thomas Battle, his wife was looking for him.
4
5 Q Thomas Battle?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q His wife was in the mess hall then?
9 A Yes, sir, his wife was looking for him and I told him to come
10 with me.
11
12 Q You found Thomas?
13 A He came later, I didn't know where to find him. He came in
14 and told me he had some equipment he had to get, he had his equipment
15 someplace.
16
17 Q After the dance was over about ten minutes to eleven, you took
18 the girls home?
19 A Just to the bus stop.
20
21 Q You took them to the bus stop on Utah Avenue by the guard house?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q On the post?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q After you had taken the girls up to the bus stop you and Battle
28 came back down to the area?
29 A Yes, sir. Me and another guy walked up with those other girls.
30
31 Q And you got back to the area about the time this thing started?
32 A When I got back down there we seen a bunch of guys grouped up
33 down there.
34
35 Q When you came back there you saw the fellows grouped up close
36 to the mess hall?
37 A Yes, sir, all around the mess hall.
38
39 Q What were they doing when you and Battle first came up there?
40 A Then I heard sticks busting and a big lot of noise in that
41 group that was standing around there.
42
43 Q The fact is that they were breaking down the fence in front of
44 the mess hall, were they not?
45 A I can't tell you.

CONFIDENTIAL

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Didn't you see them knocking the fence down?
2 A No, sir.
- 3 Q You heard sticks breaking?
4 A Yes, sir?
- 5 Q When you got there the fence had been broken down?
6 A I didn't even go down.
- 7 Q I mean around Building 700.
8 A That is the mess hall?
- 9 Q Yes, didn't you go back that way?
10 A I went back, I didn't have anything further--
- 11 Q You heard sticks breaking, didn't you?
12 A Yes, sir.
- 13 Q And you heard talking?
14 A That is right.
- 15 Q Did you hear any voices you recognized?
16 A No, sir there were so many voices I couldn't tell one from
17 another.
- 18 Q Was the talking pretty loud?
19 A Yes, sir.
- 20 Q Were they saying, "Let's go down and beat up those Italians"?
21 A I didn't hear them saying that, they was down there.
- 22 Q The fight was going on in the Italian Area at the same time you
23 heard the sticks broken up around Building 700?
24 A Yes, sir.
- 25 Q How did you know the fight was going on in the Italian Area?
26 A I looked down.
- 27 Q Could you hear them throwing rocks against the barracks?
28 A Yes, sir.
- 29 Q Could you hear the glass being broken?
30 A I don't know that I heard glass being broken, I heard rocks
31 hitting against the building.
- 32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

2121

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Could you hear screaming down in the Italian Area?
2 A I heard kind of hollering like.
3
4 Q What did you hear?
5 A I heard cussing.
6
7 Q Did you hear people chopping on the buildings with an ax?
8 A No, sir, I didn't hear that.
9
10 Q After you heard the noise going on in the Italian Area, what
11 did you do?
12 A Stood on the outside for awhile.
13
14 Q Outside of what building?
15 A My barracks.
16
17 Q What is the number of your barracks?
18 A 672 I think it is.
19
20 Q But anyway, you stood on the outside of your barracks and listened
21 to what was going on?
22 A Yes, sir, a bunch of us boys was out there and the first sergeant
23 came there and the first sergeant--
24
25 Q Just answer the question. Did you stand outside of your barracks
26 and listen to what was going on?
27 A Yes, sir, for awhile.
28
29 Q What did you do then?
30 A Before that the first sergeant came out and told us he didn't
31 want us to go down there.
32
33 Q Who was that first sergeant?
34 A Cabral.
35
36 Q When Sergeant Cabral went out and said he didn't want any of
37 you to go down there, what did you do?
38 A We all went in the barracks.
39
40 Q Did he tell you to go in your barracks?
41 A Yes, sir, he told us to go in our barracks if we didn't want to
42 fall out for formation.
43
44 Q When Sergeant Cabral told you to go inside your barracks if you
45 didn't want a formation, you state you went inside?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1033

(MATHIS)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2
- 3 Q Who was inside the building that you recognized?
- 4 A I don't know. There was a guy by the name of Herman Johnson,
- 5 he was in there ironing and there was another guy, I don't know those
- 6 guys.
- 7
- 8 Q When you were on the outside of the building, didn't you see
- 9 a bunch of the members of your company running in the direction of the
- 10 mess hall?
- 11 A No, sir, I didn't.
- 12
- 13 Q You didn't see anyone leave the barracks and go toward Building 700?
- 14 A No, sir, no one. The boys was standing out there until the
- 15 sergeant came and run them out.
- 16
- 17 Q As you looked toward Building 700 while you stood outside,
- 18 didn't you see a bunch of people running in the direction of Building 700?
- 19 A No, sir.
- 20
- 21 Q You didn't see anyone running that way?
- 22 A No, sir.
- 23
- 24 Q After you went back to the barracks, what did you do?
- 25 A Finished packing my bag and getting my equipment together and
- 26 everything for the next morning, putting on my leggins and everything.
- 27
- 28 Q Why did you put your leggins on at night?
- 29 A We put them on because sometimes you sleep late and we have to
- 30 be out at 8 o'clock and we put our leggins on and are ready to roll out
- 31 when the whistle blows to get up.
- 32
- 33 Q You put your leggins on so you will be ready to go to work at
- 34 8 o'clock?
- 35 A We get ready to be out here.
- 36
- 37 Q What time do you get up?
- 38 A 5:45.
- 39
- 40 Q Why, Mathis, don't you have time to put your leggins on from
- 41 5:45 to 8 o'clock?
- 42 A That was my idea.
- 43
- 44 Q You were the only one that wore leggins?
- 45 A No, sir, I wasn't the only one.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

123

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Several of you wore leggings while you slept?
2 A Yes, sir, lots of them.
- 3
4 Q That particular night several of you wore leggings?
5 A Yes, sir.
- 6
7 Q After you put on your leggings, what did you do?
8 A Just putting on equipment, rolling my pack and just getting
9 everything ready, my clothing and things that you couldn't do before
10 because each time the whistle would blow and you would have to fall
11 out.
- 12
13 Q Why was the whistle being blown on the night of August 14th?
14 A It wasn't at night, it was the next day.
- 15
16 Q That night, the question I asked was what were you doing that
17 night after you put your leggings on?
18 A I was checking it after I got my leggings on and got everything
19 ready and I went to bed.
- 20
21 Q And went to sleep?
22 A Sure.
- 23
24 Q After you had gone to bed and while you were in the barracks,
25 what woke you up?
26 A I wouldn't say, the next thing I heard was jeeps and cars.
- 27
28 Q Did the jeeps pass in the vicinity of the barracks going down
29 there?
30 A I seen a couple of them that came by from that way.
- 31
32 Q Who was in the jeeps you saw?
33 A I don't know.
- 34
35 Q MP's?
36 A I guess it was.
- 37
38 Q Did you see the MP's in there?
39 A I didn't see them.
- 40
41 Q They came into this area and passed your building and went into
42 the Italian Area?
43 A They was coming out from the area.
- 44
45 Q Did you see them go into the area?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(MATHIS)

124

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A No, sir.
- 2 Q The first time you saw the jeeps was when they were coming out?
- 3 A I didn't see that. I was in bed and they came. I didn't know
- 4 which way they were going.
- 5
- 6 Q How did you know they were jeeps if you didn't see them?
- 7 A I know a jeep, the sound of a jeep from an automobile.
- 8
- 9 Q Just a jeep came out of that area?
- 10 A I saw it come back.
- 11
- 12 Q I thought you said you didn't see them?
- 13 A I heard it.
- 14
- 15 Q I thought you said you saw them.
- 16 A I heard them.
- 17
- 18 Q But you know only jeeps came up and down that road?
- 19 A That is all I heard, jeeps.
- 20
- 21 Q Did you hear any ambulances?
- 22 A I don't know, I guess all I heard was jeeps, they might have
- 23 been ambulances. We heard there had been ambulances down there the next
- 24 morning.
- 25
- 26 Q How did you know?
- 27 A I said I guess, I didn't know it.
- 28
- 29 Q What are you talking about now? You didn't know what was going
- 30 on in that area?
- 31 A I know the sound of a jeep when it came by the barracks because
- 32 I was sleeping about the third bed from the door.
- 33
- 34 Q You state definitely you couldn't hear the ambulance or several
- 35 ambulances?
- 36 A I didn't hear the ambulance.
- 37
- 38 Q You just heard jeeps?
- 39 A Yes, sir.
- 40
- 41 Q You didn't hear them go in the area?
- 42 A I heard cars going down in the area there.
- 43
- 44 Q Did you hear them going in the area?
- 45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

100

(MATHIS)

124 A

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A From the other road, the jeeps come down that way, cars, or
2 something, I don't know what they were or whether they come in the
3 area.

4
5 Q I want to get your testimony straight. You testified you could
6 hear the sound of a jeep?

7 A Yes, sir, they wasn't far from me. This road comes in back of
8 here and I was sleeping not far from there.

9
10 Q You have testified that you heard something going in the area
11 but you couldn't tell whether it was a jeep or not?

12 A That is right.

13
14 Q But then of course you state definitely you didn't hear the
15 jeep going into the area?

16 A I didn't know which direction it was going in the Italian
17 Area, it was going on by.

18
19 Q But you heard the jeep passing going toward the area?

20 A Yes, sir.

21
22 Q Several of them?

23 A Yes, sir, because that road goes by the area, leads that way.

24
25 Q Now, after this fight had been going on and after you had stood
26 outside and listened to it going on in the Italian Area and after you had
27 gone into your barracks, did you see any member of your company or your
28 barracks come back into the area?

29 A No, sir, because all the boys in my barracks was there.

30
31 Q Everybody in your barracks was there?

32 A All the boys, I looked at the bunks, but I wasn't paying any
33 attention, but I can remember.

34
35 Q But you didn't pay much attention to the beds there in your
36 barracks when you went back there to see if everybody was present?

37 A No, sir, I didn't think about checking up on the boys or anything
38 like that.

39
40 Q Why do you say everybody was present.

41 A Everybody I know their faces, everybody was there.

42
43 Q You just went around after you were in the barracks and looked
44 at every bed to see that the men you knew were there?

45 A No, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

117

(MATHIS)

125

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Why do you say everybody you knew were in the barracks?
2 A Well, they was.
3
4 Q Did you check?
5 A Because I was standing by the heater and a guy was ironing clothes
6 and there weren't but four in the barracks I know.
7
8 Q You didn't see anyone who weren't members of the company to
9 which you belong or the barracks to which you were assigned that came
10 back into the area after the fight was over?
11 A No, sir, I didn't.
12
13 Q Did you hear any conversation any of them had after the fight
14 was over concerning their part in it?
15 A No, sir.
16
17 Q Have you since that day, August 14th, 1944, heard any members
18 of your company or the 650th tell what part they played in the fight?
19 A No, sir, all I heard them talking about is they got them in the
20 stockade for nothing.
21
22 Q You didn't hear anybody say they were down there?
23 A Only two boys said they were down there.
24
25 Q Who was that?
26 A Roy Montgomery and Slick.
27
28 Q Curry?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Both Montgomery and Curry say they were down there?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q What did they say?
35 A He said he hit--
36
37 Q Who said that?
38 A One of the boys.
39
40 Q Which one?
41 A Slick. He told me he couldn't catch him or he would hit him.
42
43 Q He couldn't catch the fellow?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(MATHIS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did he say he hit him or what he hit him with?
2 A No, sir, he didn't say.
3
4 Q Did he say he had hit him and the second time he tried to
5 hit him--
6 A Yes, sir--
7
8 Q -- he couldn't catch him?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q What did Montgomery say he did?
12 A He didn't say what he did, he just said he was down where the
13 fighting was.
14
15 Q Now, there were other fellows down there that hit fellows.
16 A I don't doubt it.
17
18 Q I mean there are others that you heard say they were there
19 besides Montgomery and Curry.
20 A No, sir, there weren't anyone but those two boys said they was
21 there.
22
23 Q Of all those boys in the guard house they are the only two
24 boys that say they were there?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q Who said they hanged the Italian?
28 A Weren't nobody said that.
29
30 Q No one told you about the hanging party?
31 A No, sir, those boys wouldn't do nothing like that.
32
33 Q That is right, they are not going to tell you.
34 A Nobody wouldn't confess that.
35
36 Q The boys that were in that hanging party are not going to mention
37 that?
38 A I don't know, they might.
39
40 Q They are not going to mention it to you?
41 A I don't guess they would.
42
43 Q Had you been there possibly they would?
44 A Possibly they would.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(MATHIS)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Did you see Luther Larkin that night?
2 A I don't know Luther Larkin.
3
4 Q Johnnie Simmons, do you know him?
5 A Johnnie Simmons?
6
7 Q Yes, sir.
8 A Johnnie Simmons, I don't know.
9
10 Q Who were the four members in your barracks you knew?
11 A Thomas Battle, Herman Johnson, Lester Foshee, and the other
12 boy, he is gone.
13
14 Q After you and Thomas Battle took the girls back up to the
15 bus, did you return to your barracks together?
16 A Yes, sir, we came back together.
17
18 Q Did you stay together that night?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q Thomas lives in the same barracks and you saw Thomas all during
22 the fight?
23 A Yes, sir, we were right by each other, standing looking down
24 that way.
25
26 Q Did you and Thomas discuss the fight as it was happening?
27 A No, sir, there wasn't nothing, we looked and the boys were
28 really tearing up things down there.
29
30 Q Did anyone in your barracks want to go down there and see what
31 was going on?
32 A Yes, sir, that is when the first sergeant came and someone
33 wanted to go down and see what was going on.
34
35 Q Who was that?
36 A2 I don't know who that was.
37
38 Q You stayed with them and started out?
39 A I didn't.
40
41 Q Who started out?
42 A One of the guys.
43
44 Q Do you know who started to go down there?
45 A I wouldn't know him unless I see his face. That is when the first

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(MATHIS)

128

CONFIDENTIAL

1 call was.

2
3 Q Who were the boys you talked to when you were getting ready
4 to go to bed?

5 A I didn't definitely talk to anybody.

6
7 Q Didn't you talk to anyone, Jones, or Lester Fooshee or
8 Charles Reeves?

9 A Charlie Reeves, yes, sir.

10
11 Q Did you talk to others there?

12 A I talked to Charlie Reeves when he was putting on his clothes,
13 his OD's.

14
15 Q Was he getting ready to go to the area?

16 A He didn't put on his clothes to go down there. He was putting
17 on his OD's when I saw him.

18
19 Q Where was he going?

20 A To town I guess.

21
22 Q It was 11 o'clock then?

23 A Sir, it wasn't that time when I seen him.

24
25 Q You testified before Major Manchester when you went to bed, which
26 is now being placed as during the fight, you talked to Reeves. Now, you
27 say that it was previous to that time that you saw Reeves.

28 A I told them before it was about dark when I saw him putting on
29 his clothes.

30
31 Q Then you didn't see Reeves when he was getting ready to go to
32 bed?

33 A No, sir, Reeves was gone then.

34
35 Q On a previous examination which he made, he asked you the following
36 question and you made the following answer. Question: Do you know the
37 name of any of the boys you talked to while getting ready to go to bed?

38 Answer: There was George Johnson, Lester Reish and Charile Reeves.

39 A No, sir, I didn't tell him that, I saw Charlie Reeves when he
40 was going to town, they got it wrong there.

41
42 Q Didn't you want to go to the area where the fight was going on?

43 A No, sir, I didn't want to go down there. I had no business down
44 there.

45

CONFIDENTIAL

(MATHIS)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q You had no business down there?
2 A That is right.
3
4 Q Did Battle want to go down there?
5 A No, sir, he didn't want to go to the fight.
6
7 Q Neither you or Battle wanted to go and you didn't go?
8 A That is right.
9
10 Q You testified that Curry told you he hit an Italian once and when
11 he tried to hit him again the fellow ran?
12 A That is right.
13
14 Q Had you known Curry before this date?
15 A He was shipped in from Camp George Jordan.
16
17 Q Is Curry a good friend of yours?
18 A Yes, sir, he is a pretty good friend, I seen him once in awhile
19 but I didn't know his name until he came over here. I have been seeing
20 him all the time.
21
22 Q On the night of August 14th, did you see an ax?
23 A No, sir, I didn't see an ax.
24
25 Q You didn't have an ax with you?
26 A With me?
27
28 Q Yes.
29 A No, sir, I didn't have an ax.
30
31 Q Didn't you have an ax with you that night?
32 A I didn't have an ax in my pack.
33
34 Q Didn't you have an ax in your pack?
35 A No, sir, I had a shovel in my pack.
36
37 Q Did you have an ax at any time during that night?
38 A No, sir, I didn't, I had no ax.
39
40 Q As you stood up there near your barracks, could you see the light
41 in the Italian orderly room?
42 A I don't think I seen the light.
43
44 Q Couldn't you see the light in the orderly room building from where
45 you stood?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A No, sir, I could see as far as the mess hall and I could
2 see some parts of the area, but I didn't see the orderly room from the
3 other place.
4
- 5 Q You couldn't see the orderly room?
6 A No, sir, I couldn't see the orderly room and no light shining
7 from the orderly room.
8
- 9 Q Did you ever see that ax before?
10 A Yes, sir, before when I came up here.
11
- 12 Q That is the first time you had seen it when you came up here and
13 testified before Major Manchester?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
- 16 Q How many licks would you have to take with that ax to knock
17 a door down?
18 A I don't know, I haven't tried it.
19
- 20 Q Are you sure you haven't?
21 A No, sir.
22
- 23 Q Do you have any witnesses that will testify that you did not
24 knock that door down that night?
25 A The guy that was with me that night, Thomas Battle.
26
- 27 Q Who else?
28 A Herman Johnson.
29
- 30 Q Where is Herman, is he out there now?
31 A No, sir, he is out at the stockade.
32
- 33 Q Who else?
34 A George L. Johnson.
35
- 36 Q Is he here?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
- 39 Q Who else?
40 A Those three guys are the only persons I know, we was laying there,
41 each of them, because the other guys was in bed.
42
- 43 Q Who was in bed?
44 A George Johnson.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(MATHIS)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Q But he saw you in the building?

A Yes, sir.

Q They will testify you were not in the Italian Area, Herman Johnson and Battle was with you while you were standing outside the building and went back with you and saw you go to bed?

A Herman Johnson was ironing.

Q And Thomas Battle was with you all this time?

A Yes, sir, that is right.

Q Do you have anything else you would like to add to your testimony?

A No, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1014

(MATHIS) (END)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Further testimony of Private Roy Daymond, taken
2 at Seattle, Washington on 27 September 1944 by Lieut.
3 Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5
6 The witness was reminded he was still under oath and of
7 his rights as a witness under the 24th Article of War.
8
9

10
11 Q Do you know Robert Mathis?

12 A That is the one I seen.

13
14 Q That just went out?

15 A Yes, sir.

16
17 Q Where did you see him on the night of August 14th, 1944?

18 A I haven't saw him, that is the first time I saw him.
19

20 Q You didn't see him on the night of August 14th, 1944 in the
21 Italian Area?

22 A No, sir.
23

24 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 when you saw Larkins run
25 up to Barracks 719 to get a whistle, did you later hear Larkin blow
26 that whistle?

27 A No, sir, I didn't.
28

29 Q Didn't you hear the whistle being blown?

30 A Yes, sir.
31

32 Q And after you heard the whistle being blown you saw a group of
33 six or eight men moving toward the Italian Area?

34 A I did.
35

36 Q In this first group that moved up there, you have identified
37 Elva Shelton as a member of the first group?

38 A Yes, sir.
39

40 Q And did you see what Elva had in his hand?

41 A I didn't see what it was, I didn't see nothing, but it looked
42 like a little old stick in his hand, I don't know how large a stick
43 it was.
44

45 Q You saw Elva had a stick in his hand and went down to the Italian

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1015

(DAYMOND)

133

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Area?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q After going behind Building 700, you heard that group of six
5 or eight men start throwing stones against Building 708?
6 A I don't know what building that is.
7
8 Q That is the first Italian barracks?
9 A I guess so.
10
11 Q You heard that?
12 A I heard them throwing against a building, I don't know what
13 building.
14
15 Q But it was the individuals who were throwing the stones that went
16 in the first group of six or eight men that went into the Italian Area
17 on the night of August 14th, 1944?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q And among them was Elva Shelton, whom you knew well?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q Who else in that first group did you know?
24 A I couldn't recall their name, I don't know them, it is dark
25 around those barracks there.
26
27 Q You saw them organize around Building 700 and saw them depart
28 from Building 700 and as they departed you recognized Elav Shelton as one
29 of them. Who else was there?
30 A I don't know their names, it was dark down there and you couldn't
31 see under all those trees.
32
33 Q Now, the second group that left from the vicinity of Building
34 700 was composed of how many men?
35 A About nine or something like that.
36
37 Q Nine or ten?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q And among those you saw Luther Larkin?
41 A Yes, sir, he was among them.
42
43 Q Luther was one of the foremost of those first boys to go down there?
44 A Yes, sir, he was willing to go.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1015

(DAYMOND)

134

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Hadn't Luther made a speech to the company before the group
2 left?
3 A He said, "Montgomery got hit by the Italians, let's go down there."
4
5 Q And mob them?
6 A NO, just go down and fight.
7
8 Q Just go down and fight them?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q In the second group besides Luther Larkin, who else went
12 in the second group to the Italian Area?
13 A I noticed William G. Jones.
14
15 Q He was in the second group?
16 A Yes, sir, he was with Luther Larkin.
17
18 Q Who else went down in the second group of nine or ten men with
19 Larkin and William G. Jones?
20 A I don't know, I don't recall their names there were so many,
21 practically all the companies were down there. After Larkin left Building
22 719 he went over in this little barracks.
23
24 Q The second group went out with Larkin and Jones and you saw them
25 leave?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q Who else did you see besides Jones and Larkin?
29 A I don't know, practically all the company, when I got ready to
30 leave practically all of them were down there.
31
32 Q Now, in the third group you went?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q And when you got ready to go you got a club?
36 A No, sir, I didn't have a club.
37
38 Q What did you get?
39 A I didn't have nothing.
40
41 Q What did some of the other boys have?
42 A They had rocks and sticks and all those things.
43
44 Q Out of that group, the third group, name all of them that you
45 can.

CONFIDENTIAL

1017

(DAYMOND)

135

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A Name all the boys I saw?
2
3 Q How many did you see in that third group?
4 A I don't know all of them. There was but two of us I know,
5 me and George, we was last.
6
7 Q Addison George? He was in the third group, you and Addison
8 George went to the Italian Area?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q What did Addison carry in his hand?
12 A Nothing.
13
14 Qq Who else went with you two?
15 A No body.
16
17 Q You mean just the two of you went down there?
18 A That is all I saw.
19
20 Q By the time you and Addison George got into the Italian Area
21 nearly the whole company was down there?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q And the first man you recognized after entering the Italian
25 Area other than Addison George and yourself was who?
26 A Robert Grasham and King.
27
28 Q Where did you first see Grasham?
29 A Well, he was in that building, that orderly room.
30
31 Q And when you saw Grasham he and King were talking, were they?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q And King was telling Grasham to stop the fighting?
35 A I imagine so.
36
37 Q And Grasham was arguing with King?
38 A Yes, sir, he was.
39
40 Q And then what did you see Grasham and King do as you stood in
41 the building?
42 A They were still talking.
43
44 Q Then where did you go?
45 A After I left I went around on the side to the door that faces this

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1018

(DAYMOND)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 this side here and that is where I saw Dave Walton and Frank Hughes.
2
3 Q When you saw Walton and Hughes, what were they doing?
4 A They was coming out of the door.
5
6 Q Coming out of Building 713?
7 A Yes, sir.
8
9 Q Did they have clubs in their hands?
10 A A stick and a knife.
11
12 Q One of them had a knife?
13 A That was this boy.
14
15 Q Walton had the club?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q And Frank Hughes had the knife?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q Did you see the knife so that if you saw it again you would be
22 able to recognize it?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q Did you see the handle on the knife?
26 A No, sir, I didn't see nothing but the blade.
27
28 Q He had the knife in his hand?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Was it a long knife?
32 A About that long.
33
34 Q About a 10 inch blade?
35 A I guess so, I don't know how long it was in inches, about that
36 long, one big thick blade.
37
38 Q Was the blade bloody?
39 A I didn't see no blood.
40
41 Q What kind of a club did Walton have?
42 A He had something about like that.
43
44 Q A 2-by-4 or a little bigger?
45 A About as wide as the corner of that door, on the side.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q It would be a 2-by-4?
2 A Something like the legs on this table, it wasn't that thick.
3
4 Q And about as long as the legs on the table?
5 A I wouldn't say that long.
6
7 Q About 3 feet long?
8 A About 2½.
9
10 Q Now, who else did you see in Building 713 as you were in the
11 vicinity of that building?
12 A After I saw Walton and Hughes I came back and that is when the
13 MP's came.
14
15 Q Who else did you see that night that you recognized who had
16 been in the Italian Area?
17 A Those are the only four I saw, Grasham, King, Frank Hughes,
18 and Walton, only four of them.
19
20 Q After you left the vicinity of Building 700, did you see Larkins
21 or Jones in the Italian Area while you were there?
22 A I didn't see either one of them.
23
24 Q Did you hear those individuals after you returned from the Italian
25 Area. tell of their participation in the fight?
26 A After I gets back from the orderly room Jones was in front of me
27 and he didn't say nothing about it.
28
29 Q Did you talk to Jones or Larkin about what they did in the fight?
30 A No, sir.
31
32 Q You haven't discussed it since the time it happened?
33 A No, sir.
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Testimony of Private Johnnie Ceaser, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 27 September 1944 by Lieut.
3 Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

4
5 The witness was sworn.

6
7
8
9 Q State your name, serial number, and organization.

10 A Private Johnnie Ceaser, 36792773, 650th Port Company,
11 Fort Lawton, Washington.

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
13 Article of War?

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q On the night of August 14, 1944 were you present with your
16 company at Fort Lawton?

17 A Yes, sir, I was.

18 Q What was the first warning or the first intimation that you had
19 of the fight that went on that night between the Italians and your company?

20 A The first I heard of it was a fellow came and told-- he said,
21 "Everybody out."

22 Q Everybody outside?

23 A Yes, sir.

24 Q Was that Luther Larkin?

25 A No, sir, that was William G. Jones.

26 Q And he said, "Everybody out"?

27 A He came in and he said, "Everybody out, there is a fight down there,"
28 and I didn't pay it any mind.

29 Q Did he say, "Everybody out"?

30 A He said that they was fighting. He did say who was fighting,
31 he said, "There is a fight."

32 Q After you heard Jones say that you kept rolling your pack, didn't
33 you?

34 A Yes, sir.

35 Q Later you went outside?

36 A No, sir, the whistle blew.

37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45
~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1021

(CEASER)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Had you seen anyone come in the barracks and ask for a whistle
2 previous to that time?
3 A No, sir, I didn't.
4
5 Q Do you know who blew the whistle?
6 A No, sir, I don't.
7
8 Q Which is your barracks?
9 A 668.
10
11 Q You live in 668?
12 A Yes, sir, that is right.
13
14 Q And you were in that barracks when William G. Jones came through
15 and said, everybody out, let's go down and fight the Italians or just go
16 down and fight?
17 A He said, "Everybody out, there is a fight."
18
19 Q Now, did everybody turn out of Barracks 668?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q How many were out?
23 A There didn't nobody go out.
24
25 Q You mean that upon the warning for everybody to turn out, there
26 is a fight, no one left the barracks?
27 A Nobody went out at the present time.
28
29 Q Did Jones then leave the barracks?
30 A Yes, sir, he went out.
31
32 Q Do you know where he went?
33 A No, sir, I don't.
34
35 Q Now, after Jones had left how many men followed him?
36 A Didn't no one follow him that I could see.
37
38 Q Later on how many men left the barracks and went toward the
39 area where the fight was going on?
40 A Sir, after that, shortly after that the whistle blew.
41
42 Q Where was the whistle being blown that you heard?
43 A It was down about 719.
44
45 Q And when the whistle blew everybody turned out?

CONFIDENTIAL

140

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A Everybody didn't go out then.
- 2
- 3 Q Approximately how many went in the direction the whistle was
- 4 blowing?
- 5 A I can't say exactly.
- 6
- 7 Q Half the barracks?
- 8 A No, sir, about 7 or 8 or 9.
- 9
- 10 Q Seven, eight, or nine out of Barracks 668 went down to where
- 11 the whistle was being blown?
- 12 A Yes, sir.
- 13
- 14 Q Can you name those that went down there?
- 15 A I don't know exactly.
- 16
- 17 Q You know some of them.
- 18 A Woodin, Frank Hughes and Wardell Cox.
- 19
- 20 Q Frank Hughes, Wallace Woodin and Wardell Cox left Building 668
- 21 and went directly out when the whistle blew?
- 22 A Yes, sir.
- 23
- 24 Q Did you leave at the same time the others left?
- 25 A Shortly after they did.
- 26
- 27 Q As you went between 668 and 719, did you see other members of
- 28 your company or the other companies that were going toward the area of
- 29 Building 719?
- 30 A I didn't see them because I went straight to where the ambulance
- 31 was.
- 32
- 33 Q Now, after you left Building 668, where did you go?
- 34 A I went to the ambulance, they were all crowded around the
- 35 ambulance.
- 36
- 37 Q Was the ambulance in front of Building 719?
- 38 A Yes, sir.
- 39
- 40 Q When you arrived at the ambulance, what was happening in front of
- 41 719?
- 42 A They were all crowded around and they had Montgomery in the
- 43 ambulance.
- 44
- 45 Q William D.?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1023

(CRASER)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q Is he a member of your company?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q Was the ambulance they were putting Willie in a jeep?
7 A It was an ambulance.
8
9 Q What did they do with him after they put him in the ambulance?
10 A Taken him to the hospital.
11
12 Q You saw the ambulance leave and go to the hospital?
13 A I don't know whether it went to the hospital.
14
15 Q But you saw it leave?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q After the ambulance left, what happened in the area adjacent
19 to Building 719?
20 A They was starting around in front.
21
22 Q Was there a lot of talking?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q And a lot of arguing about going down and cleaning out the
26 Italians?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q What did they say, they were going down and mob the Italians?
30 A No, sir, they were all going down.
31
32 Q What did they say they were going to do?
33 A I don't know, they say, let's go down there.
34
35 Q Who said that?
36 A I don't know.
37
38 Q Was it Luther Larkin?
39 A I don't know who it was.
40
41 Q Was it Roy Daymond?
42 A I don't know who it was.
43
44 Q You don't remember who said that?
45 A No, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

142

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q But some individual said, let's go to the Italian Area?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q What happened then?
5 A They was still arguing on that down there.
6
7 Q Was there a bunch of them already in the Italian Area?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Did you see that first group that left from the vicinity of
11 700 and went down to the Italian Area?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Did you see the second group that went from the vicinity of
15 700 and went down in the Italian Area?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q In the second group, who did you recognize?
19 A No one, because there was about three of us together.
20
21 Q Did you go in the second group?
22 A Yes, sir, between them.
23
24 Q Between the first and second?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q Who were the other two that went with you?
28 A Wardell Cox and myself and some other fellow from the 597th.
29
30 Q The 578th you mean?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q Was he a noncommissioned officer?
34 A Yes, sir, he was.
35
36 Q Was his name Sergeant Jones?
37 A I don't know his name.
38
39 Q Would you know him if you saw him again?
40 A I guess I would.
41
42 Q Was he a T/4?
43 A He had Staff Sergeant's stripes.
44
45 Q Do you know what job he has in the 578th?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1025

(CEASER)

143

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A No, sir, I don't.
2
3 Q What weapons or clubs did you three take with you?
4 A I didn't have anything at all.
5
6 Q What did the others have?
7 A Nothing.
8
9 Q The three of you went together, but there were others in the
10 same group, weren't there?
11 A Yes, sir, there was.
12
13 Q Who were they?
14 A I don't know, there were a lot down there.
15
16 Q I don't mean those, I mean the ones that went up there or started
17 to go up there?
18 A I didn't recognize them.
19
20 Q There were only three of you that went in the second group?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q Now, did you three proceed directly to the Italian Area?
24 A Yes, sir, I stopped about 20 feet from the orderly room while
25 they was talking there.
26
27 Q Twenty feet from Building 713?
28 A I guess so.
29
30 Q After you left the area of Building 700 and before you got to
31 the orderly room, who did you see along the road?
32 A Those were the only ones I recognized.
33
34 Q You didn't see anyone between Building 700 and the orderly room
35 you knew except the two accompanying you?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q What route did you and your companions take from the vicinity
39 of Building 700 to the orderly room?
40 A We went straight down from our barracks 719 up in their area.
41
42 Q Did you follow the road?
43 A Only one road goes down there.
44
45 Q You went from 719 across Virginia Avenue and followed Lawton Road

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1026

(CEASER)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 to a point opposite Building 713?
2 A Yes, sir, I guess so.
3
4 Q When you got to Building 713, who was the first man you saw
5 in the vicinity of that building you recognized?
6 A The first man I recognized?
7
8 Q Yes, sir.
9 A The first man was Grasham.
10
11 Q Where was he when you first saw him inside the Italian Area?
12 A Standing over by the tent.
13
14 Q What was Robert Grasham doing by the tent?
15 A I didn't see he was doing anything.
16
17 Q Did he have a club in his hand?
18 A Yes, sir, he did.
19
20 Q But you didn't see him using the club on anyone?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q Who was the second man you saw?
24 A Richard King.
25
26 Q What was King doing when you saw him?
27 A He was standing by Grasham.
28
29 Q What was he doing as he was standing by Grasham?
30 A Nothing.
31
32 Q Did he have a club in his hand?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Who else did you see, the third man in the area?
36 A Robert Sanders.
37
38 Q What was Robert Sanders doing when you first saw him?
39 A Coming around the side of the tent.
40
41 Q Did he have a club in his hand?
42 A I couldn't recognize, I couldn't see.
43
44 Q Did he have a knife in his hand?
45 A I couldn't see.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

145

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Did he have any weapon in his hand?
2 A I couldn't see.
3
4 Q Did you have any conversation with him?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Who was the fourth man you saw?
8 A Richard Barber.
9
10 Q Where was Richard Barber when you saw him inside the Italian
11 Area?
12 A Near Sanders.
13
14 Q Was he talking to Sanders?
15 A They were laughing together.
16
17 Q He and Sanders were talking and laughing?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Did Barber have a club?
21 A I didn't see any.
22
23 Q What were they talking about?
24 A I don't know.
25
26 Q But they were talking and laughing?
27 A Yes, sir
28
29 Q Did you later see either Sanders or Grasham?
30 A No, sir, I didn't.
31
32 Q Who was the fifth man you saw in the Italian Area after you
33 arrived in the vicinity of Building 713?
34 A The fifth man was in front of the orderly room, William G.
35 Jones.
36
37 Q What was William G. Jones doing when you first saw him in
38 front of Building 713?
39 A Throwing in the window.
40
41 Q He was throwing rocks through the window?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q How many rocks did you see William G. Jones throw the window of
45 Building 713 on the night of August 14th?
A Two.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

028

(CEASER)

146

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Did you see him hit anyone?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q But he did break out the glass?
5 A It wasn't there.
6
7 Q He was throwing where it had previously been?
8 A I didn't see anyone.
9
10 Q The rocks which Jones was throwing through the window of Building 713
11 did not break the glass because there wasn't any glass there?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q But he did throw it straight through the window?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q He didn't hit the outside of the building?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q The rocks went through the window into the building?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q But you didn't see them hit anyone at all?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q Could you see anyone in the path of the rocks?
27 A No, sir, I couldn't.
28
29 Q Who was the sixth man you saw in the Italian Area?
30 A About that time a corporal hollered, "I am an American soldier."
31
32 Q That was the corporal that was inside the room?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q And who did you observe him hollering that to?
36 A He was just hollering.
37
38 Q You could hear him or see him?
39 A I could hear him.
40
41 Q You couldn't see him?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q I show you a floor plan of Building 713 and ask you to point out
45 for me the place where the corporal stood and hollered, "I am an American

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1029

(CEASER)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 soldier"?

2 A He was standing in front of Door A.

3
4 Q You could hear the American or someone inside of Room X
5 telling the attacking soldiers he was an American soldier?

6 A Yes, sir.

7
8 Q Could you see to whom the person was talking to?

9 A No, sir.

10
11 Q As you looked through Door A toward Door D, was Door D open or
12 closed?

13 A This is supposed to be the front-- it was open.

14
15 Q Do you know whether it had been chopped down at that point or
16 not?

17 A I don't know, sir.

18
19 Q Did you see anyone chopping on that door?

20 A No, sir.

21
22 Q Who did you see enter the door after you heard this soldier
23 inside Room X say, "I am an American soldier"?

24 A I went in there.

25
26 Q You went in?

27 A Yes, sir.

28
29 Q Before I take you into the room, I want to find out who was
30 the seventh man you saw outside the building as you stood there?

31 A Outside the building?

32
33 Q Yes, as you stood outside.

34 A Dave Walton.

35
36 Q Where did you see Dave Walton?

37 A He was in the room, in the door.

38
39 Q Dave Walton was standing in Door A as you observed him from the
40 outside of that door?

41 A Yes, sir, that is right.

42
43 Q What was Dave doing when you first observed him.

44 A He was pushing the crowd trying to get through.

45

CONFIDENTIAL

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Dave was trying to push the men in the isle between Doors A and D
2 into Room X?
3 A That is right.
4
5 Q And what did Dave have in his hand?
6 A He had a club.
7
8 Q Do you know what kind of a club he carried?
9 A No, sir, I don't, it was a stick.
10
11 Q Did he have a knife in his hand?
12 A I didn't see it.
13
14 Q Now, after you saw Dave, who else did you observe in the isle
15 between Doors A and D.
16 A Wallace Woodin, Dave Walton, and Frank Hughes.
17
18 Q All three of these soldiers whom you have just named were in
19 between Doors A and D as you first observed them?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Were all three of them trying to force their way into Room X
23 through Door D?
24 A There was a bunch of them I couldn't recognize, maybe about
25 fifteen of them.
26
27 Q When you saw Wallace Woodin and Hughes at this point, what weapons
28 did they have in their hands?
29 A Frank Hughes had a club and Wallace Woodin had a club.
30
31 Q Did either one of them have a knife?
32 A I didn't see any, no, sir.
33
34 Q Where did you see Willie Ellis?
35 A Willie arrived when I first came down, he was a pretty good
36 distance from the orderly room, standing looking.
37
38 Q You say Willie was standing looking when you first saw him?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q Did you ever see Willie do anything to the Italians?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q Did you see Willie have a club or a weapon in his hand?
45 A No, sir, I didn't see it if he had one.

CONFIDENTIAL

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Who else did you see standing between Door A and D on the night
2 of August 14th as you made your way through that aisle into Room X?
3 A They're the only two I could recognize.
4
- 5 Q Did you then enter through Door A?
6 A Yes, sir, I did.
7
- 8 Q Did you go into Room X?
9 A Yes, sir, I pushed my way through.
10
- 11 Q As you pushed your way through the crowd between Door A and D,
12 did you recognize any others in there besides those you have already
13 named?
14 A No, sir, I didn't.
15
- 16 Q Were you successful in pushing your way through the crowd that
17 stood in between Doors A and D into Room X?
18 A I was going to try and get this American soldier, which I did.
19
- 20 Q Then you pushed your way through the crowd that stood between
21 Door A and D and entered Room X where the American corporal was who asked
22 for help?
23 A That is right.
24
- 25 Q When you got inside Room X you undoubtedly saw the colored
26 soldiers in the room at that time?
27 A I didn't see them.
28
- 29 Q After you entered Door D, who did you see standing in the door?
30 A In the door?
31
- 32 Q Yes.
33 A There was a crowd and I wasn't paying any attention except to get
34 to the American soldier and he said, "I am an American soldier," and
35 I caught him by the arm and I said, "This is an American soldier,
36 don't hit him."
37
- 38 Q Who was it that hit you on the arm?
39 A David Walton.
40
- 41 Q Where was Dave Walton standing and striking at this American
42 soldier and hitting you? Where was Dave standing when he was making the
43 effort to strike him, the American soldier, you were attempting to
44 remove out of the building?
45 A The door was coming out and he was standing in here, he was

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

150

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 standing inside Room X by Door D.
2
3 Q How many times did David Walton strike at the American as you
4 were trying to get out?
5 A One time.
6
7 Q Did he hit the soldier?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Did he hit you?
11 A Over my left shoulder.
12
13 Q He didn't strike the American soldier?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Who else did you observe as you went through the isle between
17 Door A and D leading the American soldier?
18 A I didn't observe anyone coming out, I know I was trying to keep
19 from getting hurt myself.
20
21 Q While you were inside Room X, did you observe a large number of
22 wounded soldiers, either American or Italians, laying on the floor in that
23 room?
24 A No, sir, there was one Italian in there and he wasn't laying
25 out.
26
27 Q He was standing?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q He was bloody, wasn't he?
31 A He wasn't bloody.
32
33 Q Did you see anyone in Room Y while you were in Room X.
34 A I didn't see them.
35
36 Q Did you see any colored soldiers standing in Room Z while you
37 were in Room X attempting to rescue this American soldier?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q Now, as you led this American soldier out through Door A, did
41 anyone else who stood in the isle between Doors A and D attempt to strike
42 him other than Dave Walton?
43 A No, sir.
44
45 Q Did you have any trouble getting out through the isle in there

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1033

(CEASER)

151

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 by Door A?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Who did you see after leaving Door A?
5 A I didn't recognize anyone when I was going out. I went out
6 next to the last barracks and I released him to another fellow, I think
7 Willie Ellis and he taken him someplace, I released him around this
8 barracks.
9
10 Q You lead this wounded man, whom you said you rescued from Room
11 X and took him through the isle from Door D to A outside the building,
12 then further led him to the vicinity of Barracks 708 and you turned him
13 over to another colored soldier whom you believe to be Willie Ellis?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q What instructions did you give Willie when you turned him
17 over to the American soldier?
18 A I didn't say anything to him, I don't think.
19
20 Q Did you see what Willie did with him?
21 A He went around this barracks.
22
23 Q He went down by Barracks 708 in the direction of your barracks?
24 A Yee, sir, up the hill.
25
26 Q Is that the last time you saw this wounded soldier that night?
27 A The wounded soldier?
28
29 Q Yes, sir, the one you had brought out?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q Where did you go after you released the wounded soldier?
33 A I went back in the area and the first sergeant was out there
34 and he made us go back in the barracks.
35
36 Q Why did you leave the area when the fight was going on and after
37 you had released the American soldier to Ellis in the vicinity of Building
38 708?
39 A It was about over then.
40
41 Q Had the MP's arrived?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q You didn't want to stay there after the MP's arrived?
45 A I didn't mind being there after the MP's arrived, there wasn't

CONFIDENTIAL

1034

(CEASER)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 anybody down there, they were all leaving out.

2
3 Q Who, as you stood in the vicinity of Building 708 did you see
4 leaving the area whom you recognized?

5 A I didn't recognize anyone.

6
7 Q When you left the vicinity of Building 708 and stood by Building
8 700 you didn't recognize any colored soldiers leaving the Italian Area?

9 A No, sir, I didn't.

10
11 Q After leaving Building 713 by the way of Door A, what route did
12 you take up to Building 708?

13 A I left by the way of Door A and went in between the two tents
14 at the east end of Building 709 up to the steps which is east of Building
15 708 where I released the American soldier to Willie Ellis-- who I think
16 was Willie Ellis.

17
18 Q Have you and Willie talked about this fight that night?

19 A No, sir, I haven't.

20
21 Q You and Willie didn't get together and say you would testify
22 to a certain thing on how you rescued this man?

23 A No, sir, I didn't.

24
25 Q Do you know John Lee Hamilton?

26 A Yes, sir.

27
28 Q Where did you see him that night?

29 A Over near the window by Jones.

30
31 Q At the window by Jones?

32 A Yes, sir.

33
34 Q Was he throwing through the window?

35 A At the present time I don't think he was throwing.

36
37 Q John Lee Hamilton was over at the other window?

38 A Yes, sir.

39
40 Q Show me on the exhibit which I hand you and which is a floor
41 plan of Building 713 what window Jones was throwing through when you
42 saw him and which window Hamilton was standing at when you saw him.

43 A Jones was throwing through this window here.

44
45 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Pointing to the window on the south side of

CONFIDENTIAL

(CEASER)

158

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Building 713 which leads into Room R.)
2
3 Q Where did you see Hamilton?
4 A He was standing over here.
5
6 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Witness points to the southeast corner
7 of Building 713.)
8
9 Q What was he doing?
10 A I didn't see him, I didn't recognize him doing anything.
11
12 Q Did he have a club in his hand or any weapon while he was looking
13 through the window?
14 A No, sir, I didn't recognize it.
15
16 Q Did Hamilton assist you in anyway in rescuing the wounded soldier?
17 A No, sir, he didn't.
18
19 Q Do you know James Chandler?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Where was James that night?
23 A I didn't see him.
24
25 Q You didn't see him anywhere?
26 A No, sir, I didn't.
27
28 Q Do you know Robert Mathis?
29 A I don't know him, he is in the 651st I think.
30
31 Q Did you see Robert that night?
32 A No, sir, I just knew him since I have been in the stockade.
33
34 Q Do you know Alvin Clark?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Where did you first see Alvin on the night of the 14th?
38 A He was down here by the bottom of the hill when I first went down
39 and I didn't see him any more.
40
41 Q What do you mean by the bottom of the hill, was he standing
42 in the vicinity of Building 708 or 710?
43 A 710.
44
45 Q What was Alvin doing?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1036

(CEASER)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Going around by the barracks.
2
3 Q Did he have a club in his hand?
4 A I don't remember.
5
6 Q Did he have any rocks?
7 A I didn't see any.
8
9 Q Did you later see him during the evening?
10 A I didn't see him any more.
11
12 Q Did you have any conversation with him when you met him?
13 A No, sir, I didn't.
14
15 Q Do you know Chapman?
16 A I know him since I have been in the guard house.
17
18 Q Did you see him on the night of August 14th down in the Italian
19 Area?
20 A No, sir, I didn't.
21
22 Q Do you know Herman Johnson?
23 A Well, all the fellows in the 651st, I don't know them. I just
24 met them since I have been in the guard house.
25
26 Q Did you see Herman on the night of August 14th in the Italian
27 Area?
28 A No, sir, I don't.
29
30 Q When you saw John Lee Hamilton, was he talking to anyone?
31 A No, sir, he wasn't talking now.
32
33 Q Was anyone standing there with him?
34 A Three or four of them.
35
36 Q You don't recall who they were?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q Do you own a knife?
40 A No, sir, I don't.
41
42 Q You don't own a knife?
43 A No, sir.
44
45 Q Did you have a knife in your possession on the night of August 14th,

CONFIDENTIAL

1037

(CEASER)

155

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 1944?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Had you been issued a knife?
5 A No, sir, only a GI knife.
6
7 Q Do you have it with you?
8 A No, sir, I don't.
9
10 Q I show you a knife, number 337, which is a 6 inch blade and ask
11 you did you ever see that knife before?
12 A No, sir, I didn't see it, but I saw the knife later.
13
14 Q Where did you see it?
15 A Dave Walton had one that resembled it.
16
17 Q During the action on the night of August 14th, Walton had a
18 knife similar to this one?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q Can you tell us whether this is the knife Walton had?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q Did it have a handle similar to this knife?
25 A That is what I am going by, the black handle.
26
27 Q Ceaser, have you ever turned in a knife that belonged to you
28 or anyone else to any company officer or noncommissioned officer?
29 A No, sir, I haven't.
30
31 Q Do you know Lieutenant Kapitz?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q Is he a Lieutenant in your company?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Did Lieutenant Kaptiz take a knife from your possession the day
38 following the riot?
39 A No, sir, he didn't.
40
41 Q If Lieutenant Kaptiz made an affidavit wherein he certified he
42 took this particular knife which I hand you from you the day following
43 the riot, his affidavit is in error; is that right?
44 A Yes, sir, he made an error, I never owned one of them knives.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1038

(CEASER)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033

By AL NARA Date 12/8/83

156

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Q Did he take this knife from you the day following the riot?
A No, sir, he didn't.

Q You never owned this knife or a knife like it?
A No, sir, I never have.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1000

(CEASER) (END)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Testimony of Pvt Thomas Battle, taken at Seattle,
2 Washington on 27 September 1944 by Lieut. Colonel
3 Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7
8
9 Q State your name, organization, and serial number.

10 A Thomas Battle, 34487443, 651st Port Company, Fort Lawton,
11 Washington.
12

13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir.
16

17 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 were you present with your
18 organization at Fort Lawton when the riot occurred between the colored
19 soldiers and Italians?

20 A Yes, sir, I was present after I came back from the service club.
21

22 Q Where was the service club at Fort Lawton in reference to the
23 company area?

24 A Do you know where the chapel is?
25

26 Q Yes.

27 A It is the one across from there.
28

29 Q The big service club?

30 A Yes, sir.
31

32 Q That is down by the hospital?

33 A Yes, sir.
34

35 Q When you left the service club you went back to your company?

36 A Yes, sir.
37

38 Q In what barracks do you sleep?

39 A 672.
40

41 Q When you arrived back at your barracks, was there anything
42 unusual happening in the barracks?

43 A No, sir.
44

45 Q What was the first warning or notice you had of this fight going

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1040

(BATTLE)

158

CONFIDENTIAL

1 on in the Italian Area?

2 A The first I knowed it was going on-- let's see-- myself,
3 Robert Mathis and Leon Wheeley and a couple other guys, I can't think
4 of their names, we were on our way from the bus stop when I first knew
5 about it.

6
7 Q You were coming back from the bus stop to the barracks when you
8 first learned there was a fight going on between the Italians and the
9 colored soldiers?

10 A Yes, sir.

11
12 Q Then what did you do?

13 A We comes here, across the road and walks inside the barracks
14 and pulled off my coat and shirt and puts it on the bed and walks out
15 by the steps and the first sergeant was standing in front of the
16 barracks.

17
18 Q Who is the first sergeant?

19 A Sergeant Cabral.

20
21 Q And who accompanied you as you went from the inside to the outside
22 of the building?

23 A You mean who was with me at that time?

24
25 Q Yes.

26 A Several was behind me, I don't remember who that was.

27
28 Q As you stood outside the building what did you hear or observe?

29 A Well, at that time I came back, the first sergeant said to go
30 back in the barracks, he said, ""If you don't go back I will call a
31 formation and have a roll call and drill up and down the street," and
32 about that time the MP's was taking over, they was trying to get the boys
33 to go back in their barracks?

34
35 Q What MP's was that, Battle?

36 A I don't know exactly what MP's it was, but there was something
37 like a squad.

38
39 Q They had come up in the vicinity of Building 672, had they?

40 A Yes, sir.

41
42 Q And they tried to get the boys back in their barracks?

43 A They were trying to get the boys back in the barracks in this
44 company in back of us.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1041

(BATTLE)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q They went up near this building, they were in the vicinity of
4 Building 719 and 720?
5 A They was down in the Italian Area?
6
7 Q The MP's were?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Now, let go back before the time the MP's tried to get the new
11 company back in their barracks and to get them out of the Italian Area,
12 you state you were in your barracks and that you went outside?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q And you don't know who accompanied you outside the building?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q Where did you see Mathis at this time?
19 A Mathis, he and I together went in the barracks.
20
21 Q And after that you didn't see him any more?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q And as you were standing out by the barracks the first sergeant
25 told you to get back inside or he was going to drill the company?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q Did you see anyone from the first warning of this fight, leave the
29 area of Barracks 672 and go toward where the noise was going on?
30 A No, sir.
31
32 Q Did anyone leave Building 672 and go toward the Italian Area after
33 the fight started?
34 A No, sir. I want to tell the truth. I went to the bus stop and
35 I didn't have a watch to tell the time, but it was about 11:30 or quarter
36 to twelve.
37
38 Q When you left the bus stop?
39 A No, sir, that is when the two MP's stopped us on the road and told
40 us boys it was after time for girls to be on the post, it should be 9 o'clock
41 and it was five minutes until bus time, and the MP says, "Sign this pass,"
42 and in about 10 or 15 minutes the bus came and they got on the bus and I goes
43 back to the area.
44
45 Q It must have been after 12 o'clock when you and Mathis arrived

CONFIDENTIAL

15 160

CONFIDENTIAL

1 back in your area after taking the girls to the bus.
2 A It was.
3
4 Q Now, you had left the area going up to the bus stop about 11:30
5 or 11:45?
6 A It just have been somewhere about that time.
7
8 Q How did you estimate the time?
9 A Well, the guy that was with us, he said, "It is past 11 o'clock,"
10 when we left the one company you called.
11
12 Q The 578th?
13 A The 578th mess hall.
14
15 Q You had been there in the 578th mess hall?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q That is building 700?
19 A I don't know the number.
20
21 Q Then you were in Building 700, the 578th mess hall, until after
22 11 o'clock?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q When you left the mess hall, did you see in the vicinity of that
26 building a large number of individuals gathered there?
27 A There was practically a hundred and some odd in the streets.
28
29 Q What were they doing?
30 A Some were inside the mess hall and some were outside.
31
32 Q What were they doing?
33 A They wasn't doing anything.
34
35 Q Wasn't there a disturbance about Willie Montgomery getting hurt?
36 A I don't know.
37
38 Q Didn't you hear them talking about Willie getting hit?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q And they didn't name the man that got hit or who had hit him?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q Did you talk to any of the persons present in the vicinity of
45 Building 700 as you were leaving and going to the bus stop?
A No, sir, I didn't.

CONFIDENTIAL

1043

(BATTLE)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q When you were upon the steps of Building 672, you heard the
2 fight going on in the Italian Area?

3 A Yes, sir.

4 Q Were glasses being broken?

5 A Yes, sir.

6 Q And rocks being thrown against buildings?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q Were people screaming?

9 A Yes, sir.

10 Q And you were about 75 yards from the area?

11 A I imagine so. I could see a guy chasing through the mess hall.

12 Q You could see a man running through the mess hall?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q Could you see the individual that was being chased through the
15 mess hall?

16 A It was an Italian.

17 Q And he was running through the mess hall?

18 A Yes, sir.

19 Q He was being chased by a colored soldier?

20 A I didn't see anyone chasing him, but I did see them going through
21 there.

22 Q How many did you see running through there?

23 A Two.

24 Q You didn't see any colored soldiers chasing them?

25 A No, sir.

26 Q Could you see the Italians in Building 708 behind the mess hall?

27 A I could see only the corner of it.

28 Q Did that corner have a light on it?

29 A Yes, sir.

30 Q Around that corner, you could see the Italians running?

31 A No, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1044

(BATTLE)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Could you see the colored soldiers chasing them around there?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q And the colored soldiers had clubs chasing them around the
5 corner of that building?
6 A I couldn't say that.
7
8 Q Also from your position you could see one corner of 709?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q At that place there was a light on?
12 A There was.
13
14 Q And you also saw some Italians running around that building?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q And you could see the colored soldiers throwing rocks?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q And using clubs to chase them?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q Did you see anyone using a knife to chase any of them?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q Did you see anyone who had a knife?
27 A No, sir, I didn't.
28
29 Q Also from where you stood you could see the orderly room down
30 there and that is where the big fight was?
31 A That is where they started.
32
33 Q That is where the fight was really going on?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q From your position there what did you see around the orderly room?
37 A From where I was, I saw guys casting rocks against the sides of
38 buildings and I also saw them knocking out the window panes.
39
40 Q And what else, did you see one boy running against the tent with
41 a jeep?
42 A I saw a guy, I don't know who he was, he started the jeep up and
43 ran it into the tent, the one at the right side of the orderly room.
44
45 Q Then what did he do with the jeep after he ran it into the tent?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

163

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A I saw it run up on the tent and I didn't see it any more.
2
3 Q Did he start the jeep and run it against the tent or did he
4 leave it there and then drive around to the other side of the building?
5 A I don't know.
6
7 Q You could see that car sitting there with the white covering on it
8 right where the jeep was being run back and forth?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q Could you see them throwing rocks against that car and
12 breaking the glass out of it?
13 A No, sir, I didn't see them sling any rocks against it.
14
15 Q You saw the tent knocked down, the boards pushed in and the
16 tent fell down?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q You could see the tent drop?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q You could also see the Italians running around that building 713
23 from where you were?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q Could you see any of the Italians to observe about what size
27 they were? Were some of them pretty large boys?
28 A Some of them were larger than I am. I saw one of the guys as
29 he went out of the orderly room.
30
31 Q Here is the front door and here is the side door. Which door
32 did he come out?
33 A He came out of the side where the jeep was.
34
35 Q What happened to him?
36 A He didn't have on anything but shorts.
37
38 Q Where did he go?
39 A Around the side.
40
41 Q Which way?
42 A He came around this corner.
43
44 Q In other words, he ran from Door E on the west side of the building
45 around that corner?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1-46

(BATTLE)

164

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q Do you know where he went after he ran around the corner?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Who was chasing him?
17 A Two guys was chasing him.
18
19 Q Do you know who they were?
20 A No, sir, I really don't.
21
22 Q After he disappeared around the corner of the building, around the
23 west side of the building, you didn't see him any more?
24 A No, sir, I didn't.
25
26 Q Who else did you see running in the area?
27 A I didn't see any more running.
28
29 Q Didn't you see the man that jumped out of this window and ran
30 across here with some fellows chasing him and caught him?
31 A No, sir, I didn't see one jump out of the window.
32
33 Q What other person did you see running?
34 A I didn't see any more running after this guy came out the door.
35
36 Q What else did you see from where you stood in the area?
37 A Well, after I saw that guy come out the door and come around the
38 house then the MP's come down and went in the area.
39
40 Q Had they arrived in cars?
41 A They came up in jeeps.
42
43 Q Where did they park, do you know?
44 A No, sir.
45
46 Q Did they park over here by the buildings?
47 A I did see two park behind the barracks in our company.
48
49 Q They parked up there and got out and walked to the area?
50 A Yes, sir, the rest of them went down the street.
51
52 Q Let us go back back a minute. You say you saw them park and
53 go into the area. Did you see which door they entered first?
54 A No, sir.
55

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1047

(BATTLE)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Didn't they enter that side door here, Door E?
2 A Where they entered that building I don't know.
3
4 Q How many entered the building?
5 A Going down to the area, I didn't see any go in the building.
6
7 Q How many entered the area when you first saw them?
8 A There was three jeeps when I first saw them.
9
10 Q Three jeeps?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q How many were in each jeep, do you know?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Do you know Pinkney, the colored MP that went down in the area?
17 A No, sir, I didn't see a colored MP.
18
19 Q You just saw the white MP's?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Going back to the jeep running against the tent, how many times
23 did that jeep run up against the tent that you observed?
24 A Twice.
25
26 Q Did the jeep knock down the tent the first time or the second time?
27 A The first time or the second time-- I don't know.
28
29 Q Did it knock the boards down?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q Did you see the jeep after it had been run into the tent, did
33 you see it leave the area and drive outside?
34 A I did see the jeep come out of the area.
35
36 Q Which way was it going?
37 A Up the hill in back of the 651st.
38
39 Q That same jeep which drove against the tent?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q Was some colored soldier driving it?
43 A I did see it come out and go up the road.
44
45 Q About how many were in it?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A I don't know.
- 2
- 3 Q You didn't observe how many were in it?
- 4 A No, sir.
- 5
- 6 Q Was anyone hollering or making a loud noise?
- 7 A The only noise I heard-- after that it was quiet, they was
- 8 taking the guys to the ambulance.
- 9
- 10 Q Now, who did you see after the fight was over that you recognized
- 11 and whom you knew was down in the area?
- 12 A Well, I didn't see, to tell the truth, anyone.
- 13
- 14 Q You didn't see anyone you knew that had been down there?
- 15 A I didn't see anyone that I knew that had been there in the
- 16 area.
- 17
- 18 Q Who did you see immediately after the fight that led you to believe
- 19 they were down in the area or who told you they were down in the area or
- 20 about the area?
- 21 A The only thing, they talked to me about being down there after
- 22 we entered the stockade.
- 23
- 24 Q Who talked about it?
- 25 A Montgomery, he said, when he came up here-
- 26
- 27 Q Roy--
- 28 A -- when they started to question him he said he was down there and
- 29 Willie Curry said he was down there.
- 30
- 31 Q Who else?
- 32 A And another guy, I know he was down there because I heard some
- 33 of the other guys say he got struck over the head.
- 34
- 35 Q Who was that?
- 36 A Snow and Clarke.
- 37
- 38 Q Was there anyone else you heard say they were down in the area?
- 39 A No, sir, I didn't hear anyone else.
- 40
- 41 Q You undoubtedly saw some of them down there, you saw them tearing
- 42 the tents down and saw people running against the tents and saw Italians
- 43 running, you saw people you recognized. Give me the names of those.
- 44 A If I did tell those I would be telling a tale. I don't know them,
- 45 I would be telling a falsehood.

CONFIDENTIAL

167

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Did you see Herman Johnson that night?
2 A No, sir, I did not.
3
4 Q You didn't see Herman in the area at all?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Did you see Herman around the barracks where you were?
8 A No, sir. I only seen him-- an officer came to the fence at the
9 time we was in the stockade and he handed dogtags to the commissioned
10 officer and he said they was supposed to be his.
11
12 Q They were supposed to be Herman's?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q And where did they say they had gotten the dogtags?
16 A He didn't say where he got the dogtag.
17
18 Q Do you know the officer who pushed them through the fence?
19 A No, sir, it was an MP.
20
21 Q Herman, however, says he was in the barracks. You didn't see him
22 there that night?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q Did you see him earlier in the afternoon there?
26 A Yes, sir, I saw him all about before I left the area.
27
28 Q Did you see George Johnson?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q George Johnson was around there that day?
32 A Yes, sir, I saw him.. He and I was drilling together.
33
34 Q During the day?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q That night did you see him here in the barracks?
38 A In the barracks.
39
40 Q What was he doing?
41 A He was in bed.
42
43 Q George was in bed?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

150

(BATTLE)

168

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Did you talk to him?
2 A Yes, sir.
- 3
4 Q You definitely state you didn't see Herman Johnson?
5 A No, sir.
- 6
7 Q How about Mathis?
8 A He and I was together.
- 9
10 Q That night you didn't see him?
11 A I can give an account of what Mathis did, he was with me and went
12 to the barracks.
- 13
14 Q After that you didn't see him?
15 A No, sir.
- 16
17 Q That was before the fight when you came back to the barracks?
18 A Yes, sir.
- 19
20 Q In fact, just about the time the fight was starting you came back
21 to the barracks?
22 A When I got back to the barracks it was practically over.
- 23
24 Q Yet you heard screaming and rocks being thrown in the area after
25 you came back to your barracks?
26 A Yes, sir.
- 27
28 Q Now, you state, Battle, that you did not go to the area?
29 A No, sir.
- 30
31 Q You stayed by Barracks 672?
32 A Yes, sir.
- 33
34 Q And you never got away from Barracks 672 while the fighting was
35 going on?
36 A While the fight was going on I left the company and went outside.
- 37
38 Q While the fight was going on you left Barracks 672 and started
39 or stayed around that building?
40 A Yes, sir.
- 41
42 Q And you saw all this stuff going on that you have testified to,
43 I mean the stuff going on in the Italian Area you have testified to?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1051

(BATTLE)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q I want you to think over your story and tell me if there is any
2 part of it you want to change?
3 A No, sir.
4
5 Q You still state you remained in the vicinity of Building 672?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q I want to review your case and want you to follow me closely.
9 Here is Barracks 672?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q From Barracks 672 down to the Italian Area is how far?
13 A I cannot tell how far it is.
14
15 Q It is at least 150 yards, isn't it?
16 A I guess you are right.
17
18 Q And from Barracks 672 to the Italian Area is down a hill, isn't
19 it?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q And between Barracks 672 and the Italian Area is a lot of wooded
23 terrain?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q With a lot of underbrush?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q And if your building is 50 feet higher than these buildings up
30 here you would have to be looking through the tops of trees to see what
31 was going on.
32 A I would have?
33
34 Q Now, what do you say about your story?
35 A If this is where I was I couldn't have seen?
36
37 C It couldn't have been seen from where you were standing.
38 A You got me mixed up.
39
40 Q If you stand in front of 672 and if you were standing on the ground
41 in front of that building you couldn't see what was going on down there.
42 Now, what happens to the story you have told me, it wouldn't be true, would it?
43 A I don't imagine it would.
44
45 Q You told me you stood in front of Building 672 and saw a man
driving a jeep into the tent down behind 709, didn't you?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

170

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A I did.
- 2
- 3 Q Can you explain how from this point you could see behind a building
- 4 when there is a building intervening between where you stood and the
- 5 place you saw the things happen?
- 6 A Yes, sir, I can give the explanation to you clearer if I could
- 7 go out there.
- 8
- 9 Q You would have to go out there?
- 10 A Yes, sir.
- 11
- 12 Q As you stood in the vicinity of 672 you have testified you saw
- 13 the orderly room, which is behind Building 709?
- 14 A Behind Building 709?
- 15
- 16 Q Yes.
- 17 A I did see it.
- 18
- 19 Q That is going to be your story?
- 20 A Yes, sir.
- 21
- 22 Q Now, in view of your story, one of your friends that knows you
- 23 quite well testified as follows: "Question. Did you join the gang going
- 24 down there? Answer. About ten went down. Question. Was that the
- 25 first gang to go down? Answer. No, sir. Question. What did you
- 26 do then? Answer. I passed by Thomas Battle coming back."
- 27 A He didn't pass by me, sir, he must have his people mixed up.
- 28
- 29 Q Do you know Roy Montgomery?
- 30 A I do, sir.
- 31
- 32 Q Roy L. Montgomery when questioned by Major Manchester made this
- 33 reply: "I then went into the Orderly Room from the front and I saw a
- 34 bunch of colored men standing inside. I recognized Wallace from the
- 35 650th and a Corporal or Buck sergeant. Red of same company and Joe
- 36 Trice and Thomas Battle of my company." What about that statement, is
- 37 that true or false?
- 38 A About my being there is false, I never had my foot in that
- 39 place since I have been down there.
- 40
- 41 Q Again, another friend of yours was asked the following question:
- 42 "Question. Now, will you tell me who you heard and what he said about
- 43 the fight which had happened the night before? Answer. Well, Thomas
- 44 Battle, he was talking that morning after the fight, he said he had been
- 45 down there in the fight." Did you make that statement?

CONFIDENTIAL

1-53

(BATTLE)

171

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Now, Battle, you did not stand during the fight in the vicinity
2 of Building 672, but you left that building and went toward the Italian
3 Area?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q Now, as you left Building 672 who accompanied you away from
7 that building?
8 A To tell the truth I didn't recognize anyone.
9
10 Q Where did you first go?
11 A I went across to the other place to see what was going on.
12 Could you take me to the area?
13
14 Q Yes.
15 A I will show you exactly the spot I went.
16
17 Q When you left Building 672 on the night of August 14th, 1944,
18 where did you go first?
19 A When I left this building here? When I first left the company
20 area?
21
22 Q Yes, during the fight.
23 A Well, I left the company area before the fight started.
24
25 Q Where did you go?
26 A To the service club.
27
28 Q After you got back from the service club, where did you first go?
29 A I went to the barracks.
30
31 Q After you went to the barracks where did you go?
32 A I took off my jacket and shirt and threw them on the bed and went
33 back out where the sergeant was.
34
35 Q Then where did you go?
36 A He was talking to us about drilling up and down the street
37 and I goes back up the steps and in a few minutes unbeknown to him
38 I went down the dirt road.
39
40 Q Unbeknown to the sergeant you left Building 672 and went down
41 the dirt road?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q Toward the Italian Area?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1054

(BATTLE)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Where did you first go after leaving the building, after you
2 went down the road?

3 A I can't tell you exactly the spot I was standing when I made
4 my stop.

5
6 Q But what building in the Italian Area was it near?

7 A I can't think.

8
9 Q Was it near the orderly room?

10 A The orderly room here?

11
12 Q Yes.

13 A That is where I saw the stuff going on in the orderly room.

14
15 Q Where were you standing when you saw what was going on in the
16 orderly room?

17 A I cannot give you the definite spot I was standing when I saw
18 what was going on.

19
20 Q If we take you to the area can you show us the point where you
21 were standing at the time you observed the fight going on around
22 Building 713?

23 A I will be glad to tell you where I was.

24
25 Q Did you stand in the road when you observed the fighting going
26 on in Building 713?

27 A I did, sir.

28
29 Q Was it Lawton Road in which you were standing when you saw the
30 fighting going on around there?

31 A I was in the road right here.

32
33 Q That is Lawton Road?

34 A Yes, sir.

35
36 Q How far away from the orderly room were you when you saw this
37 fighting in the vicinity of Building 713?

38 A That is out of my jurisdiction, I cannot exactly give you the
39 distance I was.

40
41 Q Were you 50 feet or 20 feet?

42 A I am going to tell the truth now, I am not getting anything mixed
43 up. I will be scared to say for fear I will be telling a false on that.

44
45 Q You can make an estimate and you wouldn't be telling me a falsehood.

CONFIDENTIAL

173

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A The estimate I give you may be closer than I was then it might
2 be further than I was.

3
4 Q If you made an error in an estimate, that would be only an error
5 in an estimate, it wouldn't be a falsehood. How far away from Building 713
6 were you when you observed the fighting going on in the vicinity of that
7 building?

8 A I am telling the truth.

9
10 Q You don't know then approximately how far it was?

11 A No, sir.

12
13 Q Come out here and take a look at this room. The distance you were
14 away from the orderly room at the time you saw the fighting in the vicinity
15 of that building on the night of August 14th, 1944 was about 16 steps?

16 A That is approximately it, about sixteen.

17
18 Q You were close enough to see the individuals doing the fighting
19 and the clubs they were using?

20 A The only things I seen guys using was sticks.

21
22 Q Long wide 2-by-4's, limbs off trees, and boards?

23 A Yes, sir.

24
25 Q Now as you stood there about 16 feet or steps from Building 713,
26 you saw someone who you will identify as the person who drive the jeep
27 into the tent, didn't you?

28 A The guy was about five feet eight.

29
30 Q You saw the man driving the jeep into the tent?

31 A I did see him.

32
33 Q Who was it?

34 A Curry.

35
36 Q Willie Curry?

37 A Willie Curry.

38
39 Q Was there anyone in the jeep with him at the time when he drove
40 the jeep into the tent?

41 A No, sir.

42
43 Q You stated this morning he drove the jeep into the tent twice?

44 A I did see him going into it twice.

45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1056

(BATTLE)

174

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Was the jeep then stopped?
2 A I am going to tell the truth about that. I didn't see the jeep
3 move after he drove it into the tent, but there was a guy trying to
4 start the jeep, I don't know who he was.
5
6 Q Curry stopped the jeep and Curry got out?
7 A No, sir. This guy gets in the jeep and tried to start it up.
8
9 Q Whose was that?
10 A He couldn't start it.
11
12 Q Did you see him try to start it?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q What did he do?
16 A He got out and Curry got in.
17
18 Q And Curry started the vehicle?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q What did he do?
22 A Ran into the tent.
23
24 Q Again?
25 A He hadn't went into the tent.
26
27 Q When you first saw the jeep after you arrived in the vicinity of
28 Building 713, who was in it?
29 A I don't know the guy.
30
31 Q But he was trying to start the jeep?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q You don't know him?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Are you sure?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q You know who that was?
41 A I am telling the truth on that.
42
43 Q The first man that got in the jeep attempted to start it and he
44 wasn't successful, is that right?
45 A Right.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(BATTLE)

L&#175

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Then he got out?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Where did he go?
5 A I will be honest about that. I don't know where he went but he
6 did come out of the jeep on the left side and walked down in front of the
7 jeep.
8
9 Q Toward the tent?
10 A He walked away from the tent right here, the jeep was standing
11 at an angle right here and he got out and walked like he was going in
12 front of the tent and Curry stepped up and got in it and started it.
13 I know he got in the jeep and he told me this guy couldn't start the jeep
14 and he took over and I did see him get in the jeep. I don't know who he
15 was or didn't know who he was until he told me who he was.
16
17 Q When he got in the jeep you saw him run the jeep into the tent
18 twice?
19 A I did.
20
21 Q Then the jeep was stopped after it hit the tent the second time?
22 A Yes, sir, he was in the inside the tent after the second time.
23
24 Q He had run the jeep inside the tent?
25 A He had.
26
27 Q And the front wheels of the jeep were up on the tent floor?
28 A That is about right.
29
30 Q After he ran the jeep into the tent, what did Curry do?
31 A After that I didn't see him do nothing but run the jeep into the
32 tent.
33
34 Q You saw him get out of the jeep after he ran it into the tent?
35 A I didn't see him get out.
36
37 Q You didn't see him get out?
38 A I saw the other guy get out of the jeep.
39
40 Q You mean the man that got out of the jeep first before Curry got
41 in?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q What did he take with him when he left?
45 A I didn't see him take a thing out.

CONFIDENTIAL

153

(BATTLE)

176

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Didn't he have a club?
2 A I ain't going to say.
3
4 Q You didn't see it?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q What did Curry have in his hand when there was someone else in
8 the jeep?
9 A I didn't see him with anything in his hand when he got in.
10
11 Q Before he got in what did he have in his hand?
12 A Before this guy got in the jeep which was Curry-- after the
13 other guy got out he came down the hill.
14
15 Q Didn't Curry lay something in the seat when he got in, didn't
16 he lay a club in the seat of the jeep?
17 A He had a club, I don't know whether he had it before he got in
18 or after he got out.
19
20 Q You don't know whether he had the club before he got in or after
21 he got out?
22 A That is right.
23
24 Q When you last saw Curry he was sitting in the jeep after
25 running in under the tent?
26 A He had.
27
28 Q When did you next see Curry?
29 A The next time I saw Curry was the next morning.
30
31 Q You said you saw Curry with a club either before he got in that
32 jeep or after he got out?
33 A I am trying to straighten it out. Before he got in the jeep
34 I didn't see him with a club and when he got out of the jeep I didn't
35 see him get out of the jeep. I ain't going to say he had a club in his
36 hand.
37
38 Q You say he had--
39 A I ain't going to say he had one when he got out of the jeep.
40 I believe he said, "I got me one."
41
42 Q He got an Italian with a club?
43 A Yes, sir. That is why I don't know whether he had it before he got
44 in or after he got out.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1059

(BATTLE)

177

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Now, after you saw Curry run the jeep into the tent, who was
2 the next man you saw in the Italian Area?
3 A I saw a bunch of guys.
4
5 Q Wait a minute.. I don't want a bunch, I want individuals.
6 A I can't identify them.
7
8 Q The next man you saw you recognized was whom?
9 A I didn't see anyone I recognized.
10
11 Q Are you sure?
12 A No, sir, I didn't see anyone else I recognized.
13
14 Q Herman Johnson was talking about being there the following day,
15 wasn't he?
16 A He did, he was getting ready to pull out.
17
18 Q What did he say?
19 A He told me he was around to the back of the barracks, the orderly
20 room, with the flashlight and the MP walked up to him and asked him for
21 the flashlight and he gave it to him.
22
23 Q Did he say what MP it was?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q Did he say he lost his dogtags down there too?
27 A He didn't tell me he lost his dogtags.
28
29 Q The next day you saw some Lieutenant come up to the guard house
30 or the stockade and hand some dogtags to Captain Jones?
31 A Yes, sir, through the fence.
32
33 Q And they were the dogtags of Herman Johnson?
34 A I will say it was.
35
36 Q Did Captain Jones then call Herman Johnson out and hand him the
37 dogtags?
38 A No, sir, he didn't. I think it was the following day, I am not
39 certain it was then, but he was taken down and questioned.
40
41 Q Herman Johnson was?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q When did he get his dogtags back?
45 A I don't know when he got his dogtags back.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1060

(BATTLE)

178

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Do you know who the Lieutenant was who brought the dogtags up
2 to the fence?

3 A No, sir.

4 Q Had you ever seen him before?

5 A No, sir, I hadn't.

6 Q How do you know it was Herman Johnson's dogtag that was handed
7 to Captain Jones?

8 A When they come in and got him I figured it was his, he was the
9 first guy that went out of there.

10 Q Captain Jones didn't say anything after he received the dogtags
11 which would lead you to believe they were Herman Johnson's?

12 A No, sir, he didn't say nothing before the company about it.

13 Q Did you see how many dogtags were handed back, one or two?

14 A It was on a chain, I couldn't tell how many was on the chain.

15 Q Somehow I don't see how you connected it up with Herman Johnson,
16 was it because Herman Johnson was the first one called out?

17 A He was the first one to go.

18 Q You thought because he was the first one to go and you had seen
19 the Lieutenant hand the chain with the dogtags to the Captain, it was
20 Herman Johnson's?

21 A Yes, sir, because when he passed the dogtags through the fence
22 the Captain came back and started talking on the same case, he had us
23 all around, huddled, and he was standing in the ring and after he got
24 up from there and he said, "When I think of what you boys done it
25 makes me sick everytime I think about it," and after awhile here comes
26 a jeep and they pick up Herman Johnson and takes him out.

27 Q Didn't they also find Herman Johnson's shovel in the area?

28 A Me knowing positively the shovel was there, I ain't going to
29 say because he would say it wouldn't be and I don't know where the
30 shovel was found or the serial number.

31 Q Did you hear Herman Johnson say anything about having a shovel
32 down there?

33 A No, sir, I didn't.

34 Q Did you ever talk to him about it since that time?

35 A No, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1061

(BATTLE)

L&(179)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Let's go back to Building 713. You stated a few minutes ago the
2 first man you identified definitely down in the area after you saw Curry
3 was Freddie Umblance?
- 4 A Yes, sir.
- 5
- 6 Q What was Freddie Umblance doing when you first saw him?
- 7 A When I saw him I didn't see him doing anything.
- 8
- 9 Q He had a club in his hand?
- 10 A A stick about that long.
- 11
- 12 Q About $3\frac{1}{2}$ feet long?
- 13 A Yes, sir.
- 14
- 15 Q Who else was with Freddie?
- 16 A He was walking by himself.
- 17
- 18 Q Was he chasing Italians?
- 19 A No, sir.
- 20
- 21 Q Were any Italians close to him?
- 22 A No, sir, that was after the MP's took over that he came walking
23 with the club in his hand.
- 24
- 25 Q From what direction did he come?
- 26 A Between the orderly room and the tent.
- 27
- 28 Q When he saw the MP's he left, did he?
- 29 A He did. The MP's ordered everybody out of the area.
- 30
- 31 Q Now, who was the third man you saw in the Italian Area in the
32 vicinity of 713 on the night of August 14th, 1944?
- 33 A The third man I saw down there--- I saw Roy Montgomery.
- 34
- 35 Q Where?
- 36 A He was down in the area, I reckon about 7 feet, I imagine that
37 is the distance he was from Freddie.
- 38
- 39 Q What was Roy doing when you first saw him?
- 40 A Standing up, he wasn't doing nothing.
- 41
- 42 Q What kind of a club did he have?
- 43 A I didn't see him have anything in his hand.
- 44
- 45 Q Roy Montgomery?

CONFIDENTIAL

-62

(BATTLE)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A That is right.
2
3 Q He didn't have a 2-by-4 in his hand?
4 A I didn't see him with anything in his hand.
5
6 Q What was he doing?
7 A Standing in one place.
8
9 Q Talking to Freddie?
10 A No, sir, Freddie was walking ahead of him.
11
12 Q Did you hear Montgomery say anything to anybody in the area
13 when you saw him?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Who was the fourth man you saw?
17 A The fourth man-- can you give me the names of those you had testify?
18
19 Q Willie Basden?
20 A I don't know him, he is not in my company.
21
22 Q Milton Bratton?
23 A He is in the 650th.
24
25 Q John S. Brown?
26 A I know him, he is a sergeant.
27
28 Q You saw him?
29 A No, sir, I didn't see him.
30
31 Q Johnnie Ceaser?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q James Chandler?
35 A I don't remember seeing him until he came to the stockade. He
36 Is in the 650th.
37
38 Q Alvin Clark?
39 A I saw him.
40
41 Q Where did you first see Alvin?
42 A He was standing in front of the 578th mess hall.
43
44 Q Then where did you see him next?
45 A That is the only place I saw him.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

181

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q When did you go to the 578th mess hall?
2 A When I went to the 578th mess hall to the party, a boy by the
3 name of Jones, about the size of Clark, a little taller than Clark, he
4 taken me and my wife to the mess hall. Clark and 5 or 6 other boys were
5 standing in front of the mess hall.
6
7 Q Was one of them Roy Daymond?
8 A I don't know.
9
10 Q Was one of them named Willie D. Montgomery?
11 A I don't know.
12
13 Q How many of those standing in front of the mess hall did you
14 later see in the Italian Area, just Jones and Clark?
15 A I didn't see Jones down in the Italian Area.
16
17 Q You didn't see William G. Jones down in the Italian Area?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q How many others did you see down there?
21 A I didn't see no others.
22
23 Q Willie S. Curry, did you see him?
24 A He is the guy in the vehicle.
25
26 Q You only saw him once in the jeep?
27 A I did.
28
29 Q Roy Daymond?
30 A I told you awhile ago I didn't see him.
31
32 Q Lee Dixon?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q Willie Ellis?
36 A I didn't see him.
37
38 Q Herman Gentry?
39 A I have only known him since he came in the stockade.
40
41 Q Addison George?
42 A I never did see him.
43
44 Q Jefferson D. Green?
45 A I didn't see him down there.

CONFIDENTIAL

1064

(BATTLE)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q John Lee Hamilton?
2 A No, sir, I didn't see him at all.
3
4 Q You didn't see him in the Italian Area?
5 A No, sir, he could have been there.
6
7 Q Herman Johnson?
8 A He told me he gave the MP his light.
9
10 Q Did you see him down there?
11 A I didn't see him in the area. I saw him after out drilling
12 together.
13
14 Q You saw him the night before he left the Italian Area, you saw
15 him in the Italian Area?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q You want to say he wasn't down there?
19 A I didn't see him.
20
21 Q Henry Jupiter?
22 A The names of those you are reading are in the 650th, I don't
23 know none of those guys by name until them come in the stockade?
24
25 Q But you saw them and learned who they were later? In other
26 words, since you have associated the name Henry Jupiter with the man you
27 saw down there, you saw him?
28 A I saw a bunch of men down there.
29
30 Q You saw Henry, that is the person I am talking about now.
31 A I did not, sir.
32
33 Q Robert Mathis?
34 A I can't give any account of him, no further than the barracks
35 although he is my friend.
36
37 Q Didn't he go down there with you?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q You saw him at the fight, didn't you?
41 A No, sir, I will stick to that.
42
43 Q How many have you recognized of those I named?
44 A You called Chandler?
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1065

(BATTLE)

183

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Yes.
2 A I recognized him by the two bumps on his face.
3
4 Q He was down there?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q What did Chandler have in his hand?
8 A Nothing, he was coming out when the MP's ordered them out.
9
10 Q You saw Chandler when he was in the orderly room waving a knife
11 in his hand?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Who else did you see besides Chandler down there out of the
15 group I named?
16 A The mess sergeant, Arnest Graham.
17
18 Q Where did you see Ernest Graham in the Italian Area on the
19 night of August 14th, 1944?
20 A I saw him in the area with a club in his hand.
21
22 Q Did you see him while the fight was going on?
23 A No, sir, I did not.
24
25 Q The only time you saw Graham was the time he was leaving the
26 Italian Area on the night of August 14th, 1944 with a club in his hand?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q What kind of a club was he carrying?
30 A A stick about that long.
31
32 Q About 3 feet long?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Did you talk to Graham at all?
36 A No, sir, I did not. Sylvester Campbell was down there, he was a
37 cook.
38
39 Q Where did you see Sylvester Campbell?
40 A I saw him-- he passed by me as I was standing in the road.
41
42 Q What did he have in his hand?
43 A Nothing.
44
45 Q However, he had been in the Italian Area during the fight?
A He was.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1085

(EATIE)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did he talk to you?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q He didn't say anything to you?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q You saw Campbell on the night of August 14th come out of the
8 Italian Area after the fight was over?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q Who else did you recognize down there?
12 A I can't think of no more now, if there was any more I can't
13 think of them.
14
15 Q About how long were you down there?
16 A In the mess hall?
17
18 Q Down in the area where this fight was going on?
19 A Oh, I imagine I was standing there about-- close to 35 or 40 minutes.
20
21 Q 35 or 40 minutes?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q Did you see some Italians running out of the barracks?
25 A Yes, sir, he came out of the orderly room without anything on but
26 his shorts, he had on his shorts.
27
28 Q From where you were standing you could look into the barracks
29 and the orderly room between the barracks?
30 A You couldn't hardly see into the barracks, there wasn't but
31 one light, they had knocked the lights out, I imagine.
32
33 Q Did you see some Italians walking around in there?
34 A No, sir, I did not.
35
36 Q Did you stand in one spot all the time, this 35 or 40 minutes?
37 A I imagine about 10 or 15 minutes and I went back up the hill,
38 back up to my tent-- my barracks.
39
40 Q But you were standing more or less in one spot all the time?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q Why did you go down there?
44 A Well, I heard the beating and rocks and I goes on down to look on.
45 I didn't take anything with me.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

185

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Who did you say went with you?
2 A No one, just I.
3
4 Q There were several of you walking there at the same time, weren't
5 there?
6 A No, sir.
7
8 Q You were the only one that went down at that time?
9 A Yes, sir, just me by myself.
10
11 Q About how many colored soldiers were down there at the time you
12 got down there?
13 A They were all colored down there.
14
15 Q About how many? About 50 or 75?
16 A I imagine somewhere in that neighborhood.
17
18 Q Seventy-five or more?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q And you saw a first class riot going on down there, didn't you?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q What did you do the whole time you were down there, 35 or 40 minutes?
25 A Nothing.
26
27 Q Just stood there?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q Did you help anybody out?
31 A No, sir, to tell the facts about it when I went down to look on
32 I didn't go with the intention of doing anything.
33
34 Q After you got there did you keep looking on?
35 A I just looked on.
36
37 Q Did you see anybody hurt down there?
38 A The only one I saw hurt was some Italians they had on a stretcher
39 and they then called an ambulance.
40
41 Q Did you stand and watch that?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q Who carried them to the ambulance?
45 A I don't know exactly who taken them to the ambulance.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1058

(BATTLE)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Did you help carry them out?
2 A No, sir, I did not.
3
4 Q Why didn't you?
5 A They already ordered everybody out of the area. There wasn't
6 no use of me going over there.
7
8 Q And you stood there 35 or 40 minutes almost in the same spot?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q And did nothing?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Did you ever pick up a rock?
15 A No, sir.
16
17 Q Did you ever pick up a stick?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q Why didn't you?
21 A I wasn't interested
22
23 Q Why were you standing there then?
24 A The only thing I stood there for was to observe what they was doing
25 to those guys.
26
27 Q You stood there 35 or 40 minutes and you weren't interested?
28 A No, sir, I wasn't interested.
29
30 Q Why didn't you go back to your barracks if you weren't interested?
31 A What I mean is I wasn't interested in doing anything to those
32 guys.
33
34 Q You were interested in somebody else doing it to them?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Did you come to the help of any of the Italians?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q Why?
41 A If I had went down and tried to help those guys out I maybe would
42 have got some of what they were giving those men.
43
44 Q Did you approve of what was going on?
45 A What do you mean?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1069

(BATTLE)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q Did you approve of those Italians being beaten up?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Why didn't you help them out?
5 A Well, sir, I just told you awhile ago, if I had went down I
6 might have gotten some of what they were getting.
7
8 Q You just stood there after you saw what was going on?
9 A Well, I wasn't doing anything, there wasn't nobody bothering
10 me and I just stood there.
11
12 Q You just stood there on the sidelines and cheered?
13 A No, sir, I didn't cheer at all.
14
15 Q You watched that whole business going on for 35 or 40 minutes
16 and never raised your hand to put a stop to it?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q When the MP's came you didn't help them?
20 A They ordered all the guys out of the area.
21
22 Q You didn't offer to help anybody?
23 A No, sir, I didn't. My help wouldn't have been no good, just me.
24
25 Q That is not the question, you did not offer to help anybody?
26 A No, sir, I didn't offer to help.
27
28 Q Now, how long before you left was it before you walked into
29 the orderly room?
30 A What orderly room.
31
32 Q The orderly room you have been talking about?
33 A I have never been in the orderly room.
34
35 Q You say you didn't go in there and didn't look in?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q That is where most of the stuff was going on, in the orderly
39 room?
40 A I saw guys coming out of the orderly room.
41
42 Q Who?
43 A One Italian was coming out and another guy chasing him.
44
45 Q Who was chasing him?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 A I didn't see his face.
2
3 Q You saw a lot of fighting going on in the orderly room, didn't
4 you?
5 A I saw window panes being knocked out, I saw the tent being torn.
6
7 Q You saw the orderly room window panes and glass being broken?
8 A There wasn't any light in there.
9
10 Q No light in the orderly room?
11 A At the time of the beating and knocking was going on, there
12 wasn't a single light in there.
13
14 Q You mean it was entirely dark in that orderly room?
15 A Yes, sir, just a little before the MP's come down and taken over
16 somebody put a bulb in and the lights went back on.
17
18 Q After they turned the lights back on, what did you see in there?
19 A I didn't see nothing in there then.
20
21 Q Why?
22 A They were all scattered across the area.
23
24 Q Everybody was out of the orderly room?
25 A I couldn't swear everybody was out because I hadn't been in there.
26
27 Q Now, do you want your testimony to state the lights were out in
28 the orderly room?
29 A Well, at the time before the MP's came down the lights did go
30 out.
31
32 Q For how long?
33 A Oh, just a few minutes, not long because the MP's just arrived
34 before they came back on.
35
36 Q Before the lights went off there was a lot of fighting going on
37 in the orderly room?
38 A There was.
39
40 Q You remember that, don't you?
41 A I can.
42
43 Q There was a lot of fighting around the orderly room before
44 the lights went out?
45 A There was.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q What did you see?
2 A I saw guys in there fighting and slinging clubs, just as you say.
3
4 Q Who was slinging and fighting?
5 A I don't know that now.
6
7 Q Did you go there to see them?
8 A No, sir, I didn't go in the orderly room at all.
9
10 Q When you saw this slinging of clubs and fighting and windows
11 being knocked out, didn't you go up to the orderly room to see what was
12 going on in there?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q Why didn't you?
16 A It just took a few minutes and there was no need in me going
17 up there.
18
19 Q Why wasn't there any need?
20 A Well, there could have been a need for me going up to stop
21 it, that is true, but me going up and trying to help out those guys,
22 those guys that were doing the fighting out-numbered me.
23
24 Q How many were in the orderly room fighting at that time?
25 A I can't positively say.
26
27 Q Tell me about how many?
28 A Maybe about four or five in there.
29
30 Q Just four or five?
31 A That is my estimation. I can't say there was 15 or 20
32 in there, I might be wrong, but I will estimate four or five being in
33 the orderly room.
34
35 Q There could have been as many as 15 or 20?
36 A There could have been.
37
38 Q Now, I want you to study just a minute before you answer this
39 question and let's make sure and not make a mistake about it.
40 At some time while you were in that area watching that fight you went in
41 the orderly room. Just when was it from the time you went there?
42 A Me?
43
44 Q Yes, you.
45 A I will hold my right hand and swear to my God I did not enter the
orderly room when the fight was going on. I have never been in the

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 orderly room.
2
3 Q You have never at any time been in the orderly room?
4 A No, sir.
5
6 Q What is the closest you ever got to the orderly room?
7 A The closest I got was when they was taking me to the dispensary.
8
9 Q I am talking about that night.
10 A The distance I walked.
11
12 Q You have never been any closer than that?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q Why?
16 A I just told you.
17
18 Q Maybe I am just a little hard to understand. Tell me again.
19 A I told you the reason I didn't go up there, those guys doing the
20 fighting outnumbered me.
21
22 Q Now, who are you talking about, the Italians?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q Those guys were doing nothing about defending themselves?
26 A The Italians were trying to defend themselves.
27
28 Q But they were being struck with clubs?
29 A Yes, sir. I will admit that.
30
31 Q You saw somebody beating the door down with an ax while you were
32 standing there?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q Did you see anyone swing an ax?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q You didn't see that?
39 A The whole time I didn't see an ax out at all.
40
41 Q Who got in the orderly room-- or how did they get in the orderly room?
42 A I don't know.
43
44 Q You were standing there watching, weren't you?
45 A I was watching all it. I did hear the door being knocked down but the
wasn't any light on the outside.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1073

(BATTLE)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q When you left there, did you leave alone?
2 A Yes, sir, I did.
3
4 Q Now, did you leave alone or did somebody leave the area with you?
5 A I left the area alone, by myself.
6
7 Q Why did you leave?
8 A I went down to see what was going on.
9
10 Q The question is why did you leave the area?
11 A What area?
12
13 Q The area where you were standing for 35 or 40 minutes?
14 A Why I left from down there going back to my area?
15
16 Q You left that area at some time or other, didn't you?
17 A I did.
18
19 Q After 35 or 40 minutes?
20 A The MP's taken over.
21
22 Q The MP's took over, is that the reason you left?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q In other words, the show was over and you were ready to go back
26 home?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q Were you ever in that orderly room at all?
30 A No, sir.
31
32 Q Do you know Willie Curry?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Did you see Willie Curry inside the orderly room?
36 A No, sir, I didn't see him inside the orderly room.
37
38 Q Did he see you while you were in there?
39 A He didn't see me in there because I wasn't in there.
40
41 Q While you stood out in the street you saw a bunch of Italians
42 running back in the woods?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q Did you see approximately how many Italians left the area and ran

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 into the wooded area on the outside?

2 A When they entered the woods, it was not from the end of the
3 orderly room, they entered from behind.

4 Q And how many went down in the woods you saw?

5 A I saw one guy that came out.

6 Q Did they chase him?

7 A Yes, sir.

8 Q Did they chase him in the woods?

9 A I don't know, but I did see them chase him.

10 Q This morning you testified you didn't see anyone jump out of
11 the buildings because you were up here. Did you see any Italians
12 jump out of the building here?

13 A You asked me did I see someone jump through the window and I
14 told you I did not. I told you I saw guys come out through the door,
15 out the side door of the orderly room.

16 Q This morning you said you saw several Italians running around
17 the buildings with colored boys chasing them.

18 A I meant the orderly room.

19 Q 713 and in 709?

20 A Yes, sir.

21 Q Was the light on in the orderly room when the light was being
22 knocked down?

23 A When the door was being knocked down there wasn't any light at
24 all.

25 Q Now, was there any light shining out of this window over here?

26 A There was some guys, maybe 5 or 6 standing in this window.

27 Q With clubs?

28 A With clubs.

29 Q And they knocked the panes out of the window?

30 A Yes, sir.

31 Q And they knocked the broad pieces of the sill in, didn't they
32 after they had knocked the glass out?

33 A I didn't see the sill.

34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

L(193

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q You remember this window closest to you?
2 A That is on the end. I observed the window running into
3 Room Y and Z being knocked out by clubs and sticks.
4
5 Q And you saw a great many men gather around both windows?
6 A I did.
7
8 Q How many of those people did you recognize?
9 A I didn't recognize any of them.
10
11 Q You had a light in this room, a big bright light in this
12 room. Isn't it normal when there is a light in a room shining into
13 the darkness on the outside, the persons surrounding the door or window
14 where the light shines through, you would be able to see them very very
15 plainly?
16 A They could be seen plain, but they had their backs to me.
17
18 Q At the time that you saw these soldiers gathered around the windows
19 and on either side of Door E, did you see Ceaser and Brown?
20 A Brown, he is T/4 Brown, he was standing at the window on the
21 right hand side.
22
23 Q Was he using a club to knock the window panes out?
24 A He was on the right hand side of the steps.
25
26 Q After you saw Ceaser knocking the windows out, where else did
27 you see him?
28 A I only saw him beating against the window to tell the truth.
29
30 Q Now Clark, he was hit, he wasn't standing at the window?
31 A No, sir, Curry was doing the driving of the jeep.
32
33 Q Did you see him there at the window?
34 A No, sir.
35
36 Q Roy Daymond?
37 A I ain't going to say he wasn't there because he could have been
38 there.
39
40 Q Did you see him at the window?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Lee Dixon?
44 A No, sir
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1076

(BATTLE)

194

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 when you were in the vicinity of
2 Building 713, did you see Jefferson D. Green?

3 A I did.

4 Q What was Jefferson D. Green doing when you saw him in the
5 Italian Area?

6 A He had a stick, a scantling longer than he was and he was beating
7 on the window.
8

9 Q Did Jefferson Green knock the window out with the scantling
10 he had?

11 A Yes, sir.
12

13 Q What else did you see Green do?

14 A He left the window and I didn't see him after that.
15

16 Q When Green went on the other side, did you hear any windows knocked
17 in?

18 A I could hear, I don't know if it was on the same building or not.
19

20 Q On the night of August 14, 1944, while you were standing near
21 Building 713 did you see Private John Lee Hamilton chasing an Italian
22 through Door E and wround behind Building 713?

23 A I couldn't swear it was him, but there was a man chasing
24 him.
25

26 Q Do you believe it was John Lee Hamilton when you saw him chasing
27 the man around the building?

28 A Yes, sir.
29

30 Q And the man whom you believe to be Hamilton came out of the building
31 and he was dressed in his underwear and he was chased behind Building 713?

32 A Yes, sir.
33

34 Q Did you see him strike the Italian after he left Door E and was in the
35 area outside the building?

36 A No, sir, I didn't see him strike him.
37

38 Q Was the Italian so far ahead of Hamilton he couldn't reach him?

39 A He was out the door before this guy came out. The Italian came
40 out persued by Hamilton.
41

42 Q The Italian escaped by running around the building?

43 A Yes, sir.
44
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1077

(BATTLE)

195

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q He was around the building before you saw Hamilton catch him?
2 A Yes, sir.
- 3
4 Q On the night subsequent to the night of the fight, August 14th,
5 1944, did you talk to T/5 Herman Johnson about the fight that happened in
6 the Italian Area?
7 A No, sir, I talked with him in the stockade.
- 8
9 Q What conversation did you have with Herman Johnson concerning the
10 fight which you had?
11 A I didn't personally talk with him. When I entered the conversation
12 he was talking.
- 13
14 Q What did Herman Johnson say about the fight?
15 A He said they had some bunks against the door.
- 16
17 Q The Italians had bunks against the door?
18 A Yes, sir.
- 19
20 Q The colored soldiers knocked the door down outside and went
21 inside the building?
22 A Yes, sir.
- 23
24 Q What else did he say?
25 A And there was maybe several of them under some beds.
- 26
27 Q Several Italians under the beds inside the room?
28 A Yes, sir.
- 29
30 Q What else?
31 A And they started beating them around.
- 32
33 Q The colored soldiers started beating the Italians inside the room?
34 A Yes, sir and after they started beating them around in there some
35 of them got away.
- 36
37 Q Did he say where they went?
38 A No, sir, and he came out of the building and the guys ran and an
39 MP walked up and asked Herman for his flashlight and he gave it to him.
- 40
41 Q Was that the only conversation you had with Herman Johnson
42 concerning the fight on the night of August 14th, 1944?
43 A Yes, sir.
- 44
45 Q Who else was present when you were talking to Herman Johnson about

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(BATTLE)

196

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 his participation in the riot?

2 A Robert Mathis.

3 Q Anyone else?

4 A Mathis and Freeman Pierce.

5 Q Anyone else?

6 A Andrew Jones. Those guys are not here. He was in the same
7 tent.

8 Q Anyone else?

9 A Clovis Julian.

10 Q All of these men whom you have named were present when Herman
11 Johnson discussed his participation in the fight on the night of
12 August 14, 1944?

13 A Yes, sir.

14 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, did you see Henry Jupiter
15 in the vicinity of Building 713?

16 A He was down there where I seen him.

17 Q You state definitely he was in the Italian Area on the night of
18 August 14th?

19 A He was.

20 Q Robert Mathis?

21 A I can only give an account bodily as far as the barracks.

22 Q You cannot say you saw Mathis down there after the fight started?

23 A No, sir.

24 Q Is there anything else, whether I have asked you or not, that
25 you would like to add in this case?

26 A No, sir, there is nothing else.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1079

(BATTLE) (END)

197

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Testimony of T/5 Herman Johnson, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 27 September 1944 by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

4
5
6 The witness was sworn.

7
8
9 Q State your name, serial number, and organization.

10 A Herman Johnson, 36891145, 651st Port Company, Fort Lawton,
11 Washington.

12
13 Q Are you understand your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of war?

15 A I have had them explained, I don't know them very well.

16
17 Q Do you want me to explain them to you again?

18 A I don't think it would hurt.

19
20 (Investigating Officer reads and explains 24th Article of War to
21 witness)

22
23 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, were you in your company when
24 some trouble was had between the Italians and your organization?

25 A Yes, sir, I was in our company.

26
27 Q What was the first mention or what was the first incident
28 which was brought to your attention that caused you to know a fight was
29 going on between the Italians and the colored soldiers?

30 A I will tell you the way I got it, somebody said they was fighting
31 but I didn't know at that time who was fighting.

32
33 Q Where do you live?

34 A I lived in barracks 673.

35
36 Q Who informed you there was a fight going on?

37 A I don't know exactly who, but it was spoken from the outside,
38 somebody said they was fighting, maybe it was the barracks in front of me.
39 Naturally, I was inside.

40
41 Q When someone hollered they were fighting, you went on the
42 outside?

43 A Yes, sir, I went outside when I heard so many say they was fighting.

44
45 Q When they said they were fighting in the area, did you know they

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1080

(JOHNSON)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 meant in the Italian Area?

2 A No, sir, I thought maybe it was the 650th, they are in that
3 direction back toward the Italian Area.

4
5 Q When you went outside what noise did you hear?

6 A Like hitting against houses.

7
8 Q Breaking glass?

9 A Yes, sir, wood.

10
11 Q Was anyone screaming?

12 A I don't know if I heard anybody hollering, I heard so many voices
13 I heard plenty of them.

14
15 Q After you heard those voices you went toward that area?

16 A No, sir.

17
18 Q Where did you go?

19 A I stood there a couple of minutes and the first sergeant was out
20 there at the time and he said he was going back to the orderly room and
21 call the MP's and don't no person go there.

22
23 Q What was the first sergeant's name?

24 A Cabral.

25
26 Q Was he in front of your building?

27 A Yes, sir, he was in the front door.

28
29 Q He was standing at Building 673, was he?

30 A In front-- between 670, the building in front and 673, our
31 building.

32
33 Q Is that 670?

34 A I am not familiar with this map, 673 faces east. The other building
35 faces west and there is another one below that.

36
37 Q That is 672?

38 A It must be 672.

39
40 Q Sergeant Cabral and you were in front of Building 673?

41 A He wasn't, he was between.

42
43 Q Near the orderly room?

44 A Yes, sir, they are kind of close, the orderly room is not far
45 apart, the two buildings face each other.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q When Sergeant Cabral told you to go back in your building, what
2 did you do?
3 A I turned around and went back to work. I was pressing clothes.
4
5 Q You stayed in the building?
6 A I stayed in the building.
7
8 Q How long did you stay there?
9 A Just a few minutes. I went back outside to the latrine, I went
10 back and got water for my iron and went back in the building.
11
12 Q When you went in the latrine, how long did you stay there?
13 A Not long.
14
15 Q Where did you go then?
16 A Back to my building.
17
18 Q 673?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q When you got back to 673, what did you do?
22 A I went back to work.
23
24 Q What were you doing?
25 AP Pressing.
26
27 Q Pressing your clothes?
28 A For the soldiers in our company.
29
30 Q You pressed clothes for them?
31 A I forget the fellow's name, he is a new fellow in the company,
32 I am not sure, I think Jacob Person.
33
34 Q How long did you stay in 673 pressing clothes after you returned
35 from the latrine?
36 A I pressed clothing until after everything was over.
37
38 Q Anyway, you stayed in Building 673 until all the fighting was
39 over in the Italian Area?
40 A Yes, sir, I was there all the time and I went out to get the water.
41
42 Q To the latrine?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q You didn't go away from the latrine?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1032

(JOHNSON)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A I came back to the building.
- 2
- 3 Q Now, all the time you were going from Building 673 to the latrine
4 and back again to Building 673 and pressing clothes, didn't you hear
5 a lot of noise?
- 6 A Yes, sir, I heard it before that.
- 7
- 8 Q Didn't you go down there?
- 9 A No, sir.
- 10
- 11 Q You stayed in Building 673?
- 12 A Yes, sir.
- 13
- 14 Q Did you stand on the outside of the building and watch what was
15 going on down there?
- 16 A I think the first time I went after water I stopped on the steps
17 a minute or two.
- 18
- 19 Q And watched what was going on?
- 20 A I didn't see, I listened.
- 21
- 22 Q You couldn't see the Italian Area from Building 673?
- 23 A No, sir.
- 24
- 25 Q Why couldn't you see there?
- 26 A It was dark.
- 27
- 28 Q But you could hear the hdlerring going on?
- 29 A Yes, sir.
- 30
- 31 Q And the screaming?
- 32 A I could hear voices, I couldn't say it was screaming, but there
33 was lots of loud hollering.
- 34
- 35 Q It sounded like men being beaten, didn't it?
- 36 A I am not sure anybody was screaming, I know I heard a lot of
37 talking.
- 38
- 39 Q All you did was hear the noise going on toward the Italian Area
40 and you were listening?
- 41 A Yes, sir, for the time I was standing there.
- 42
- 43 Q But you never left Building 673?
- 44 A No, sir.
- 45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

201

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Did you, after the riot was over, talk to Thomas Battle about the
2 fight?

3 A No, sir, I didn't talk with him about the fight, I didn't know
4 he knew anything about it. I don't know if he went down. I heard the
5 MP trucks there.

6
7 Q Did you see the MP's go there?

8 A No, sir, just as a matter of course I figured that is what it
9 was.

10
11 Q The next day after the fight did you talk to Battle about it?

12 A No, sir, I didn't.

13
14 Q You didn't talk to anyone about it?

15 A No, sir.

16
17 Q Did you hear any conversation being carried on by any persons
18 who participated in the fight?

19 A I heard one conversation later that strikes my attention more
20 than anything and that is over here at the mess hall, I don't know what
21 building, anyway, you know where the small theater is?

22
23 Q At Camp Jordan?

24 A No, sir, right up from the service club, you know, you go up
25 to the service club?

26
27 Q Yes. What was that conversation you heard there?

28 A When I was in line-- I was standing in line on the outside
29 and a fellow, he was a soldier and he said the soldiers had trouble down
30 there and he said, "I heard an Italian got hung," and naturally I
31 paid attention, but as far as discussing the fight, I never discussed
32 it with them because I have heard different things, but I didn't
33 pay any attention. This was a white fellow that said that.

34
35 Q Who was the white boy that told you boys about it?

36 A I don't know who he was.

37
38 Q Was anything said by any of the other colored soldiers about
39 the individual being hanged?

40 A Well, there was a sergeant in our company, he looks around at
41 me and they all looks at each other and everybody looks like it is
42 something new. I know it was news to me so there wasn't no answer I
43 could give, I didn't know nothing about it.

44
45 Q Was there anyone else that seemed to know about it?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1094

(JOHNSON)

202

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A No, sir.
- 2 Q Did anyone else start to talk to you about the man that was hanged
- 3 or who did it?
- 4 A Everybody was wondering was it really true.
- 5
- 6 Q Was there some question there as to who did it?
- 7 A Well, nobody never said they had a real good idea about who
- 8 did it.
- 9
- 10 Q Did they ever talk about all the people in the riot and said
- 11 something about beating up so-an-so or something like that?
- 12 A Well, I never heard much about it, like I thought, I didn't
- 13 know about who did it, but I will say myself, I was wondering how it would
- 14 be done.
- 15
- 16 Q Did you hear anyone say they got the rope and hanged him?
- 17 A There was somebody, he said somebody got a rope or something.
- 18
- 19 Q Was that the rope with which he was hanged?
- 20 A I don't know, that is what he said.
- 21
- 22 Q On the night of the fight did you see anyone tear a rope off of
- 23 a tent?
- 24 A I was in my barracks.
- 25
- 26 Q Battle says you told him that you were down there.
- 27 A I can't help what Battle told you, but he is mistaken, I will
- 28 say that. I won't say he didn't tell you, I don't know what he did say.
- 29 I don't know what anyone did say.
- 30
- 31 Q Did you on the night you were ironing clothes see Battles
- 32 up there?
- 33 A I was in the barracks.
- 34
- 35 Q You didn't see him during the fight, did you?
- 36 A I saw Battle when the fight first started.
- 37
- 38 Q You didn't see him after it had been going on a minute, did you?
- 39 A No, sir, I don't know, I don't recall seeing him. I saw him
- 40 standing by his bed folding his clothes. By the time it stopped-- before
- 41 it stopped I saw him I remember that well, he was by the barber.
- 42
- 43 Q You know about the time the fight stopped he was back in his
- 44 barracks, you know that?
- 45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1035

(JOHNSON)

203

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A Oh, sure, I know that.
- 2
- 3 Q You know he was there when it stopped?
- 4 A I know he was back when it stopped.
- 5
- 6 Q If he went to the Italian Area he went sometime between the
- 7 time it started and got back previous to its ending, is that right?
- 8 A That is the way I figured.
- 9
- 10 Q Did you see Mathis at any time during the fight?
- 11 A I don't know exactly what barracks he stays in.
- 12
- 13 Q He doesn't stay in your barracks?
- 14 A No, sir.
- 15
- 16 Q You didn't see him during the fight?
- 17 A If I saw him, I don't remember. Battle, he stayed in the barracks,
- 18 he was pretty close to where we were working and I don't remember the
- 19 other fellow.
- 20
- 21 Q You know him?
- 22 A I think I know him, he is a slender dark complected guy.
- 23 He didn't stay in our barracks.
- 24
- 25 Q You didn't see him the night of the fight and while it was
- 26 going on?
- 27 A I don't remember seeing him.
- 28
- 29 Q Did you talk to him the following day or Mathis about the fight?
- 30 A I never talked about it.
- 31
- 32 Q Did you lose your dogtags on the night of August 14th?
- 33 A No, sir.
- 34
- 35 Q On the morning of the 15th did someone bring your dogtags to
- 36 you while you were in the compound?
- 37 A No, sir.
- 38
- 39 Q You had your dogtags on?
- 40 A Yes, sir.
- 41
- 42 Q Did Captain Jones ever have your dogtags in his possession?
- 43 A Only when he asked for my blood type.
- 44
- 45 Q When was that?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1026

(JOHNSON)

204

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A That was a good while before that.
- 2
- 3 Q Did he have them in his possession at the time of the fight?
- 4 A No, sir.
- 5
- 6 Q Didn't Captain Jones or some Lieutenant deliver to Captain Jones
- 7 on the morning of the 15th your dogtags and the chain and Captain Jones
- 8 gave them to you?
- 9 A The guy you speak of, he is in the 650th and they brought the
- 10 dogtags to Captain Jones. I saw what you are speaking of and he handed
- 11 them through the fence. It wasn't none of mine.
- 12
- 13 Q Who was the man?
- 14 A He is in the stockade, I don't know.
- 15
- 16 Q You don't know his name?
- 17 A I have heard his name. He is one in the stockade I got acquainted
- 18 with.
- 19
- 20 Q Would you know it if you heard it?
- 21 A I wouldn't be too sure.
- 22
- 23 Q Was it Hamilton?
- 24 A I would know him when I seen him.
- 25
- 26 Q Did you see the dogtags when they were delivered to Captain Jones?
- 27 A I think an officer took them, I am not for sure, but anyway, he
- 28 handed them through the fence. I am a good ways back, we had taken a
- 29 break for 5 or 6 minutes, we had been drilling.
- 30
- 31 Q The officer delivered the dogtags to Captain Jones?
- 32 A Yes, sir.
- 33
- 34 Q What did Captain Jones do with them?
- 35 A I don't know, sir.
- 36
- 37 Q How do you know they were dogtags?
- 38 A Since you said dogtags I figured that is what it was, it looked
- 39 like it to me. I heard somebody before say it was dogtags, it was brought
- 40 up in the daytime, but they wasn't mine.
- 41
- 42 Q You never did see Captain Jones deliver them to the owner?
- 43 A No, sir, I don't know what they did with them.
- 44
- 45 Q Will you get me the name of the man whose dogtags were delivered

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1037

(JOHNSON)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 through the fence to Captain Jones by another officer on the morning
2 of August 15, 1944?
3 A Yes, sir.
4
5 Q Did you lose a spade that was found in the Italian Area?
6 A I missed my spade that night.
7
8 Q Where were you when you first missed it?
9 A At my bed.
10
11 Q That night?
12 A That night.
13
14 Q Did you report it to anyone?
15 A No, sir, it wasn't reported.
16
17 Q Was the spade later found?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Do you know where it was found?
21 A No, sir. I had no real good answer where it was found.
22
23 Q Did anyone tell you where it was found?
24 A They told me two or three things about it. I don't know
25 which one is true.
26
27 Q They told you it was found in the Italian Area?
28 A They just said that.
29
30 Q Did you take it to the Italian Area?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q Where did you last put your spade on the night of the 14th of
34 August?
35 A On the foot of the bed after I stenciled the lettering on it.
36
37 Q The spade that was picked up in the Italian Area was your
38 spade?
39 A So far as I can learn.
40
41 Q The number which was on it was the number you stenciled on it?
42 A That is right.
43
44 Q You didn't carry your spade down there?
45 A No, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJD NARA Date 06/12/02

206

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Did you tell me that on the night of the fight an MP took a
2 flashlight from you?
3 A No, sir.
4
5 Q Did the MP take a flashlight from you on the night of the 14th
6 of August?
7 A No, sir, not me.
8
9 (THOMAS BATTLE enters the room)
10
11 Q Thomas, in your testimony awhile ago you testified that Herman
12 Johnson told you after the fight between the Italians and the colored
13 soldiers on the night of August 14th, that while he was in the Italian
14 Area the MP took a flashlight from his hands; is that right?
15 PVT. BATTLE: He told me that on the 15th. We was in the
16 stockade.
17
18 Q That is the next day after the fight he told you what I have
19 just repeated?
20 PVT. BATTLE: Now, he wasn't talking to me, I walked up at the
21 time he was speaking it and that MP asked for the light and he gave it
22 to him.
23
24 Q You also testified that Herman said he was in the Italian Area
25 on the night of the fight?
26 PVT. BATTLE: I did.
27
28 Q Herman, what do you say to that testimony?
29 A He is lying.
30
31 Q Battle, you see a man sitting before you. Do you know him
32 personally?
33 PVT. BATTLE: I don't know him personally, I know him since I
34 have been in the stockade.
35
36 Q Do you know who this man is that you now observe?
37 PVT. BATTLE: Corporal Herman Johnson.
38
39 Q Is he the man who talked to you in your presence and said that
40 he was in the Italian Area on the night of August 14th, 1944?
41 PVT. BATTLE: Yes, sir.
42
43 Q He is the man who said that?
44 PVT. BATTLE: Yes, sir.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1089

(JOHNSON)

DECLASSIFIEDAuthority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

207

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Is he the same man who said in your presence that the MP took
2 a flashlight from him on the night of August 14th, 1944 while he was
3 in the Italian Area?

4 PVT. BATTLE: He is, yes, sir.

5
6 (THOMAS BATTLE is excused and leaves the room)
7

8
9 Q Herman, you have heard Private Battle's testimony that while
10 talking to some other members of the 650th and 651st you were heard
11 to say you were in the Italian Area and while there an MP took a
12 flashlight from your possession. What answer do you have to that?

13 A Sir, it is a lie. I reckon you are telling the truth, I heard
14 him.
15

16 Q But what he said is untrue?

17 A It is not true.
18

19 Q You were not in the Italian Area at all?

20 A I never was there.
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1090

(JOHNSON) (END)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Further testimony of Private Robert Mathis,
2 taken at Seattle, Washington on 27 September 1944
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5
6 The witness was reminded he was still under oath and of
7 his rights as a witness under the 24th Article of War.
8
9

10 Q Do you know Herman Johnson?

11 A Yes, sir, I know him.
12

13 Q Have you seen him here today?

14 A Yes, sir, I seen him here.
15

16 Q Were you in the stockade and present when Herman Johnson discussed
17 his part in the riot on the night of August 14th, 1944?

18 A What he said in the stockade?
19

20 Q Did you hear him say anything in the stockade?

21 A No, sir, I didn't.
22

23 Q You didn't hear Herman Johnson say anything about his part in
24 the fight on August 14th, 1944?

25 A No, sir.
26

27 Q Were you present with Battle when Herman Johnson was talking about
28 being in the fight?

29 A Was I present?
30

31 Q Yes, were you there?

32 A I haven't heard him say anything about the fight since I have
33 been knowing him.
34

35 Q The night of the fight were you in the barracks with Herman?

36 A Yes, sir.
37

38 Q Did you hear him discussing it after the fight?

39 A During the fight he was in the barracks.
40

41 Q He didn't go to the fight?

42 A No, sir, he was ironing.
43

44 Q He was ironing all the time he was there?

45 A Yes, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

209

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q You saw him all the time you were there?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Did you hear him talking about the fight after it was over?
5 A I didn't pay any attention to the fight. I haven't paid
6 any attention to what he was saying. Possibly he might have, I don't
7 know.
8
9 Q You cannot say whether he talked about the fight after it occurred
10 on the night of August 14th?
11 A I cannot.
12
13 Q Did you ever hear Herman Johnson say the MP's took a flashlight
14 from him?
15 A No, sir, not in my presence.
16
17 Q He never made such a statement in your presence?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q He never did say he lost a flashlight?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q Did you hear him say he lost a shovel?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q The night you say you were in the barracks while the fighting
27 was going on, did you hear Johnson say he was missing a shovel?
28 A I did not.
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1092

(MATHIS) (END)

210

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Testimony of Pvt. Jesse Sims, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 28 September 1944 by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7
8
9 Q State your name, rank, organization, and serial number.

10 A Private Jesse Sims, 38544875, 650th Port Company,
11 Fort Lawton.

12
13 Q Do you understand your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A I don't read nor write.

16
17 (Investigating Officer reads and explains 24th Article of War)
18

19 Q Where were you on the night of August 14th, 1944 when there
20 was a riot out at Fort Lawton wherein the colored soldiers and the
21 Italians of the 28th Italian Quartermaster Company had a fight, do you
22 remember that night?

23 A Yes, sir, I remember that night.

24
25 Q Were you present at Fort Lawton the night it happened?

26 A Yes, sir.

27
28 Q What was the first you knew about the fight?

29 A Well, the first thing I knew about the fight was they was
30 out and some boy hollered, "Let's go."
31

32 Q Where do you sleep, in barracks 719?

33 A Yes, sir.

34
35 Q Right across from Building 700, the mess hall?

36 A Yes, sir.
37

38 Q And were you in your barracks when you heard those fellows
39 holler?

40 A Yes, sir, I was upstairs shooting dice.
41

42 Q Who were you shooting dice with?

43 A Me, Willie Scott, Richard Suttliff, Stanley Bore, A. G. Joyce--
44 Jupiter, and myself.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1093

(SIMS)

211

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q When you first heard this did you go outside the building?
2 A No, sir, not right then.
3
4 Q Who came up and said, "Let's go"?
5 A We was down shooting craps, I don't know who hollered, "Let's
6 go."
7
8 Q What did he say, let's go down and mob the Italians?
9 A One of the Italians down there had been knocked out, one of
10 the boys out here.
11
12 Q And he explained further, let's go down and beat the hell out
13 of the Italians?
14 A No, he just said, "Let's go, the Italians knocked out one of
15 our boys," and they were talking about what they were going to do.
16 We kept shooting craps.
17
18 Q Now, what did the men mean who had been talking about what
19 they were going to do?
20 A I guess he meant-- well, I can't say what he meant.
21
22 Q What did you feel he meant?
23 A I can't swear what he meant, going down there and fighting
24 them, that is all I could say.
25
26 Q What time was it when you heard that, did you stop the dice
27 game?
28 A No, sir, the dice game didn't stop then.
29
30 Q How long did you stay in the dice game before you left?
31 A I would say about a minute-- I guess I might have stayed about
32 ten minutes.
33
34 Q Who left the dice game at the time when the hollering was going on?
35 A Didn't nobody leave right then.
36
37 Q They all stayed there?
38 A Yes, sir, then.
39
40 Q Later who was the first man that left the dice game?
41 A Scott, he got up, I don't know where he went.
42
43 Q Willie Scott left the dice game first?
44 A He said he got up and went home. I don't know, he came downstairs.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

194

(SIMS)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q After you started downstairs you saw some boys standing in front
2 of the buildings?
3 A Yes, sir.
4
5 Q What were they doing in front of Building 719 when you first saw
6 them?
7 A Just standing by Willie Montgomery.
8
9 Q They were all gathered around Willie Montgomery?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q What were they saying?
13 A I don't remember what they were saying.
14
15 Q Weren't there a lot of them saying they were going down and
16 beat the hell out of the Italians?
17 A I didn't hear them say that.
18
19 Q What did you hear?
20 A Mostly I heard-- there was already a gang down there.
21
22 Q Some had already gone down there?
23 A They had gone down.
24
25 Q Did you, as you stood in front of Building 719 hear noise in the
26 Italian Area at that time?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q What did you hear?
30 A Chunking.
31
32 Q Breaking out the window glass?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Did you hear any Italians screaming?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q Did you hear any colored soldiers hollering?
39 A No, sir, I never heard that.
40
41 Q Chunking against the window?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q Did it sound like individuals were being hit?
45 A No, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

213

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Where did you go then?
2 A Then I came on down into the area myself.
3
4 Q Did you see a great crowd around the mess hall across Virginia
5 Avenue from Building 719?
6 A Yes, sir, there was a great number of them.
7
8 Q What was that crowd doing?
9 A I don't know.
10
11 Q Did you go over to the crowd?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Which route did you take after leaving Building 719 to go to the
15 Italian Area?
16 A I came right from 718. I came across the road and went on
17 the left side of the mess hall and came down there.
18
19 Q You went straight down Lawton Road?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Down to the Italian Area?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Now, as you went down the road, you saw some people up and down
26 that road?
27 A Well, I seen 2 or 3 down that road. Most of them were in the
28 area at that time.
29
30 Q Two or three were going into the area?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q Who were they that you saw that you recognized?
34 A Well, I made out who they was after I got there.
35
36 Q Who were they?
37 A Willie Ellis and I can't think of his name now, he come over
38 with the company-- Freddie Simmons.
39
40 Q Did you see Sergeant Hurks?
41 A No, sir, he was already down there.
42
43 Q Then Freddie Simmons and Willie Ellis were going down Lawton Road
44 toward the Italian Area as you went down the road on the night of August
45 14th, 1944?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

196

(SIMS)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q What did Willie have in his hand as you saw him?
4 A Nothing.
5
6 Q And Simmons had nothing?
7 A He never had anything.
8
9 Q Had you picked up a club?
10 A I had a little piece of 1-by-4.
11
12 Q You had a little piece of 1-by-4?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q After you got toward the Italian Area in the rear of the mess hall,
16 about this road here, who did you see that you recognized?
17 A I didn't see anybody other than the same two.
18
19 Q Did they accompany you or did all three of you go together?
20 A No, sir, I was by myself.
21
22 Q Which way did you go after you got to the intersection of
23 Wyoming Avenue and Lawton Road?
24 A I came in- - I am just making an estimate, you know where the
25 orderly room is?
26
27 Q Yes.
28 A I came in between the latrine and here.
29
30 Q Then you came down Lawton Road until you hit Wyoming Avenue they
31 you went behind 708 and 709 by the latrine?
32 A That is where the tents were, I stopped by the tents.
33
34 Q That tent that has been knocked down?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q After you left the intersection of Lawton and Wyoming, you proceeded
38 through the Italian Area. Did you see any colored soldiers or anyone whom
39 you recognized between Building 708 and the tent where you eventually stopped?
40 A I seen one boy, I think they call him Johnnie Sanders.
41
42 Q You saw Johnnie Sanders?
43 A Richard Sanders.
44
45 Q What was Richard doing when you saw him?

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1037

(SIMS)

215

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 A He got in the jeep and ran into the tent and tore the tent down,
2 tore the side up with the jeep.
3
- 4 Q Did you see Willie Curry in the jeep?
5 A No, sir.
6
- 7 Q Then Richard Sanders got in the jeep and was driving it against
8 the tent?
9 A Yes, sir, I was looking at him.
10
- 11 Q Is Richard Sanders a noncommissioned officer or just a private?
12 A Just a private.
13
- 14 Q How many times did Richard run the jeep into the tent?
15 A I would say about 6 or 8 times back and forth.
16
- 17 Q Now, where was jeep sitting when Richard got in?
18 A The tent was right here, the jeep was standing opposite between
19 the orderly room and the tent.
20
- 21 Q Was it sitting beside another car that was covered with a white
22 cloth or white sheet?
23 A I don't think it was, I think it was sitting beside the tent.
24
- 25 Q When you first saw it?
26 A Yes, sir, I seen him get in it.
27
- 28 Q Did you at any time during the night either previous to the time
29 you saw Richard Sanders or subsequent to the time you saw Richard in the
30 jeep see anyone else in the jeep?
31 A No, sir, I never seen no one else.
32
- 33 Q How long did you stay in that area?
34 A I hadn't been in there but about maybe 10 minutes.
35
- 36 Q When you saw Richard get in the car--
37 A I just had got there.
38
- 39 Q When you first arrived near Building 713 at the point where the
40 jeep was being driven against the tent, he was in the jeep driving it
41 against the tent?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
- 44 Q He was doing that when you first arrived there?
45 A Yes, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1098

(SIMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2
- 3 Q Now, who else did you see in the vicinity of the tent as you
- 4 stood near it?
- 5 A Freddie Simmons was the only one.
- 6
- 7 Q Where did you see Freddie?
- 8 A He was standing in front, nearly about facing the orderly room.
- 9
- 10 Q In front of the tent which was across the path from you?
- 11 A Here's the tent, here is where this boy was standing and me
- 12 looking at him, Freddie was standing over here.
- 13
- 14 Q Near the other tent?
- 15 A Near the other tent.
- 16
- 17 Q What was he doing?
- 18 A Standing up.
- 19
- 20 Q Did he have a club?
- 21 A I didn't see him with no club.
- 22
- 23 Q Did you see Freddie any more that night?
- 24 A Not until we got back up there.
- 25
- 26 Q Did you talk to Freddie about what part he played in the fight?
- 27 A No, sir.
- 28
- 29 Q You never heard him say what he did?
- 30 A No, sir.
- 31
- 32 Q Who else did you see?
- 33 A David Walton.
- 34
- 35 Q What was David doing when you saw him?
- 36 A He had a club in front of the orderly room.
- 37
- 38 Q What was he doing with the club?
- 39 A Nothing then.
- 40
- 41 Q Did he have it raised over his head in his hand?
- 42 A It was in his hand.
- 43
- 44 Q What kind of a club was it?
- 45 A A little club about that long.

CONFIDENTIAL

(SIMS)

217

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 Q About 3½ or 4 feet long?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Was it a limb off a tree?
5 A Well, I don't know, I didn't get close enough to see, I don't
6 think it was a limb off a tree.
7
8 Q You think it was a board, a 2-by-4?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q Now, after you saw David Walton, who else outside did you see?
12 A Nobody else.
13
14 Q Weren't there a lot of fellows all around this building, running
15 all around while you were standing there watching them?
16 A I seen a gang running along chunking and going on.
17
18 Q You saw a lot of boys running around and the colored boys chasing
19 the Italians?
20 A I didn't see no Italians no more than in the orderly room.
21
22 Q Outside the building did you see some Italians running and some
23 colored soldiers chasing them?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q While you stood by the tent, did you see an Italian jump out of
27 Building 709?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q Did you see any Italians in the building?
31 A I ain't seen none inside that building.
32
33 Q Did you see any colored soldiers around that building?
34 A I didn't see any around there.
35
36 Q When you arrived at the scene of the fight, it all seemed to be
37 centered around the orderly room, 713?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q Then you didn't see any others outside the building other than
41 those you named whom you told me about?
42 A Those was the only ones. I don't know the names of lots of
43 guys down there.
44
45 Q To refresh your recollection, even though you didn't know them

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1100

(SIMS)

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

- 1 that night since that time while you have been in the stockade you have
2 associated the face you saw with the name.
- 3 A There was Montgomery.
4
- 5 Q Roy Montgomery?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
- 8 Q Where did you see Roy?
9 A Standing in front of the orderly room.
10
- 11 Q What did he have in his hand?
12 A A club in his hand.
13
- 14 Q Did you see Roy strike anyone?
15 A No, sir.
16
- 17 Q How long did Roy stand in front of the orderly room as you
18 watched him?
19 A He was standing there, then he had his hand drawn up and hollering
20 for the boys to stop, "Let's see what the American soldiers have to
21 say," that is what he said.
22
- 23 Q Who else did you see outside the building that you can
24 associate the face with the name you subsequently learned?
25 A There is not any more, because I didn't know their names.
26
- 27 Q That was all that was on the outside?
28 A Yes, sir, the other guys, after they went to the company here,
29 I could possibly recognize lots of them by their face.
30
- 31 Q A lot of fellows you saw that night, you don't know their names,
32 but if you see them again you can recognize their faces and point them out?
33 A Yes, sir. I told you about Booker Thornton.
34
- 35 Q Where did you see Booker?
36 A I didn't see him in the area at the time, but when I was going
37 back out after the MP's came and made them leave, I had been there just
38 about 10 minutes before the MP's came and I met Booker Thornton and he
39 said he knew he knocked hell out of one twice.
40 Q What did Booker say he hit him with, a club?
41 A A club.
42
- 43 Q Did he say what kind of a fellow he hit?
44 A Italian.
45

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(SIMS)

219

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

1 Q Did he say where he hit him?
2 A No, sir, I don't think it was inside the building.
3
4 Q Booker Thornton told you he knocked hell out of a couple of
5 Italians?
6 A He knocked hell out of one twice.
7
8 Q Did Booker still have his club with him as he walked out of the
9 area?
10 A I don't know whether he did or not, but I think he did.
11
12 Q Did he show you the club he said he used?
13 A No, sir, he didn't show it to me.
14
15 Q You didn't see him throw his club down?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q Did you see John Lee Hamilton down there that night?
19 A I believe I seen him go in the orderly room.
20
21 Q With a club in his hand as he entered the orderly room?
22 A I never paid any attention when I seen him go in there.
23
24 Q Did you see him after he got inside the orderly room?
25 A No, sir, I never did see him after that.
26
27 Q Did you see him after he came out?
28 A When he came back to the barracks.
29
30 Q Did you talk to John about the part he played while he was down
31 there?
32 A No, sir, I didn't.
33
34 Q After you observed what was going on outside the building
35 as you stood near the orderly room, what did you see going on inside the
36 building?
37 A Nothing inside the building, but they were chunking, still
38 chunking going on inside the orderly room.
39
40 Q These colored soldiers were using their clubs?
41 A Chunking.
42
43 Q Throwing rocks, hitting them over the head, and chunking them
44 with clubs?
45 A Yes, sir.

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(SIMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Could you see inside the building?
2 A Yes, sir, from where I was standing I could see inside the
3 orderly room window.
4
5 Q What were they doing in there? Who did you see inside the
6 orderly room?
7 A I don't remember--- what do you mean, the colored soldiers?
8
9 Q Yes.
10 A I don't remember seeing anyone of them in there right then.
11
12 Q You saw them later?
13 A I saw them later.
14
15 Q Who did you see inside the building right then you recognized?
16 A I would be scared to say.
17
18 Q There is no use being scared to say. All I want are the boys you
19 saw.
20 A That is what I am trying to get now, trying to be sure. It seems
21 like Willie Ellis went in there.
22
23 Q What did you see Willie Ellis doing inside the building?
24 A I think when he went in he wasn't doing anything but getting
25 sticks, rocks, and things.
26
27 Q Just throwing rocks and sticks through the windows?
28 A Yes, sir. I don't know, but they told me the MP's told them
29 to go in there and bring them out of there, but I know some of them
30 did go in but they didn't bring none of them out while I was standing
31 there.
32
33 Q You say you had about a 1-by-4?
34 A That is exactly what I had.
35
36 Q Do you recall any colored soldiers who were part of the group--
37 A Well, this is when they hollered and they all left from up there
38 that tore down the little fence.
39
40 Q Who suggested they get clubs there?
41 A That is what I don't know.
42
43 Q Was it Sergeant Hurks?
44 A He hollered, "Come on, let's go," and he was the first man that
45 grabbed a club, he was the first one that tore the fence down and the rest
taken out behind him and grabbed pieces of board.

CONFIDENTIAL

221

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Sergeant Hurks was the first one to grab a board and holler
2 "come on, let's go?"
3 A Yes, sir, but some of them had gone on down and used rocks.
4
5 Q So that the first group went down. Who was the leader of that group?
6 A I don't know.
7
8 Q Weren't you out there?
9 A No, sir, I wasn't, I was coming downstairs when I seen the first
10 group.
11
12 Q About what time did you arrive, about the time Sergeant Hurks
13 led his group down there?
14 A He led his group down and I came behind when I went to see this
15 boy knocked out.
16
17 Q After you came out the door and got in the big crowd, you heard
18 Sergeant Hurks say, "Come on, let's go", and started out with a club?
19 A When I came down from upstairs there was some following Hurks,
20 some had gone down, I could see them going down.
21
22 Q Hurks was leading a group of his own down there?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Did any others leave between the time Hurks left and when you
26 went?
27 A I don't remember seeing any.
28
29 Q Did you hear any whistle being blown around there that night?
30 A I remember hearing one whistle, I don't know if the MP blowed
31 it.
32
33 Q Did you hear a whistle that night?
34 A I wouldn't say-- I heard Sergeant Hurks say, "Come on, let's go,"
35 and I heard Jupiter say he wanted a whistle, then I heard a whistle,
36 in the meantime is when the MP's came.
37
38 Q Let's go back to the orderly room again. I hand you Exhibit C
39 and ask you to point out to me where you saw the colored soldiers inside
40 the Building 713 that you recognized?
41 A Well, Willie was going in this side door.
42
43 Q Willie Ellis came in Door E?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1104

(SIMS)

222

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Where did he go?
2 A He came on through the big room.
3
4 Q Room X?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Who else did you see there?
8 A Without making no mistake, I think I seen Freddie Simmons.
9
10 Q He also went in Door into Room X?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q What did Freddie have in his hand?
14 A I don't know, he might have had a club in his hand, at least,
15 I figured he had something.
16
17 Q You saw something in his hand?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q You don't know what it was, a club or a shovel or what he had?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q Where did you see Mathis?
24 A Mathis-- what Mathis are you talking about?
25
26 Q The Mathis out there with you, Robert.
27 A I don't remember seeing him down there.
28
29 Q Didn't you see Robert Mathis?
30 A No, sir.
31
32 Q Didn't you see him chopping the door down?
33 A No, sir, I didn't see him.
34
35 Q Johnnie Lee Hamilton, did you see him?
36 A I think he came on through.
37
38 Q John Lee Hamilton went through Door E?
39 A I think he did, he came in the front door, I believe he came
40 in the front door.
41
42 Q John Lee Hamilton went into the front door into Room X through Door
43 D?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

105

(SIMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What did John Lee Hamilton have when you saw him?
2 A I think he had a club too.
3
4 Q Did you see John Lee Hamilton hit any Italians?
5 A I ain't seen nobody hit after I came in this room.
6
7 Q Where did you see them hit them first, where was the first fellow
8 you saw hit an Italian?
9 A It was there at the window.
10
11 Q At this window?
12 A There was a rock chunked in this window and hit here.
13
14 Q Who threw that rock?
15 A I don't know who did.
16
17 Q Who did you see throwing in the window, you know who it was that
18 was throwing?
19 A I don't know their names.
20
21 Q And you saw somebody on the outside throw a rock and hit a
22 man right in the right eye?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q And this man was inside Room Y when he was hit?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q And the rock was thrown through the window that goes into the
29 room?
30 A Near the door.
31
32 Q And you saw him throw it?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Who was among that group around the window?
36 A I am not certain, I can't call all the names, but it was,
37 I believe, Sergeant Gresham, he was in that group and there was some
38 boys out of the other company.
39
40 Q Who else besides Gresham did you see at that window?
41 A I wouldn't be so sure but I think I seen a lad by the name
42 of Nathaniel Spencer.
43
44 Q Where do you think you saw Nathaniel, in the group standing
45 by the window of Room Y?

CONFIDENTIAL

1136

(SIMS)

224

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q Who else?
4 A There was one, his name is down here too, he was the one that
5 blew the whistle.
6
7 Q Larkin?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q You saw Larkin standing at the window?
11 A I saw him go in there, he was in the room when I saw him.
12
13 Q What did he have in his hand when you saw him go in the
14 room?
15 Aq I don't know what-- a knife, it looked about that long.
16
17 Q It looked like a knife?
18 A I cannot say what kind of a knife it was, but it looked like a
19 knife placed in a scabbard, I can't tell you much about it.
20
21 Q Anyway, it looked like a knife?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q Which door did Larkin go in when you first saw him, through
25 Door E or A?
26 A When I seen him he was standing up.
27
28 Q In Room R?
29 A Yes, sir, I don't know what way he got in.
30
31 Q Did you see Larkin go on into Room X?
32 A He came on through this room here.
33
34 Q Into Room X, you observed him go in that room?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Did you see Larkin after he got in this room?
38 A Yes, sir, I saw him standing up in this room.
39
40 Q What was he doing?
41 A Just standing up.
42
43 Q Did he have a knife?
44 A Whatever it was he had it.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1107

(SIMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did he ever draw it back or did he just carry it in his hand?
2 A I didn't see him with it drawn back.
3
4 Q You saw him when he had it in his hand?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Who else did you see?
8 A Nathaniel Spencer.
9
10 Q You named him.
11 A Yes, sir. I think Sergeant Palmer, I ain't sure.
12
13 Q Where do you think you saw Sergeant Palmer?
14 A There in that group.
15
16 Q In the group looking into the window of Room Y?
17 A That is right.
18
19 Q Did you see Ceaser?
20 A It seems like I saw Ceaser, I think I did.
21
22 Q Where did you see John Ceaser?
23 A I believe he was standing there in that place.
24
25 Q In this door?
26 A Around in this bunch.
27
28 Q In this bunch by Room Y?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q What did John have in his hand?
32 A I cannot say, I don't know.
33
34 Q A club, didn't he?
35 A A club-- I can't say if he had a club or a knife.
36
37 Q But he had something?
38 A He had something.
39
40 Q Was John the one that threw the rock through the window and hit
41 the fellow in the eye?
42 A I don't know who it was.
43
44 Q But he was one of that group you have named that stood at that
45 window and who threw and hit the man?
A Yes, sir, and Chandler.

CONFIDENTIAL

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Chandler?
2 A I believe I saw Chandler.
3
4 Q Where did you first see Chandler?
5 A In this door then he comes in here.
6
7 Q Chandler went through Door E and entered Room X then come into
8 Room Y?
9 A Yes, sir, he was getting-- what do you call those things that
10 had legs and sits on the corners with little prongs on it?
11
12 Q Butt can holders?
13 A No, sir, I don't think so.
14
15 Q You mean it had legs?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q You didn't see hit hit anyone?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q Are you sure you saw him all the time?
22 A Yes, sir, until he came back in here.
23
24 Q I show you a 2-by-2 which is about $4\frac{1}{2}$ feet long and ask you if
25 that is the board that you saw Chandler pick up while he was in Room
26 Y and take it through Door C into Room X?
27 A It was built like that, but it didn't have no platform on
28 it, it was built this way.
29
30 Q It was a 2-by-4 of white color and about that long?
31 A I don't know whether it was white, but it was about that tall,
32 it was a hat rack or a coat rack or whatever you might call the thing.
33
34 Q How about this?
35 A This is what I seen, a hat rack, it was similar to that.
36
37 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Let the record show the witness was shown
38 a 2-by-2 which the witness identified as being similar to the object
39 picked up by Chandler as the witness observed him in Room Y, and it was
40 carried out of Room Y in the hands of Chandler into Room X on the night
41 of August 14th, 1944.)
42
43 Q Who else did you see down there? Did you see Roy Daymond?
44 Was he in the group that stood by Room Y and looked into the window?
45 A I think he was in that group, he was in the group that stood

CONFIDENTIAL

(SIMS)

227

CONFIDENTIAL

1 by the window that leads into Room Y when I first observed Roy.

2

3 Q Where else did you see him that night in the area?

4 A After I seen him he left and I didn't see him until I came
5 back in the barracks.

6

7 Q You didn't see him any more in the area?

8 A No, sir.

9

10 Q Did you see Walter Jackson?

11 A Yes, sir.

12

13 Q Where was he?

14 A By the window.

15

16 Q With the group you named by the window and many of them were
17 throwing in the window as you watched them?

18 A Yes, sir, many of them.

19

20 Q Which one hit the Italian in the eye?

21 A I cannot say.

22

23 Q But you did see a whole group throwing and you saw one rock hit
24 an Italian in the right eye?

25 A I don't know whether it was the right eye, but it was up here.

26

27 Q It was on the Forehead?

28 A Yes, sir.

29

30 Q Did you see Johnson, George L. Johnson?

31 A As far as I know, I am telling you what I heard. I heard that
32 William G. Jones, Roy Daymond, and Walter Jackson and this Montgomery,
33 William Montgomery, I heard that he was the one that started the fight.

34

35 Q Up around Building 700 they were when they started the fight with
36 the whole bunch?

37 A Yes, sir.

38

39 Q When you were shooting crap and someone came up and hollered
40 for everyone to go out that there was a fight going on, that. That man
41 was who, the man that made that statement?

42 A William G. Jones.

43

44 Q Did you see Luther Larkin up there about that time looking for
45 a whistle?

CONFIDENTIAL

(SIMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Ye was up there too.
2
3 Q At the same time Jones was?
4 A I think Luther Larkin came up and this-- I don't remember Roy
5 Daymond, but I do Luther Larkin and William G. Jones.
6
7 Q Both were saying for everybody to get out in the fight?
8 A Yes, sir. Luther I know has a whistle.
9
10 Q He did get a whistle?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q Did he say what he was going to do with the whistle?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q He left with the whistle?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Did you hear the whistle after he went outside?
20 A No, sir, I wasn't paying much attention whether he was going to
21 blow the whistle or not.
22
23 Q You don't know if he blew it or was going to blow it?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q He was going to turn out the company and they were going down
27 and beat the hell out of the Italians and that is what he wanted the
28 whistle for?
29 A I figured that was what was going to happen. One of the Italians
30 was waiting up here and he had a knife and he said he intended to catch
31 him and cut him and one of the boys came up behind him, I don't know
32 who that was, but this boy hits the Italian over the head.
33
34 Q Who were you talking about?
35 A I heard one of the boys say it.
36
37 Q Who?
38 A David Walton, I believe.
39
40 Q David said he was inside Room X?
41 A Yes, sir, but I remember seeing him go in here.
42
43 Q David Walton came through Door A?
44 A He was standing in this room.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

111

(SIMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You saw Walton enter Door A and he was in the isle between
2 Door A and D?
3 A Yes, sir.
4
5 Q Did he go into Room X?
6 A He came into this room.
7
8 Q Did you see what Walton did after he got in there?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q Later after the fight was over you talked to Walton?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Did you hear Walton talking to someone else about what he saw
15 while he was in that room?
16 A He said if he hadn't hit one of the Italians he reckoned he
17 would have killed this Roy Montgomery.
18
19 Q Why did he figure if he hadn't hit him he would have killed
20 Roy Montgomery?
21 A I don't know.
22
23 Q Tell me the reason why he felt he saved Roy Montgomery's life?
24 A When he was standing out here he said the Italian jumped off
25 the desk and when he jumped off the desk he said he jumped and grabbed
26 this boy.
27
28 Q Montgomery?
29 A Yes, sir, and I don't know whether he knew he had a knife, he
30 said he saved this boy's life, he never did see what the Italian had.
31
32 Q Do you know William Howard?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q What was he doing?
36 A He was down there battling.
37
38 Q In the orderly room?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q What did he have, a big club or a knife?
42 A A club, that is all I know.
43
44 Q Did you see him hit some of them?
45 A I seen him when he went in.

CONFIDENTIAL

1112

(SIMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Which door did he go in?
2 A This first one.
3
4 Q Door A into Room X through Door D?
5 A Yes, sir, in here.
6
7 Q Did you see him after he got into Room X?
8 A No, sir, I never did see him after he got in here.
9
10 Q Did you see Hurks doing any chunking?
11 A I couldn't swear what he was doing.
12
13 Q He was there chunking?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Did you see C. W. Spencer?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q What was he doing when you saw him?
20 A I think he was in the back, I think he was in the chunking.
21
22 Q Did you see Spencer throw any rocks himself?
23 A He was in the bunch, whether he threw any I don't know, I know
24 there was a million rocks going in there.
25
26 Q Did you see Manual Ford?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q Did you see Corporal Manual Ford in the Italian Area on the
30 night of August 14th, 1944?
31 A He was down there.
32
33 Q What was he doing?
34 A Sir, I don't know what he done or what he was doing, he was
35 down there, I know that I remember seeing him.
36
37 Q What did he say he had done?
38 A I don't remember him saying he had done anything.
39
40 Q Luther Larkin?
41 A Yes, sir, he was there.
42
43 Q What was Luther Larkin doing when you saw him in the Italian Area
44 on the night of August 14th, 1944? Did he have a knife down there?
45 A I believe he did.

CONFIDENTIAL

1113

(SIMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did you see him with a knife?
2 A No, sir, I didn't see him with any knife at all.
3
4 Q Riley L. Buckner, where did you see Riley the first time on
5 the night of August 14th, 1944 in the Italian Area?
6 A Right around this spot.
7
8 Q Standing in the vicinity of the tent?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q What was he doing when you first saw him?
12 A He wasn't doing anything, just standing there.
13
14 Q Did he have a club?
15 A Practically everybody had a club.
16
17 Q Then Riley had a club?
18 A I would say he had a club, practically everyone did that went
19 down there.
20
21 Q Did you see Riley beat up anybody down there?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q William Cunningham, did you see him on the night of August 14th,
25 1944?
26 A I seen him when he was on the way coming back.
27
28 Q What was he doing?
29 A Coming back out.
30
31 Q Did he have a club in his hand?
32 A I don't remember seeing any.
33
34 Q Did he say anything about what he had done?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q But you did see him coming out on the night of August 14th
38 after the fight was over?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q Arthur Stone, where did you see him on the night of August 14th,
42 1944 while you were in the Italian Area?
43 A He was standing opposite the house.
44
45 Q Opposite here?

CONFIDENTIAL

232

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q He was looking into Room R, looking through the window?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q What was he doing?
7 A Standing there.
8
9 Q Did he have a club in his hand?
10 A I don't remember if he had anything in his hand. There were
11 lots of them possibly down there that didn't have anything, just standing
12 and looking.
13
14 Q Richard Barber, where did you see him on the night of August 14th,
15 1944 during the riot?
16 A He was down there because I heard him say something about it when
17 he come back, but he didn't say what he done.
18
19 Q You saw him as he was coming back?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Where did you see him after you left the area of the road?
23 A He was in the barracks when I got back up there.
24
25 Q Did he bring his club back with him?
26 A I didn't see him with no club.
27
28 Q Did he say what he had done?
29 A He was -- he said he knocked the devil out of one of them, I am
30 not sure, but I believe he was talking about something he had done.
31
32 Q He said he had knocked the devil out of a couple of them?
33 A He was down there since I got to thinking of it.
34
35 Q Curtis Bibb, where did you see him on the night of August 14th,
36 1944?
37 A Sir, I ain't for sure whether he was down there, but I think he
38 he was.
39
40 Q Where do you think you saw him?
41 A By the bunch doing all the chunking.
42
43 Q By the window in Room Y?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1115

(SIMS)

233

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Frank Hughes, where did you see him in the Italian Area?
2 A Frank comes in this house.
3
4 Q Inside the building?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q What did Frank have in his hand?
8 A A club.
9
10 Q Did you see him hit anyone after he came inside the building?
11 A No, sir, but when he came out he said he beat the hell out of
12 one.
13
14 Q Frank told you after you saw him come out of Building 713 on
15 the night of August 14th that he had beat the hell out of somebody inside?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q He had a club in his hand when he entered the building?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q Did you ever see Frank any more that night?
22 A I seen him when he came back to the barracks.
23
24 Q Did you have any conversation with him when he came back to the
25 barracks?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q Did you hear him talk about what he had done down there when he
29 came back to the barracks?
30 A When he was coming out.
31
32 Q Did Walter Jackson accompany Luther Larkin and William G. Jones
33 to Barracks 719 and assist them in summoning the members of that
34 barracks to come outside and join in the fight?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q What did Walter say to the boys in Barracks 719?
38 A I never did hear him say anything more than he knocked one of
39 the boys out.
40
41 Q Did he say, come on out, let's go get them?
42 A No, sir, I never did hear that.
43
44 Q You didn't see him any more that night?
45 A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1116

(SIMS)

234

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Loary Moore, did you see him on the night of August 14th, 1944?
2 A Yes, sir, he was there.
3
4 Q In the vicinity of the tents?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q What did Moore have in his hand?
8 A They all left out with clubs, that is what I seen, clubs.
9
10 Q You saw him leave the vicinity of Building 700?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q And go to the Italian Area?
14 A Away from 719.
15
16 Q And he had a club then?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Then you saw him again in the Italian Area standing around
20 near the tents?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q And he still had a club?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q Did you see Moore with anybody?
27 A No, sir, I didn't see him with anyone.
28
29 Q Now, after you stood in the vicinity of Building 713 and saw all
30 these people whom you have named, where did you go?
31 A After I left from down here in the Italian Area?
32
33 Q No while standing by the tents, where did you go?
34 A I stayed right there and when I left from there I came back up
35 to the barracks, 719.
36
37 Q When you left the area of Building 713, what caused you to
38 leave that area?
39 A That is when the MP's had met down there.
40
41 Q When the MP's arrived you left the area?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q Where did you see the first MP arrive?
45 A I was standing here and the MP's came in here on Wyoming Avenue

CONFIDENTIAL

(SIMS)

235

CONFIDENTIAL

1 to this little spot right here and I leaves from here and they came through
2 and stopped and a whistle blew and they came through here.

3
4 Q All the colored boys started to come up toward Building 719?

5 A Yes, sir, toward 719, some went on this side of the mess hall
6 and some went across the street.

7
8 Q Some went across Wyoming Avenue in between Building 700 and some
9 went back up Lawton Road, to the intersection of Lawton Road and Virginia
10 Avenue?

11 A Yes, sir.

12
13 Q Which way did you go?

14 A I came straight across.

15
16 Q You came out of the Italian Area behind Building 709 and 708
17 up the steps?

18 A Right straight up the steps.

19
20 Q And passed between Building 701 and 700 and back to Barracks 719?

21 A Yes, sir.

22
23 Q When you arrived back at 719, what happened there?

24 A When I got back there, there was a gang standing there, there
25 was 2 or 3 MP's standing together.

26
27 Q What did the MP's say to you boys when they were standing in
28 front of Building 719?

29 A They told them to go in and lay down and go to bed. Some of them
30 still stayed there and they told them not to go back in there.

31
32 Q Did you hear one of the MP's talking to Sergeant Hurks in front
33 of Building 719?

34 A Yes, sir, I believe I did.

35
36 Q Do you know who that MP was?

37 A No, sir, I don't know, but I heard him say he was from Texas.

38
39 Q What did he say to Sergeant Hurks?

40 A Nothing, except Hurks asked him where he was from.

41
42 Q And he said he was from Texas?

43 A Yes, sir.

44
45 Q Was he a pretty good sized fellow?

CONFIDENTIAL

-113

(SIMS)

236

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A No, sir, he was a long slender fellow.
- 2
- 3 Q Did he have long sideburns?
- 4 A No, sir.
- 5
- 6 Q How many MP's were talking to the crowd in front of Building
7 719?
- 8 A I didn't see but about two.
- 9
- 10 Q Did you hear some MP say to Sergeant Hurks, " You boys did a good
11 job and saved us from having to do it."
- 12 A Now, I am not sure of that. I heard some of them say the MP's
13 said that, but I didn't hear it.
- 14
- 15 Q You didn't hear it yourself?
- 16 A No, sir.
- 17
- 18 Q All you heard the MP's say was to go back in the barracks and
19 go to sleep?
- 20 A Yes, sir.
- 21
- 22 Q Did you go back in the barracks?
- 23 A I went in and went to bed.
- 24
- 25 Q Did you go to sleep?
- 26 A I must have, I didn't wake up until the next morning.
- 27
- 28 Q After you went to bed did any officers or any MP's come into the
29 barracks?
- 30 A There was one MP and I don't know whether it was a Major or a
31 Lieutenant, the two of them came in and got this Willie Montgomery and
32 the MP packed him out and put him-- put him in a jeep and taken him to
33 the hospital.
- 34
- 35 Q Do you know where Willie had been before he went to bed that
36 night?
- 37 A I don't know.
- 38
- 39 Q While you were in the Italian Area on the night of August 14th,
40 1944, did you see any colored soldiers grab hold of an Italian and drag
41 him toward the woods?
- 42 A No, sir.
- 43
- 44 Q Are you sure you didn't?
- 45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

113

(SIMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you see any Italians run from out of the area into the
2 woods?
3 A I didn't see none of them run out.
4
5 Q Did you see one come out of the orderly room being chased by
6 another colored soldier?
7 A No, sir, I ain't seen that.
8
9 Q Who did this hanging?
10 A I don't know, sir.
11
12 Q Do you have any idea?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q Did you hear anybody talking about it?
16 A Not until the next morning, I heard Pinckney say he found a man
17 hung.
18
19 Q What did the boys say?
20 A I ain't heard none say nothing.
21
22 Q You didn't hear them say anything?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q Now, since you have been in the guard house haven't you heard
26 them talking about it?
27 A No, sir, I don't know who could have did it. Some of them figure
28 it was suicide and some figure-- I heard an Italian, he was in the
29 guard house and I heard him say how come they didn't get the white boys
30 in there.
31
32 Q In the hanging?
33 A No, that was in the riot.
34
35 Q You didn't see any white boys?
36 A Only the MP, that is what I seen there.
37
38 Q Did you hit anyone?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q You did have a club?
42 A Yes, sir, a 1-by-4.
43
44 Q You had a piece of board 1-by-4 by 3 feet long?
45 A Just about.

CONFIDENTIAL

1120

(SIMS)

238

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And you didn't hit anyone?
2 A I never hit a man.
3
4 Q You just stood there?
5 A Just stood there.
6
7 Q You didn't find it necessary to tap one a little bit?
8 A There wasn't no use of me getting in there, the Italians and the
9 colored boys were all fighting and I ain't seen none of them come out.
10
11 Q You weren't in the orderly room?
12 A I never was in there, I was standing on the outside.
13
14 Q None of them came running by you?
15 A No, sir, I ain't seen none of them come out.
16
17 Q None of them got in your way in other words?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q You didn't have the opportunity to hit anyone?
21 A If he came by and didn't bother me, I would be standing looking
22 at him but if he tried to hit me I may have hit him. I was standing
23 down there looking.
24
25 Q Now, since the fight and while you have been in the guard house
26 you have heard them talking about this?
27 A No, sir, I haven't.
28
29 Q The boys don't talk about this thing?
30 A They ain't been talking.
31
32 Q Do you have anything else you would like to add to your
33 testimony?
34 A No, sir.
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1121

(SIMS) (END)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of T/5 Willie S. Curry, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 28 September 1944 by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4
5

6 The witness was sworn.
7

8
9 Q State your name, serial number, and organization.

10 A T/5 Willie S. Curry, 18209465, 651st Port Company, Fort Lawton,
11 Washington.

12
13 Q Do you understand your rights as a witness under the 24th Article
14 of War?

15 A Yes, sir.
16

17 Q Do you remember the night of August 14th, 1944 when there was
18 a fight between the Italian soldiers and the colored soldiers at Fort
19 Lawton?

20 A Yes, sir.
21

22 Q Where were you that night about 10:30?

23 A I don't know exactly what time it was the first sergeant called
24 me over to the orderly room, I went over there, me and another soldier
25 and we were standing in there and we heard a brick hit the side of the
26 orderly room and I put on my hat and went out the door and I heard the
27 boys hollering that there is a fight down there and I said--
28

29 Q Who did you hear hollering down there?

30 A I don't know, it was dark and there was so many hollering.
31

32 Q Did you hear Larkin say that?

33 A No, sir.
34

35 Q Did you hear Jones?

36 A No, sir.
37

38 Q Now, after you heard the hollering about the fight you went out?

39 A Yes, sir.
40

41 Q What barracks were you in when you heard that?

42 A In the orderly room.
43

44 Q What building is that?

45 A 670.

CONFIDENTIAL

1122

(CURRY)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You were in Building 670?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q While you were in there you heard someone holler there was a fight?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q And you came out of the building?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Which way did you go?
11 A I went down here.
12
13 Q Now, did you go over to the mess hall, the 578th or did you go
14 straight to the Italian Area?
15 A I went down there first, I heard some talking after everything
16 was over.
17
18 Q You went in the Italian Area and did not go up toward the mess
19 hall?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q When you started through the area after you left Building 670, who
23 went with you?
24 A I don't know, one boy from the 650th.
25
26 Q Out of the 651st who went with you?
27 A I don't know the boy by name.
28
29 Q When you went from Building 670 toward the Italian Area who went
30 with you?
31 A I don't know the name of the boy that went with me.
32
33 Q Where did you first pick up your club?
34 A It was after I came out of the orderly room.
35
36 Q After you got up to the 670th area you picked up the club?
37 A No, sir, after I got down in the Italian Area.
38
39 Q After you got down in the Italian Area?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q What kind of a club did you get?
43 A It was something like that.
44
45 Q This club.

CONFIDENTIAL

241

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir, but it didn't have no ends, someone had knocked them
2 off.

3
4 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Let the record show when the witness got
5 to the Italian Area he picked up a 2-by-2 which was somewhat similar
6 to the one shown him. The one that he saw is a stick 4 feet long and made
7 up of a piece of lumber known as a 2-by-2.)
8

9 Q After you picked up your club, where did you go in the Italian
10 Area?

11 A Well, the first thing that happened after I got it, I picked up
12 the club. When I first got there this boy was trying to get a jeep started.

13
14 Q So after you entered the Italian Area the first man you saw was the
15 man in the jeep; is that right?

16 A Well, he is from the 650th, I don't know him.

17
18 Q Was that the first man you saw?

19 A The first man I saw in the Italian Area was the man in the jeep.

20
21 Q Do you know the name of the man whom you saw in the jeep?

22 A No, sir, he is from the 650th.

23
24 Q Are you sure the first colored soldier you saw after you entered
25 the Italian Area was the man in the jeep?

26 A Yes, sir. He came around this way and he was in the jeep and I
27 came up between the barracks and the orderly room.

28
29 Q You came up to the Italian Area between 713 and 709?

30 A Yes, sir.

31
32 Q And you saw the jeep there with a man in it?

33 A Yes, sir.

34
35 Q What was the man doing in the jeep, trying to start the jeep?

36 A He got it started but the motor went dead and he got out.

37
38 Q Why did he get out of the jeep?

39 A I don't know.

40
41 Q Did someone ask him to get out?

42 A No, sir.

43
44 Q Did anyone get in the jeep?

45 A We got in.

CONFIDENTIAL

124

(CURRY)

242

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q What did you do?
2 A Well, the boy, I don't know who it was there were so many and
3 I had never been in the company more than about 2½ weeks, I got transferred,
4 so I just run this way, I run inside, I run into the corner.
5
6 Q You took the jeep and drove it into the corner of the tent.
7 Did you see anyone in there?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Did you knock the tent down?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Did you break the side of the tent down?
14 A No, sir, I mean yes, sir, just one post.
15
16 Q You broke one post?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Did you drive the jeep into the tent so the wheels were on the
20 tent floor?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q How many times did you drive the jeep against the tent?
24 A Two or three times.
25
26 Q Did you tear the tent?
27 A I don't know, I don't think I looked at it.
28
29 Q But when you stopped driving the jeep against the tent you had
30 succeeded in knocking part of the frame down?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q You had knocked one post of the frame down and the tent had
34 fallen in, part of the tent had fallen in?
35 A Yes, sir, one corner.
36
37 Q Did you get out of the jeep then?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q Where did you go after you got out of the jeep?
41 A Inside the orderly room.
42
43 Q Did anyone ask you to get out of the jeep?
44 A I just got out.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

125

(CURRY)

243

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q When you got out did you pick up your club again?
2 A You asked me where I got the club. After I come out of the
3 orderly room I did.
4
5 Q At the time you were driving the jeep you had not picked up the
6 club?
7 A No, sir.
8
9 Q When you left the vicinity of the tent after driving the jeep
10 into the tent you went in the orderly room?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q Before we go into the orderly room I want to find out who you
14 saw out in the vicinity here where you were driving the jeep?
15 A Well, I knowed one corporal, his name is Corporal King.
16
17 Q Where did you see Corporal King?
18 A Standing up on the little old porch.
19
20 Q What was King doing when you saw him?
21 A Standing up.
22
23 Q King had a club?
24 A No, sir, I didn't see it if he did.
25
26 Q Did he have anything in his hand that you noticed?
27 A No, sir.
28
29 Q What was King saying when you first saw him?
30 A Nothing.
31
32 Q Did you hear King admonish the boys who were there to stop fighting?
33 A That was after he had been running all the fellows out of the
34 orderly room.
35
36 Q But at the time you first saw King he wasn't trying to stop
37 the fellows that were getting into the orderly room?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q Before you went up to the door, who did you see out there
41 besides King that you knew?
42 A I don't know, I didn't see anyone I knew.
43
44 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, did you see Roy Daymond in
45 the Italian Area?
A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

126

(CURRY)

244

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Where did you see Roy in the Italian Area on that date?
2 A I can't tell you where it was, it was somewhere along after that.
3 That is when I picked up my stick.
4
5 Q That is when you saw Roy?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q It was somewhere in the vicinity of Door E?
9 A Roy was around here.
10
11 Q I mean this man you named, this Roy Daymond was somewhere in
12 the vicinity?
13 A I don't know whether it was on this side, we was running
14 around here.
15
16 Q But you did see Daymond in the vicinity of Building 713 on the
17 night of August 14th, 1944?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q What did Roy have in his hand when you first saw him?
21 A Bricks or something.
22
23 Q Did you see him throwing bricks through the window at individuals
24 in the building who were there?
25 A It was around the outside if it wasn't around on this side.
26
27 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 when you first saw Roy Daymond, he w
28 standing on the north side of Building 713 near the window that leads from
29 Room R with bricks in his hand or getting ready to throw at Italians jumping
30 through the first window that goes from Room R to the outside, is that
31 right?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q Did you see Roy as he was there with the bricks in his hands in
35 the Italian Area?
36 A I seen him standing there.
37
38 Q Did you see him throwing any of them?
39 A I don't know, I am sure all of them was throwed.
40
41 Q Did you see Roy throwing at that time?
42 A I don't guess I did.
43
44 Q Do you think Roy threw the rocks at the Italians as they jumped
45 out of the window and ran?

CONFIDENTIAL

-127

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

245

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q Who else outside the building did you see?
4 A I saw Herman Johnson.
5
6 Q Where did you see Herman Johnson on the night of August 14th, 1944?
7 A In the rear of Building 708.
8
9 Q What was Herman doing there?
10 A He was knocking on the door and the white MP came up and gave
11 Herman a flashlight and told him to go in the building.
12
13 Q Did Herman Johnson take the flashlight?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Did he go in the building?
17 A He came through the front.
18
19 Q You in the meantime had gone around the building?
20 A Yes, sir, when he told him to go in and bring them out the
21 barracks was dark and me and Murray-- I don't know the soldier--
22
23 Q You and Murray went around and came in the back way?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q And Herman Johnson came in the front way?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q After you got in you found the Italians?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q What did you do?
33 A I still had my stick.
34
35 Q You had one of the sticks and you hit one of them in there?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q Did you see Herman Johnson hit any of them?
39 A I don't know what he had in his hand, but he was hitting them with
40 something.
41
42 Q You don't know what he had in his hand, but he was hitting them
43 with something?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1128

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

246

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q How many did you see Herman flash the light on under the beds
2 and tell to get out from under there?
3 A They was under the beds and under the covers everywhere.
4
5 Q And you hit everyone you saw?
6 A When he had one in the flashlight I did.
7
8 Q And Herman hit them too?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q Were the Italians hollering?
12 A I don't know, they was hollering "Mama".
13
14 Q Those Italians you hit hollered, "Mama"?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q Who else came in with Herman from the front door?
18 A I didn't see anybody else in the barracks.
19
20 Q Murray was in there with you with his club?
21 A He didn't have a club.
22
23 Q What was he hitting them with?
24 A He was down on them beating them first with a shoe, and his fist.
25
26 Q Murray used his fist and a shoe?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q Did he hit them on the head?
30 A I don't know.
31
32 Q And after that you could see Herman hitting them?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q What was he hitting them with?
36 A I don't know.
37
38 Q He had something you saw?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q What were the MP's doing at that time?
42 A Standing up out there.
43
44 Q Did they hear you hit them?
45 A They didn't say nothing. We brought them out and another one came
up in a jeep.

CONFIDENTIAL

1129

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

246247

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q How long did you stay in the room beating up the Italians?
2 A Seven or eight minutes.
3
4 Q How many did you find in there?
5 A About 15 or 20 I guess.
6
7 Q And you hit everyone you found?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Did you try to kill any of them?
11 A No, sir, we wasn't trying to kill them, we were trying to hit them
12 and the only light was a flashlight and you couldn't see so many.
13
14
15 Q You couldn't see which one to hit until Herman turned the
16 flashlight on them?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Did they run out?
20 A Yes, sir, some were on the floor.
21
22 Q Those on the floor were beat worse than the rest?
23 A Yes, sir, some got up and ran out.
24
25 Q They did run out?
26 A Yes, sir, they got out if they could run past us.
27
28 Q You would fight them?
29 A They had to get past us, the ones that was lucky.
30
31 Q If they got by one the next man would catch him?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q With the 15 Italians in there, weren't you afraid they would gang
35 up and beat you up?
36 A No, sir, I wasn't scared myself. They was running and I guess they
37 wanted to fight.
38
39 Q They weren't fighting very hard?
40 A They were battling a little bit.
41
42 Q You were doing most of the pounding on them?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q Did you get a good swing at them with your club as they ran by you?

CONFIDENTIAL

1130

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033

By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

248

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A I hit about 2 or 3, one was on the bed and I poked him and he
2 came out.

3
4 Q Did you get any other good socks?

5 A I hit at one and missed and the stick hit the bed.

6
7 Q One was under the bed and you poked him and he came out then
8 you took a swing at him?

9 A Yes, sir, the next time is when I hit the bed.

10
11 Q Did you find one in the corner and give him a pretty good beating?

12 A I don't remember the one in the corner.

13
14 Q There were a lot of Italians lying in bed with the covers over
15 their head?

16 A There was some in bed that was hiding.

17
18 Q When you would find one lying in bed under the covers you would
19 pull them off and what would you do to him?

20 A All the time I would get fixed until they pulled the covers off.

21
22 Q Someone would hit him?

23 A Murry was standing there.

24
25 Q When you pulled the covers off then you would hit him?

26 A Yes, sir, and he would run.

27
28 Q Did you follow them out when they ran out?

29 A I didn't follow them when they ran because the next man in line
30 would catch them.

31
32 Q Who was behind Murray?

33 A All I can give an account of is myself and Murray and Johnson,
34 that is the only three I know.

35
36 Q Is Herman Johnson the big soldier?

37 A Yes, sir.

38
39 Q A big fellow?

40 A Yes, sir.

41
42 Q Do you know when Herman came there? Is that the first you had
43 seen of Herman?

44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1131

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

249

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q The MP handed him a flashlight and told him to go in and bring
2 them out?
3 A Yes, sir.
- 4 Q Did he tell what to do to bring them out?
5 A Yes, sir, he said, "Go in and bring them out."
6
- 7 Q Herman was already in the area?
8 A Already out in front where the MP was.
9
- 10 Q Did any of them jump through the window while you were in there
11 beating on them?
12 A I didn't see any go out.
13
- 14 Q They were hollering, "Mama Mia" or something like that?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
- 17 Q Now, you say there were approximately 15 in the place you had
18 to bring out, or beat out, or knock out?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
- 21 Q Did you knock any of them down?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
- 24 Q Did you hit a bunch of them on the head?
25 A I don't remember hitting any on the head.
26
- 27 Q Did you see Murray hit any on the head?
28 A He was on the floor and he was sitting on him hitting him on the
29 head with a shoe.
30
- 31 Q On the head?
32 A I couldn't say. He got out from under Murray and ran.
33
- 34 Q Were any knocked cold and left in there because you didn't want
35 to bring them out?
36 A No, sir.
37
- 38 Q When you finished beating up the fellows in 708, which way
39 did you go out?
40 A We all came out to the front, that is the last of the fight.
41
- 42 Q When you got out in front, was Johnson out there?
43 A Herman Johnson?
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1132

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

250

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Yes.
2 A He was standing there and he gave the MP the flashlight back
3 and another MP came up and rounded all us up.
4
5 Q Were the Italians there?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q What did he say after you came out?
9 A He told us to all line up in a round ring.
10
11 Q Then what did he say?
12 A He was going to hold us until somebody came, the OD, I guess.
13
14 Q Then what did he say?
15 A Somebody told him-- he said, "What are you going to do with us?"
16 I don't know who it was, I wasn't paying any attention and he said, "All
17 you guys go back to your company."
18
19 Q All of those left there?
20 A All that were left.
21
22 Q All that were around the vicinity of 708 that were left?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q When you went out of Building 708 who else did you see besides
26 Johnson, Murray and yourself?
27 A Montgomery was there.
28
29 Q Roy Montgomery was there?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q Was he in the building when you were beating those Italians?
33 A I cannot say whether he was there.
34
35 Q Who was he talking to?
36 A He was standing there waiting to hit one.
37
38 Q Did he have his club still?
39 A I don't know.
40
41 Q Did you still have your club when you came out of the building?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q Then you all lined up?
45 A Yes, sir?

CONFIDENTIAL

1133

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJA NARA Date 06/12/02

251

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You didn't go back and pick up your clubs?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q The man that made you drop your clubs is the same man that
5 made you line up?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q Is he the same man that pulled his gun?
9 A Yes, sir, a sergeant.
10
11 Q Grey haired?
12 A He was slim.
13
14 Q While you were down there at the orderly room and as you
15 approached from Door A, who did you see standing around there?
16 A I saw King standing there.
17
18 Q What was King doing when you first saw him in front of Door
19 A on the night of August 14th, 1944?
20 A Pushing the door.
21
22 Q Trying to push his way into room R?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Who else did you see there?
26 A Nobody else.
27
28 Q Did you go up to Door A?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Did you go in?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q Did you push your way through the isle into Room R?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Did you try to get through the group?
38 A Somebody tried it once and didn't.
39
40 Q Was Mathis chopping on the door with a double bitted ax?
41 A I cannot say that because there was a crowd and these men were
42 knocking on the door.
43
44 Q When you were pushing the Italians with a stick, was it about like
45 this one?
A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1134

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

252

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Murray had a stick like that?
2 A He had his fist.
- 3
4 Q And a shoe?
5 A Yes, sir.
- 6
7 Q What did Johnson have?
8 A I still don't know what he had, it was dark. He had a flashlight
9 and was using something.
- 10
11 Q Was the club he was using painted?
12 A It was a dark GI color.
- 13
14 Q Do you know whether it was a spade or not?
15 A I didn't see it, I am not for sure.
- 16
17 Q It had a cover on it?
18 A It was a GI color.
- 19
20 Q When you stood in Door A and after you entered Door A, you saw
21 someone chopping Door D out with an ax?
22 A Yes, sir.
- 23
24 Q And you could see the ax he was using?
25 A Yes, sir.
- 26
27 Q What kind of an ax was that?
28 A A double bitted ax like that.
- 29
30 Q Like the ax I show you?
31 A Yes, sir.
- 32
33 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Let the record show the witness testified
34 that the ax which was being used to chop down Door D on the night of
35 August 14th, 1944 was a double bitted ax like the ax which is in evidence
36 and that he further testified that part of the handle which he could see
37 while the chopping was being done was a dark colored handle.)
- 38
39 Q Now, as you stood in the door, there were several men in Room
40 R between Doors A and D?
41 A Yes, sir.
- 42
43 Q Who out of that group did you recognize?
44 A Well, I recognized Murray.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1135

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

253

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q He was there at the time you were in there?
2 A Yes, sir.
- 3
4 Q Who else?
5 A King, he came in before we did.
- 6
7 Q Corporal King was there ahead of you?
8 A Yes, sir.
- 9
10 Q Who else?
11 A I don't know. That is about all I know.
- 12
13 Q Did you see Robert Mathis standing between Door A and D?
14 A Yes, sir.
- 15
16 Q One of those was Robert Mathis?
17 A Yes, sir, I saw him.
- 18
19 Q When you saw Robert between Door A and D on August 14, 1944,
20 what was he doing?
21 A Standing up waiting to get into Room X.
- 22
23 Q Was he chopping on the door with an ax?
24 A I didn't see that.
- 25
26 Q Who was chopping on the door?
27 A I don't know, I can't answer that question.
- 28
29 Q After you saw Robert Mathis then you observed the door was
30 subsequently broken down by the man that had the ax?
31 A Yes, sir.
- 32
33 Q And the man who you saw with the ax you cannot now identify?
34 A That is right.
- 35
36 Q But you can state definitely that it was not Robert Mathis
37 who had an ax and was chopping on the door?
38 A I can do that.
- 39
40 Q You can state definitely it was not Robert Mathis who had the
41 ax and was chopping the door down on the night of August 14th, 1944
42 as you stood watching the door being chopped down?
43 A Yes, sir, I can.
- 44
45 Q Will you state for me who it was that you saw with the ax and who was

CONFIDENTIAL

1136

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

254

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 chopping on the door as you observed it?
2 A I recognized a man from the 650th, I don't know his name.
3
4 Q Is the man who was chopping down the door on the night of
5 August 14th in the guard house now?
6 A No, sir, I don't know, I can't place his face, his face was
7 turned toward the door.
8
9 Q Did you observe Robert Mathis inside Door A and between Door D
10 waiting for the door to be chopped down? What did he have in his hand?
11 A Nothing, I never saw him with nothing. Maybe he was going
12 in with his fist I guess.
13
14 Q You testify that Robert Mathis didn't have anything in his
15 hand when he stood between Doors A and D?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q Are you sure of that?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q When the door was chopped down who was the first man who entered
22 Room X?
23 A I don't know that, all the guys who had been standing back along
24 here.
25
26 Q Who was the first man you saw in Room X after you first entered?
27 A I will say Murray was, I saw Elby, Murray and Robert Mathis.
28
29 Q And who else?
30 A That is all that I know.
31
32 Q Then Robert Mathis and Elby Murry preceded you through Door D
33 after it had been knocked down by the man with the ax?
34 A That is right.
35
36 Q When you and Murray and Mathis got in Room X what did you do in
37 there?
38 A I was coming on in myself.
39
40 Q Tell me what you saw happening.
41 A There was a table sitting by this window right here, there
42 was a man under the table and he was whipping him in the corner.
43
44 Q The colored soldiers you saw in the room at this time were
45 whipping the Italians gathered in the corner of Room X?
A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CURRY)

1137

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

255

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q What were they using to whip the Italians with in the room?
2 A Sticks and things like that.
- 3
4 Q Were any of them using knives on anyof them?
5 A I don't remember seeing any knives, I seen a couple cut, I didn't
6 see a knife.
- 7
8 Q You saw the boys that had been whipped had been cut?
9 A Yes, sir.
- 10
11 Q And you saw others beaten over the head and bleeding?
12 A They was bleeding and ones shirt was torn under the table.
- 13
14 Q This boy under the table had his shirt torn on the right side?
15 A It was on the right side or the left side.
- 16
17 Q Did it look like where a knife had cut it?
18 A I thought it was a stick, maybe it was a knife, I didn't see a
19 knife.
- 20
21 Q Did you see the man who tore that fellow's shirt that was under
22 the table?
23 A No, sir.
- 24
25 Q What happened to the Italian standing on top of the table?
26 A I didn't see one on the top.
- 27
28 Q Did you see the white American soldier standing up and bleeding
29 and the colored soldier saying not to attack them because they were
30 Americans?
31 A I didn't hear him myself, I guess they had gottne him out.
- 32
33 Q What did you hear the white soldiers in this room say to the
34 colored soldiers?
35 A I don't remember seeing nothing but Italians. I heard since
36 I have been in the stockade that white soldiers were there.
- 37
38 Q Didn't you hear any white soldiers yelling or Italians saying
39 anything when the colored soldiers beat them up?
40 A I don't remember.
- 41
42 Q You heard screaming and hollering?
43 A Yes, sir.
- 44
45 Q You saw some soldiers pounding the white soldiers in there?

CONFIDENTIAL

1138

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

256

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A I seen them whipping the soldiers, the Italians, they had
2 all the soldiers cornered and I couldn't tell them apart?

3
4 Q While you were in the room, did you strike any Italians in
5 Room X?

6 A No, sir, I didn't get a chance, the rest of them over there
7 were busy on this guy.

8
9 Q Many of the colored soldiers were clubbing the fellows?

10 A Yes, sir.

11
12 Q And the man under the table in the northeast corner of the
13 room, Room X, was under the table and you couldn't get to him?

14 A That is right.

15
16 Q You just had to stand and wait until your turn came?

17 A To hit one?

18
19 Q Yes.

20 A No, sir, I didn't hit one.

21
22 Q You didn't try to hit them in Room X?

23 A I didn't have nothing but my hand.

24
25 Q Didn't you kick any of them?

26 A No, sir.

27
28 Q Weren't there any laying on the floor where you could kick them?

29 A The soldiers had them cornered up.

30
31 Q Was the man under the table?

32 A Yes, sir.

33
34 Q He couldn't get out?

35 A He wasn't knocked out, he was under the table on his knees.

36
37 Q While you were in that room, did you see the fight going on in
38 this little room, Room Y?

39 A I didn't know there was no room back of that.

40
41 Q You could hear hollering?

42 A Yes, sir, there was hollering over there I know back in this
43 corner, but this door was like this.

44
45 Q They were over by door B?

CONFIDENTIAL

1139

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

257

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q They were hitting them over there?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Were the Italians hollering?
5 A All of them was hollering.
6
7 Q You saw that fight going on around Door B?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q How about Door C, were the Italians running back and forth
11 from Room X to Y?
12 A I cannot say.
13
14 Q After you left Room X, where did you go?
15 A They started pulling them out and somebody started hollering to
16 stop.
17
18 Q Who started hollering to stop?
19 A I don't know.
20
21 Q Before you left Room X did you see any Italians jump out the
22 window on the north side of Room X?
23 A I didn't see none jump out the window until I came out.
24
25 Q Now, you were pushing through Door B into Room Z?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q As you came in through Door B who did you see in Room X you knew?
29 A I done already said Murray was in there.
30
31 Q Who else?
32 A That is all I know.
33
34 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, did you see Marshall Moore
35 in the Italian Area?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q What was he doing when you saw him first?
39 A The first time I saw him, the MP was rounding us up.
40
41 Q Did you see him while he was inside Building 713?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q What did he have in his hand?
45 A He was standing in the rear of us, the MP had made him put down

CONFIDENTIAL

1140

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

258

CONFIDENTIAL

1 his stick.
2

3 Q The MP made him put his stick down?

4 A I guess so.
5

6 Q He was in the ring in front of Building 708?

7 A Yes, sir.
8

9 Q Now, while we have been talking off the record you state
10 you don't want to talk any more?

11 A Yes, sir.
12

13 Q Why?

14 A Because if the guys that did the hanging aren't found then they
15 are going to put it on somebody, somebody is going to do time.
16

17 Q You are willing to do time for what you did?

18 A I can't do no better if they give me time, I can't run off, I
19 ain't going to try.
20

21 Q Why don't you want to tell me, as investigating officer, the other
22 persons present that night so that we can find out those and turn lose those
23 persons who are not implicated in this case?

24 A Well, I done told you .
25

26 Q But there were fellows you knew that were down there. Why do
27 you refust to tell me the names of them?

28 A I don't know all the guys. If I had been in the company long
29 enough. George Johnson has been with the company a long while.
30

31 Q Can you state definitely that George Johnson was not down there?

32 A I didn't see him, that is all I know, I didn't see him, I can't
33 say he ain't there.
34

35 Q After you had come out of Room X, where did you go?

36 A I went down to the building.
37

38 Q After you came out of Building X-- Room X, you went into Room Z?

39 A And I went right out, I didn't want to get hit or slapped with
40 a club.
41

42 Q You went straight through between Door B and E because you were
43 afraid of getting hit?

44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1141

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SPNARA Date 06/12/02

259

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q The men in that room were swinging clubs at the Italians?
2 A Yes, sir.
- 3
4 Q Who in there did you see that you recognized?
5 A I didn't see anybody. I lost direction of Murray and the other
6 boys, I didn't see nobody I knowed going out of that room.
- 7
8 Q When you got out here who did you see you recognized?
9 A Roy Montgomery.
- 10
11 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 as you got out of Room Z
12 through Door E you saw Roy Montgomery standing outside that door?
13 A Yes, sir.
- 14
15 Q What did he have in his hand?
16 Aq Roy had a stick standing up there.
- 17
18 Q He was waiting to hit a fellow that ran out of the door?
19 A Yes, sir.
- 20
21 Q Did you see him hit anyone that ran out of Door E?
22 A I didn't see him.
- 23
24 Q No one come out of Door E while you were there?
25 A They were bringing guys out of there.
- 26
27 Q Did you see Roy swing on some of them?
28 A No, sir.
- 29
30 Q After you got outside of Door E, where did you go?
31 A I went outside the barracks, on this side.
- 32
33 Q You came out of Building 713 through Door E on the east side and
34 you went on the north side?
35 A I hit a man out here myself.
- 36
37 Q You hit a man coming out of E?
38 A I hit somebody myself.
- 39
40 Q What did you hit the man with that ran out of Door E?
41 A I picked up a stick like that.
- 42
43 Q When you got outside of Door E you picked up a 2-by-2 about 4 feet
44 long?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1142

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

260

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q While you had the stick in your hand you hit an Italian who ran
2 out of that door?
3 A Yes, sir.
4
5 Q Did you knock him to the ground?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q Where did you hit him?
9 A Across under the arm.
10
11 Q Across his ribs?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Where did the Italian go after you hit him?
15 A He came around and went in here.
16
17 Q Did you see him go toward the wooded area?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Did you chase him?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q Did you see anyone else chase him?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q Did you see anyone hit him after you struck him?
27 A No, sir.
28
29 Q But you saw him run down toward the wooded area?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q Did he scream when you hit him?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Where did you go then?
36 A I came around the building on this side.
37
38 Q You came around the building from the north side?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q When you got around the building, who did you see that you
42 recognized?
43 A Daymond.
44
45 Q Roy Daymond was standing on the north side of the building.

CONFIDENTIAL

1143

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

261

CONFIDENTIAL

1 What was he doing?
2 A Standing there with bricks in his hand.
3
4 Q While you stood on the north side of the building did you see
5 some Italians who were escaping from the building through the windows?
6 A Yes, sir, the rest of the guys threw at them-- you asked me did
7 Roy throw-- I am not sure, but he is bound to be throwing something them
8 he had rocks, I didn't see him.
9
10 Q Who else threw at the Italians that jumped out of the window?
11 A I don't know their names.
12
13 Q There were several of them, were there?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Several colored soldiers stood on the north side of the building
17 and threw rocks at those who escaped through the window?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Did you see any of the colored soldiers grab any of the Italians
21 that jumped out of there?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q They stood off and threw rocks at them?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q The rocks they threw were in the shape of bricks?
28 A I don't know, I could see they were rocks, but I couldn't tell
29 what kind.
30
31 Q You testified Roy Daymond had bricks?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q And the other fellows had some kind of stones?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q And they were throwing them at the Italians that jumped out of
38 the building and tried to escape?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q Did you see any soldiers on that side with clubs?
42 A No, sir, I don't think any had clubs.
43
44 Q Did you hit any of the Italians with rocks?
45 A I didn't get a chance.

CONFIDENTIAL

1144

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

262

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Were you afraid of getting close and getting hit yourself?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q You were afraid of getting up close and afraid of getting hit
5 by the rocks?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q Did the soldiers throwing stones at the Italians escaping
9 on the north side hit very many of the Italians?
10 A They were throwing and the guys were hollering, I guess they
11 must have hit some of them.
12
13 Q Did you see them knock any down?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q You saw some hit?
17 Aq Yes, sir, they was hollering.
18
19 Q You saw some hit with stones but you don't know how many?
20 A You can't tell, there wasn't any light, it was night.
21
22 Q But when one was hit he hollered, did he?
23 A I didn't hear that.
24
25 Q How could you tell it hit him?
26 A You could tell by him flinching.
27
28 Q And you could hear the sound?
29 A You couldn't hear no sound.
30
31 Q These Italians that escaped on the north side after jumping through
32 the window and after being thrown at and hit with stones, were they going
33 toward the woods and jumping over the clift into the woods?
34 A I don't know.
35
36 Q How many colored soldiers did you see chasing them?
37 A I didn't see any.
38
39 Q You didn't see anyone running down there and chasing them?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q You didn't see any Italians caught and beat while you were there?
43 A No, sir, not on the outside.
44
45 Q Only those that were inside and hemmed up were being beaten in there?

CONFIDENTIAL

1145

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

263

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2
- 3 Q After you observed this fighting on the north side of the building
- 4 where did you go?
- 5 A Over by another barracks and they said, someone says, "Let's
- 6 burn the barracks down."
- 7
- 8 Q That was 709 or 710?
- 9 A Over here.
- 10
- 11 Q You went from 713 to 711?
- 12 A Yes, sir, but I didn't go inside, just outside.
- 13
- 14 Q When you arrived there some boy said, "Let's burn the barracks
- 15 down." What did they do to burn the barracks down?
- 16 A They didn't burn it down, they was going to and somebody in this
- 17 building was hollering, "Here's some in this room," and they were pushing
- 18 beds up against the door.
- 19
- 20 Q When you were at Building 711 getting ready to burn it down
- 21 someone hollered in 708, here's a bunch of Italians?
- 22 A That is right.
- 23
- 24 Q What effort was made here at Building 711 to burn it down?
- 25 A Didn't make no effort.
- 26
- 27 Q Did anyone go get gasoline?
- 28 A No, sir.
- 29
- 30 Q Did anyone strike matches and start burning it?
- 31 A No, sir.
- 32
- 33 Q Who said they would burn the building down?
- 34 A I don't know his name.
- 35
- 36 Q Was he near you?
- 37 A Yes, sir.
- 38
- 39 Q You ran in 708 then?
- 40 A Yes, sir.
- 41
- 42 Q As you ran from 711 did you see any Italians in the latrine, 712?
- 43 A No, sir.
- 44
- 45 Q Did any of you stop in Building 712?

CONFIDENTIAL

1146

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

264

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.

2

3 Q Did you go near Building 710?

4 A No, sir, I didn't go near that.

5

6 Q As you went from 711 to 708 did you see any colored soldiers

7 you knew?

8 A Herman Johnson.

9

10 Q I mean running in between the two buildings?

11 A No, sir.

12

13 Qq After you got to 708 you saw Herman Johnson and the bunch you

14 have previously testified to?

15 A Yes, sir, Herman Johnson, Murray and myself and another one.

16

17 Q And your testimony from there is as you previously gave it to

18 me?

19 A Yes, sir.

20

21 Q After the MP lined you up and told you to go back to your

22 barracks, did you go to your barracks?

23 A Yes, sir.

24

25 Q Which road did you take after you left the Italian Area to go back

26 to your barracks?

27 A This one in front.

28

29 Q You went up the steps and hit Wyoming Avenue and followed it up

30 to Lawton Road and they went up and cut in back of 673?

31 A Yes, sir.

32

33 Q When you got to 673, what did you do then?

34 A We went to talking about it.

35

36 Q Who all were talking about it at the time you got in your barracks?

37 A I don't know.

38

39 Q You and Murray were?

40 A Murray came over to the barracks and talked with me.

41

42 Q Herman Johnson was there?

43 A He was in the barracks, his.

44

45 Q He didn't come in yours, 673?

CONFIDENTIAL

1147

(CURRY)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

265

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A He didn't live there.
2
3 Q Who besides you and Murray talked about the fight you had while
4 you were in Barracks 673?
5 A That is all I know.
6
7 Q No other persons you remember were in there with Murray talking
8 about the fight you had with the Italians?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q There were others in there?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Now many in that barracks talked about the fight and admitted they
15 were in the fight?
16 A Two or three new guys from New Orleans.
17
18 Q Two or three men in addition to you and Murray, is that right?
19 A Yes, sir, that is right.
20
21 Q Do you remember any of their names?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q Any of the names I previously called off to you?
25 A I don't know.
26
27 Q Would you remember the names if I called them off to you again?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q Do you have anything else you would like to add?
31 A No, sir.
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1148

(CURRY) (END)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Cpl. Joe Trice, taken at Seattle,
2 Washington on 28 September 1944 by Lieut. Colonel
3 Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7
8 Q State your name, organization, and serial number.

9 A Corporal Joe Trice, 36945853, 651st Port Company, Fort Lawton,
10 Washington.
11

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
13 Article of War?
14

15 A No, sir.
16

17 (24th Article of War read and explained to the witness)
18

19 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, were you with your company?
20

21 A Yes, sir.
22

23 Q Over at Fort Lawton?
24

25 A Yes, sir.
26

27 Q And what was the first thing you heard about this?
28

29 A After it started up in the night I heard a guy, I guess it was
30 10:30 or 11 O'clock, I heard him say there was a fight down on the hill.
31

32 Q Where were you?
33

34 A Up in the barracks.
35

36 Q What is the number of your barracks?
37

38 A I don't know.
39

40 Q Will you look at this map and show me?
41

42 A I used to be in this one.
43

44 Q You were in 673 the night of the fight?
45

 A Yes, sir.

 Q Were you in there when you first heard about the fight?

 A Yes, sir.

 Q Someone came in and said there was a fight?

 A You could hear, I was packing my duffle bag at that time.

CONFIDENTIAL

267

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did you go out?
2 A In front of 672.
3
4 Q In front of 672?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q You left 673 and went to 672?
8 A In front of my barracks, 673, I met the first sergeant coming
9 out of the orderly room and I asked him what the trouble was and he
10 said he called the MP's, anyway, they was in the headquarters barracks,
11 so there was 12 or 14 standing down there and he told me to go down and
12 tell them to go in their barracks.
13
14 Q Did you go there then?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q Did you talk to the fellows standing in front of 672?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q What did you tell the men?
21 A What the first sergeant said. Some of them said all right and
22 some of them said to hell with it.
23
24 Q You didn't see any of them go toward the Italian Area while you
25 were there?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q Do you know whether any of them went down there later?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q After you left 672, where did you go?
32 A I came back in front of my barracks and there was a bunch of
33 fellows talking.
34
35 Q Did you talk to them?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q Who were the fellows you talked to in front of 673?
39 A Sergeant Cabral, Register, a couple of corporals, Troup and
40 Knuckles and Pfc. Wilburn.
41
42 Q Did you stand and talk to them?
43 A Yes, sir, until the MP's went down the hill.
44
45 Q What conversation did you noncommissioned officers have while the

CONFIDENTIAL

(TRICE)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 the fight was going on?

2 A We had a discussion about the fight.

3
4 Q You were wondering what started it?

5 A Yes, sir.

6
7 Q Did you discuss who was in it?

8 A No, sir, not at that time.

9
10 Q Did the first sergeant say anything about any of his boys being
11 there?

12 A He told he he didn't know of anyone that went down there and
13 he said somebody would get in trouble about it.

14
15 Q All the time you talked to the first sergeant, you could hear
16 the noise?

17 A Yes, sir.

18
19 Q Were the Italians screaming?

20 A Hollering.

21
22 Q You could hear glass being broken?

23 A No, sir.

24
25 Q Could you hear rocks being thrown against buildings?

26 A No, sir.

27
28 Q Could you hear windows being knocked out?

29 A No, sir.

30
31 Q But you heard hollering and screaming?

32 A Yee, sir.

33
34 Q Could you see in the area when you were at 672?

35 A No, sir, you could see the mess hall, I don't know whose it was.

36
37 Q Building 700?

38 A I suppose so.

39
40 Q You couldn't see the Italian Area at all, is that right?

41 A You can see it in daytime, but there wasn't any lights until after
42 the MP's arrived.

43
44 Q Now, what did you do after you and the sergeant got through
45 talking in front of Building 673, you and the noncommissioned officers got
through?

CONFIDENTIAL

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A I went back in the barracks and I talked to some guys
2 gambling.
3
4 Q Who were the boys gambling?
5 A Lee Wilburn and Mitchell.
6
7 Q Were they shooting dice or playing poker?
8 A Poker, and blackjack.
9
10 Q How many were in the game?
11 A Seven or eight.
12
13 Q Can you name any of the others?
14 A There was a sergeant from the 650th, I don't know his name.
15
16 Q Would you know it if you heard it called?
17 A I think so.
18
19 Q Was it Palmer?
20 A Palmer, yes, sir, he is a staff sergeant.
21
22 Q Sergeant Palmer was playing with the men?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Can you name any of the others who were playing?
26 A Robert Spikes was there, I don't know whether he was gambling,
27 but he was there.
28
29 Q This poker game was going on all during the fight or did it start
30 after the fight?
31 A No, sir, they were shooting craps before the fight.
32
33 Q Were the same members shooting craps?
34 A Part of them, sir.
35
36 Q Those in front of 672, you cannot say whether they went down to
37 the Italian Area after you left?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q You didn't go down?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Are you sure?
44 A Positive.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(TRICE)

270

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who is here in the stockade that knew that you didn't go down?
2 A Sergeant Mitchell and Curry should know.
3
4 Q What Curry is that?
5 A Willie.
6
7 Q Did Willie go to the fight?
8 A He told me he did.
9
10 Q He told you he did?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q What did he say he did when he got there?
14 A He didn't say. He said he had been there and I never did ask
15 him what he done.
16
17 Q Did he say what he had done there?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q After the fight was over, did you remain in Barracks 673?
21 A After everything was quiet?
22
23 Q No, immediately after the fight was over?
24 A After I went back inside?
25
26 Q Yes.
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q While you were in there did some of the boys come back and
30 start talking about the fight?
31 A No, sir, they kept pretty quiet.
32
33 Q No one came back and started talking about the fight?
34 A Didn't too many come back to the barracks afterwards.
35
36 Q Some of them did come into Barracks 673?
37 A I suppose so.
38
39 Q You didn't hear any discussion of the fight in Barracks 673 after
40 it was over by the boys that came back from the Italian Area?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Have you heard later any discussion of the fight by members of your
44 company or the other company?
45 A Two or three words occasionally.

CONFIDENTIAL

153

(TRICE)

271

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who did you hear discussing it?
2 A Montgomery.
3
4 Q Roy Montgomery?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q What did he say about the fight?
8 A I heard him say since I have been in the stockade he helped somebody
9 get out.
10
11 Q Did he say he hit anyone?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q You never heard him say he hit someone?
15 A No, sir.
16
17 Q Do you know Mathis?
18 A Robert?
19
20 Q Yes.
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q Did you ever hear him discuss the fight?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q He is a member of the 651st and you never heard him discuss the
27 fight at all?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q Did you ever hear anyone else say he discussed it with him?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q The next morning after the fight, which was the 15th, your
34 company was moved, wasn't it?
35 A Yes, sir, about between eight and none.
36
37 Q Where did you move to?
38 A I don't know what section it was.
39
40 Q Was it Section I?
41 A It was by Number Two Theater.
42
43 Q As you moved over there, did you hear any of the boys discussing
44 the fight?
45 A No, sir, things were pretty quiet, some guys wanted to know why we

CONFIDENTIAL

1154

(TRICE)

272

CONFIDENTIAL

1 was under guard over there and the first sergeant told them and that is the
2 first time I knowed anything about-- you know-- it was that bad.

3 Q When did you learn about the hanging?

4 A Not until-- what day was that?

5
6 Q The 15th of August was the day you moved.

7 A I didn't know it until the 16th, I suppose.

8
9 Q Who told you about it then?

10 A I don't know his name, a fellow in the investigation, he was
11 put in the guard house Thursday, I think the 16th or it might have been
12 the 17th because I started --

13
14 Q Who informed you of it?

15 A One of the fellows in the investigation, I don't know his name.

16
17 Q One of the white investigators?

18 A Yes, sir.

19
20 Q Do you know his name?

21 A No, sir.

22
23 Q Was it Durell?

24 A He is a short fellow.

25
26 Q But he said he was investigating to try to find out who committed
27 the hanging?

28 A Yes, sir.

29
30 Q Did he find out anything over there?

31 A I don't know.

32
33 Q Did you hear anyone discuss the hanging yourself?

34 A No, sir.

35
36 Q You haven't heard anything about it except Durell's discussion
37 about it?

38 A I saw something in the paper once about it.

39
40 Q Do you have any idea how that hanging took place?

41 A No, sir, I don't.

42
43 Q While you were up around Barracks 673, did you see a jeep come
44 down this road?

45 A No, sir, the only jeep I saw as when I was down at the PX about

CONFIDENTIAL

(TRICE)

273

CONFIDENTIAL

1 9:30, the MP was in it.
2
3 Q That was when they picked up Willie Montgomery?
4 A No, sir, he was down closing the PX and he came out with another
5 guy.
6
7 Q Did you see the MP's arrive that night?
8 A No, sir, the trucks.
9
10 Q What road did they take going down to the area?
11 A Lawton Road, going down Lawton Road.
12
13 Q Where did you see them?
14 A You could see them just before they got to the corner.
15
16 Q What kind of cars did you say they had?
17 A Ford trucks, you know small ones.
18
19 Q Jeeps?
20 A I didn't see any.
21
22 Q Did you see an ambulance going down later?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Did you see the ambulance come back out?
26 A Part of them.
27
28 Q Did you see the fight here all around this building and in back
29 of Barracks 708?
30 A No, sir, I heard the hollering.
31
32 Q You heard the hollering?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Could you see the windows being broken and knocked out?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q Could you see the end of this building from where you were?
39 A I don't know too much about any of those buildings.
40
41 Q Did you see anything that night in front of 672?
42 A No, sir, it was dark. I could see the mess hall down on the hill.
43
44 Q Did you see the fight around this building here?
45 A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

156

(TRICE)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

274

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q On the morning after the fight, weren't some of your clothes
2 taken away from you?
3 A No, sir.
4
5 Q When did they take that clothing away from you?
6 A They didn't take none on the morning after the fight, our duffle
7 bags were taken and loaded on the trucks.
8
9 Q From your duffle bag didn't they get a pair of coveralls with
10 blood stains on them?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q And it had your initials on the coveralls?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q How do you figure the blood got on them?
17 A From my nose.
18
19 Q You had a nose bleed?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q When did you have that?
23 A About 4 days ago.
24
25 Q Do you normally have nose bleeds?
26 A Only when my head is stopped up.
27
28 Q Had you had a cold then?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Did you go to the hospital?
32 A I have never been since I have been in the Army.
33
34 Q You refused to go to the infirmary?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q You admit those clothes of yours did have blood on them?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q And they were found in your duffle bag?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q But you say it was from a nose bleed rather than any accident you
44 were in?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1157

(TRICE)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

275

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Isn't it a fact that you have been identified as being in the
2 Italian Area, in the Orderly room on the night of August 14th, 1944?
3 A Somebody was lying.
4
- 5 Q The testimony which identified you is as follows: "I then went
6 in the orderly room from the front and I saw a big crowd of men standing
7 inside and I recognized Wallace Woodin of the 650th and a corporal and a Buck
8 Sergeant, Sergeant Red of the same company and Joe Trice and Thomas Battle
9 of my company."
10 A I wasn't down there. Whoever told you that is wrong.
11
- 12 Q Then if someone identified you as they have and said you were in
13 the Italian Area orderly room on the night of August 14th, 1944, they
14 made a mistake?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
- 17 Q That is an error?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
- 20 Q You didn't go down there at all?
21 A No, sir.
22
- 23 Q You never left your barracks?
24 A I never left the company area, I left the barracks.
25
- 26 Q Did you go any closer to the fight than Building 673?
27 A No, sir, that is as close as I got.
28
- 29 Q You never went down and watched it?
30 A No, sir.
31
- 32 Q You didn't go over here and watch it?
33 A No, sir, I never got further than 672.
34
- 35 Q You didn't go down and try to stop the fight?
36 A No, sir.
37
- 38 Q Now, when you had the nose bleed, where did you get the blood
39 on your clothing, do you remember?
40 A I left the barracks and went to the latrine, it should be on the
41 front.
42
- 43 Q On the front of the trousers and the leg?
44 A And there should be some on the back pocket where the handkerchief
45 is.

CONFIDENTIAL

1158

(TRICE)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

276

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did you have a handkerchief?
2 A Yes, sir.
- 3
4 Q Did you get some blood on it?
5 A Yes, sir.
- 6
7 Q Have you ever seen it since that time?
8 A Once.
- 9
10 Q Where?
11 A At Fort Lawton.
- 12
13 Q Did you turn that handkerchief over to someone?
14 A No, sir.
- 15
16 Q And you haven't seen it since?
17 A Since this fellow showed it to me.
- 18
19 Q Are these your coveralls which I have here?
20 A Yes, sir.
- 21
22 Q Where is the blood you got on this clothing the day you had
23 the nose bleed?
24 A Some going outside, it should be on the front legs down here.
- 25
26 Q You didn't get any on the back?
27 A Only there should be some around the back pocket where I have my
28 handkerchief.
- 29
30 Q Is there any back there around the pocket?
31 A There is a little.
- 32
33 Q Do you see any lower down than your pocket?
34 A I wiped my hand.
- 35
36 Q Do you see any, after examining them, other than on the pocket,
37 the rear pocket and on the front?
38 A No, sir.
- 39
40 Q Aren't those blood stains on the left side here and it is not
41 near the pocket?
42 A Yes, sir.
- 43
44 Q How do you account for that blood on the left leg and in the rear?
45 A I wiped my hands.

CONFIDENTIAL

1159

(TRICE)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

277

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Now, you have your coveralls on. Look at the spot on the left
2 leg of the trousers and see where the blood is in reference to where you
3 hand would normally nit the trousers.
- 4 A There's some that may have shook around and hit down like that.
- 5
- 6 Q That spot of blood lower down on the back leg almost to the
7 knee of the left side of the coverall must have been, as you say, from a
8 splatter which had fallen from the nose and hit the trousers at that
9 point.
- 10 A I don't understand-- I suppose so.
- 11
- 12 Q You feel that the blood which came from your nose would have
13 hit the back of your trousers below the knee?
- 14 A Well, ordinarily no, that wouldn't happen, it seems impossible,
15 but that is the way it was. That is all I can tell you.
- 16
- 17 Q Turn the trousers over a little and loo, at the rear of them
18 down on the left leg almost to the bottom of them and look at that
19 blood spot and tell me whether it looks like a place you wiped your
20 hands or the blood hit there without being touched by anything else?
- 21 A It looks like a drop.
- 22
- 23 Q Directly from the bleeding wound and hit the trousers without
24 being touched by any other object, doesn't it?
- 25 A Yes, sir.
- 26
- 27 Q How do you explain that?
- 28 A Well, just like I told you at first. My nose was bleeding and
29 I was running to the latrine and that is all I can say.
- 30
- 31 Q I show you a handkerchief, a white handkerchief which is blood
32 soaked, and ask you if that is your handkerchief?
- 33 A I don't think it is mine-- yes, sir, it is mine.
- 34
- 35 Q How do you know it is your handkerchief?
- 36 A The laundry marks.
- 37
- 38 Q Those laundry marks on there are Te5853. Is that your serial
39 number?
- 40 A Yes, sir, the last four numbers.
- 41
- 42 Q It is marked with your serial number?
- 43 A Yes, sir.
- 44
- 45 Q Did you mark that handkerchief with your serial number?

CONFIDENTIAL

1160

(TRICE)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

278

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A No, sir, I never marked the handkerchief.
- 2
- 3 Q But that is your handkerchief?
- 4 A Yes, sir.
- 5
- 6 Q And you had that handkerchief with you when you had the trousers
- 7 and left?
- 8 A Yes, sir.
- 9
- 10 Q And when you turned the trousers in the handkerchief was in the
- 11 pocket?
- 12 A Yes, sir.
- 13
- 14 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 were you wearing those trousers?
- 15 A No, sir.
- 16
- 17 Q When had been the last time you had put those trousers on previous
- 18 to August 14th?
- 19 A On the morning of the 14th.
- 20
- 21 Q You wore them during the day of the 14th?
- 22 A Part of the day.
- 23
- 24 Q You had them on in the morning?
- 25 A Up until about 10 or 10:30.
- 26
- 27 Q Joe, I hand you a scabbard of a knife.
- 28 A That is mine.
- 29
- 30 Q And I ask you to examine that and tell me whether that is your
- 31 scabbard or not?
- 32 A It is.
- 33
- 34 Q You can testify it is your scabbard?
- 35 A My serial number is on it.
- 36
- 37 Q Where is the knife that belongs to that scabbard?
- 38 A The knife that belongs in there I don't know about that, Curry
- 39 gave me this sometime ago.
- 40
- 41 Q The knife that belongs in this particular scabbard you have
- 42 identified as yours, where is that knife?
- 43 A I never did have that, Curry had the knife.
- 44
- 45 Q Did Curry have the knife that belongs in this scabbard on the

CONFIDENTIAL

1161

(TRICE)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

279

CONFIDENTIAL

1 night of August 14th, 1944?
2 A I don't think so, he gave it to me before that.
3
4 Q You had the knife to that scabbard on the night of August 14th?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Where was it?
8 A It was in the duffle bag.
9
10 Q Where is that knife now?
11 A The MP's we have here in the first section have it.
12
13 Q Can you identify the knife you had in this scabbard if you would
14 see it again?
15 A I never had one.
16
17 Q Can you identify the knife you had on the night of August 14th
18 1944 if you should see it again?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q When did Curry give you the scabbard which you how state belongs
22 to you?
23 A About a week before then.
24
25 Q About a week before August 15th?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q Did Curry tell you where he got the scabbard?
29 A No, sir, I know where he got it.
30
31 Q Is this the knife which I now hold in my hand and which is
32 marked RH 51 the knife which you had in your possession on the night of
33 August 14th, 1944?
34 A I don't know the marks, I know it by the scabbard.
35
36 Q You know that is the knife?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q Did you have it in this scabbard which is now shown to you
40 on the night of August 14th, 1944?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q Is the blood which is contained in the handkerchief which you
44 have identified as your handkerchief, your blood or some elses?
45 A My blood.

CONFIDENTIAL

1162

(TRICE)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

280

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q If it is proven to be blood of some other individual, what would
2 you say to that?
- 3 A I don't think it is uossible to be any other blood, sir.
- 4
- 5 Q Why did you have this extra scabbard which you have identified as
6 yours in your pocket?
- 7 A I was going to use it instead of the one with the tape on it,
8 but it was too long for the knife and I never did use it.
- 9
- 10 Q You figured you would carry an extra scabbard in the pocket of
11 your coveralls instead of turning it in and disposing of it.
- 12 A I don't think it was in my coveralls, sir.
- 13
- 14 Q What did you do with the scabbard which you have identified
15 and which is marked T-5853?
- 16 A I put it in my duffle bag, sir.
- 17
- 18 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 you had that extra scabbard
19 in your duffle bag?
- 20 A Yes, sir. I put it in that night, in my duffle bag, during the
21 night when I was packing my bag.
- 22
- 23 Q You can definitely state you didn't have it in your trousers
24 pocket that night?
- 25 A I remember starting to leave it in there and I said no, I will
26 take it, I don't think I put it in my pocket.
- 27
- 28 Q You remember looking at the scabbard and saying you would take it
29 out?
- 30 A Yes, sir.
- 31
- 32 Q Where did you go the next day?
- 33 A I don't know where we was going or where we was moving the next
34 day.
- 35
- 36 Q You state definitely you put it in your duffle bag?
- 37 A No, sir, I wouldn't swear to it, I am almost positive.
- 38
- 39 Q You might have left it in your trousers pocket?
- 40 A I might have put it in my trousers pocket.
- 41
- 42 Q You don't know whether you put it in your trousers pocket or in
43 the duffle bag?
- 44 A I know it was one or the other.
- 45

CONFIDENTIAL

1163

(TRICE) (EMD)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Further testimony of Willie S. Curry, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 28 September 1944 by Lieut.
3 Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5
6 The witness was reminded he was still under oath and of his
7 rights as a witness under the 24th Article of War.
8
9

10 Q Do you know Joe Trice?

11 A Yes, sir.

12
13 Q Are you and Joe pretty good friends?

14 A Well, yes, sir, for the length of time we have been together.
15

16 Q How long have you been together?

17 A About 2½ weeks before that thing happened.
18

19 Q Did you ever give Joe anything?

20 A Yes, sir.
21

22 Q What did you give him?

23 A I gave him a scabbard of a knife.
24

25 Q What kind of a scabbard did you give him?

26 A A black one.
27

28 Q Can you identify this scabbard and state whether it is the one
29 you gave him?

30 A Yes, sir, there are so many alike I guess I can.
31

32 Q When did you give it to him?

33 A I gave it to him way before this thing happened.
34

35 Q How long before?

36 A I will say about a week I guess.
37

38 Q Look at that group of scabbards and knives and see if you can
39 see the scabbard you gave Joe Trice about a week before this incident
40 which happened on August 14th, 1944?

41 A It would be like this one.
42

43 Q Was it newer than that or was it older than that one?

44 A It was possibly newer, I hadn't had it long. It was cut out
45 of the end where the knife head stuck back out.

CONFIDENTIAL

1164

(CURRY)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you give it to him or sell it to him?

2 A Gave it to him.

3
4 Q The scabbard which you gave to Joe Trice was a black leather
5 scabbard which when the knife was placed in the scabbard the point stuck
6 out?

7 A That is right.

8
9 Q The scabbard which I show you here is not the scabbard which
10 you gave Joe Trice about a week before the incident which happened at
11 Fort Lawton?

12 A That is right.

13
14 Q Could you definitely state the scabbard I show you is not the
15 one you gave to Joe Trice?

16 A I know that ain't the one.

17
18
19 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Let the record show that the scabbard which
20 Corporal Trice testified was given to him by Willie S. Curry was identified
21 by Willie S. Curry as not being the scabbard which he gave to Corporal
22 Trice a week before August 14th, 1944.)
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CURRY) (END)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

283

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. Samuel Snow, taken at Seattle,
2 Washington on 28 September 1944 by Lieut. Colonel
3 Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6
7

8
9 Q State your name, organization and serial number.

10 A Samuel Snow, 34245919, 650th Port Company, Fort Lawton,
11 Washington.
12

13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir.
16

17 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 were you at Fort Lawton when
18 a fight occurred between the colored soldiers and the Italian soldiers?
19

20 A Yes, sir.
21

22 Q Where were you when you first heard of the fight?

23 A In the barracks.
24

25 Q What is the number of your barracks?

26 A I had been in 719, that is the one.
27

28 Q What was the first information you received concerning this fight?

29 A The Italians hit a bunch of of our boys.
30

31 Q Who told you that?

32 A I was back rolling my pack and someone hollered the Italians jumped
33 on the boys outside.

34 Q Do you know whether that was Luther Larkin?

35 A I just had come from furlough, I had been here about 4 days,
36 I just come in this company.
37

38 Q Do you know Luther very well?

39 A I don't know but about 10 fellows that came with me since I came.
40

41 Q It wasn't one of them that hollered?

42 A No, sir, I don't suppose it was.
43

44 Q You didn't see the man that hollered the Italians jumped on one of
45 your boys?

CONFIDENTIAL

1166

(SNOW)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

284

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q What else did he say?
4 A I didn't pay any attention to anything else, I rolled my pack
5 and pushed it under the bed and I went out.
6
7 Q Did you go out the front door?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q What did you see outside?
11 A Some fellow over there and a crowd around the fellow and they
12 was looking down.
13
14 Q They were crowded around Willie Montgomery?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q Willie was lying in front of the building?
18 A I don't know who it was, they say it was Montgomery.
19
20 Q He was lying in front of Building 719?
21 A I suppose so.
22
23 Q Over by the mess hall?
24 A No, sir, he was up from here.
25
26 Q Did you cross the street then?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q Where did you go, around the mess hall over there?
30 A I don't know, I went down there. There was a fence near the
31 mess hall and I went down to the fence and got a scantling, I grabbed hold
32 of one and a boy went with me, I don't know him.
33
34 Q Was the boy that went with you in the guard house now?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Where did he go?
38 A With the company.
39
40 Q Do you know his name?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Would you know it if you heard it?
44 A Robinson or Robert.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1167

(SNCW)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJD NARA Date 06/12/02

285

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q From the 650th?
2 A Robert or Robinson, I know him.
3
4 Q Anyway, the man that went with you went with the company?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q What did you and this other boy do when you got down there?
8 A I went up and pulled off a scantling about so long.
9
10 Q Was it a 2-by-4?
11 A I guess so, trimmed.
12
13 Q Sharpened on one end?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Would you recognize the club if you saw it again?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Is the 2-by-4 which I now show you the club or a club like
20 the one you got in the vicinity of Building 700 and took to the Italian
21 Area with you?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q Now, after you got this club and went in the vicinity of Building 700
25 there were a lot of other people around there?
26 A They were around over there pulling up clubs.
27
28 Q Who in that first group went over to get clubs?
29 A Just that fellow.
30
31 Q You don't know any others?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q Why did you get a club?
35 A Why did I get a club?
36
37 Q To fight with?
38 A To fight with.
39
40 Q You were going down and kill those Italians, were you?
41 A It was just a little fracas, I suppose we were, someone said
42 we were going down and fight those bastards and a lot of them started
43 pulling them up, I guess it was a victory garden around the mess hall
44 to try to keep the fellows from stepping in it.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1168

(SNOW)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

286

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Why didn't you go down and fist fight the Italians?
2 A I didn't know what the Italians had.
3
4 Q In other words, you were going down there and kill them if
5 necessary?
6 A There wasn't any intention of killing them, they bothered the
7 boy.
8
9 Q How do you know they bothered the boy?
10 A That is what he hollered, he said the Italians jumped on the
11 boy.
12
13 Q Because he said the Italians jumped on the boy, you were among
14 the first ones to go down and get a club and get ready to go work on them?
15 A We all pooled together going down there.
16
17 Q Wasn't there someone in front or around Building 700 getting
18 sticks and making a little speech?
19 A No, sir, there wasn't anyone.
20
21 Q Wasn't there someone telling you to come on, let's go get them?
22 A No, sir, when that whistle blowed--
23
24 Q Did a whistle blow?
25 A Yes, sir, I had got my club and was running down there.
26
27 Q Then after you got your club and started toward the Italian
28 Area someone blew a whistle?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Do you know who that was?
32 A No, sir, I was going on down.
33
34 Q You were among the first to go to the area?
35 A About 15 of us.
36
37 Q Who were some of the others that went with you?
38 A I don't know, it was dark.
39
40 Q Were you toward the back or toward the front of the first group
41 that went down there?
42 A I was in front, I run down and a fellow was cutting off the lights,
43 I don't know which way I went.
44
45 Q As you ran down the road you came to Wyoming Avenue--

CONFIDENTIAL

1169

(SNOW)

DECLASSIFIEDAuthority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

287

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A I don't know anything about the roads.
2
3 Q Which way did you go after you got your club?
4 A I went down across the field.
5
6 Q When you got your club you went between 700 and 701 in the
7 direction of the Italian Area?
8 A It seems like to me this is 719 right here, I guess there was
9 an open field in here, right here, and I ran down here.
10
11 Q Then you didn't go between 700 and 701, you ran parallel to
12 Building 700 on the south side of it, in between Building 700 and
13 Lawton Road, is that right?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Did you run behind Building 700?
17 A Yes, sir, I was right here, I was hit, I cut across this way and
18 the fellow came outside.
19
20 Q When you came to the rear of Building 700 someone cut out the
21 lights in the mess hall?
22 A No, sir, I was in here I guess and this light went off and when
23 I went up I started to come this way and cut him off and I came on this
24 side and I was struck.
25
26 Q Whoever cut off the light you were trying to intercept?
27 A That is what I don't know, I thought he was going to come out.
28
29 Q Who was in the building that you were going to get?
30 A An Italian I suppose.
31
32 Q How do you know?
33 A I saw him moving, going down here and then the light went off.
34
35 Q Are you sure it was an Italian in that building?
36 A That is what I taken it to be.
37
38 Q That building belongs to the 578th Port Company and there were
39 colored soldiers in Building 700.
40 A This wasn't the building.
41
42 Q You ran beyond the Y and came to one of these buildings?
43 A I was in the Italian Area.
44
45 Q You ran beyond Building 700 into the Italian Area?

CONFIDENTIAL

1170

(SNOW)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

288

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.

2
3 Q When you got to the Italian Area, did you stop at the first
4 building you came to inside the Italian Area?5 A I ran down Lawton Road until I was close to Building 708
6 and I saw the light go off inside that building and I saw an Italian
7 starting to run to the building before the light went off and
8 I saw the fellow move around and go in the building and when the light
9 went off I was going to try to spot him and catch him and I ran around
10 the corner of the building, but I was hit before, I was hit from the
11 back by a fellow behind me and this fellow came up behind me about
12 a few minutes after I was struck.13
14 Q A few seconds after you were struck?15 A Yes, sir, and he came up behind me and I was on my knees trying
16 to get up and at that time he picked me up and carried me to my barracks
17 and someone said "Snow" and I raised up in bed and I seen this fellow
18 by the name of West, he said, "That is Snow", then the fellows came and
19 crowded around and he said to get back and they led me outside to get some
20 air and I was bleeding pretty terrible and they called an ambulance.21
22 Q And they took you to the hospital?

23 A Yes, sir.

24
25 Q Going back to Lawton Road and the time you were coming around
26 the end of the building, when you first came up to the building you ran
27 up to the door to intercept the fellow trying to get out?

28 A I was going to, I never did get around to the door.

29
30 Q You were waiting to intercept the fellows that came out of that
31 building, should they come out?

32 A Yes, sir.

33
34 Q You were going to rap the hell out of the fellows that came
35 out of that building?

36 A Yes, sir.

37
38 Q And you had a 2-by-4 to do it with?

39 A Yes, sir.

40
41 Q You were ready to work on them?

42 A Yes, sir.

43
44 Q And no one came out before they got you?

45 A No, sir, didn't no one get out.

CONFIDENTIAL

1171

(SNOW)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

289

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You intended waiting for someone to come out of there?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q What were you going to hit him with?
5 A With that club.
6
7 Q Where were you going to hit him?
8 A I didn't pick no special place.
9
10 Q Were you going to try to hit them on the head?
11 A That depended, he was fighting and I was fighting and I couldn't
12 tell where I was hitting.
13
14 Q You were going to try to hit him on the head?
15 A I wasn't going to pick no special place.
16
17 Q Wouldn't it hurt worse if you hit them on the head?
18 A Sometimes it do and sometimes it don't, it depends on where you
19 might be hit.
20
21 Q You didn't get to hit a soul?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q Now, who picked you up?
25 A This fellow, we started to go back up and pick up the clubs with.
26
27 Q You and he had been together all the way along?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q You two were the first two to go in the area?
31 A I wasn't the first, when I got there they carried me back up and
32 called an ambulance and they were just going down there.
33
34 Q When they carried you back through the crowd near the mess hall,
35 Building 700, the big crowd was getting ready then?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q Did they say anything to you?
39 A Yes, sir, a bunch of them came and crowded around me.
40
41 Q Did they say anything?
42 A Oh, they asked what they did.
43
44 Q Did you make any reply?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1172

(SNOW)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

290

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What did you tell them?
2 A I said, "They done hit me."
3
4 Q What did the boys say who were there and observed you being
5 carried back?
6 A They were just around me and they asked me who hit me and
7 I told them the Italians hit me.
8
9 Q What did they say?
10 A They was cussing and going on.
11
12 Q What else particularly did they say.
13 A Just were cussing, I don't want to use some of the language.
14
15 Q Use the language they used, what did they say?
16 A Well, sir, I would rather not say.
17
18 Q Go on, we are all men, we know cussing, what did they say?
19 A Going to beat the hell out of those mother fuckers, and like
20 that, cussing and going on.
21
22 Q Did the fellows seem more excited and did it make them want to
23 fight a little more?
24 A Sure, I felt like it would when they saw Montgomery and seen
25 I got into it.
26
27 Q You thought that inasmuch as you were a casualty, it would put
28 a little more feeling in them?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q And you undoubtedly made the remark to go beat the hell out of
32 them?
33 A I didn't make no remark, I told them they hit me.
34
35 Q Didn't you tell them to go back and beat the hell out of them?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q You wanted them to, didn't you?
39 A After I got to the hospital I tried to get out to go back.
40
41 Q Do you think you could have made it?
42 A No, sir, I was bleeding too bad, my right ear was split open.
43
44 Q Do you know who hit you?
45 A The Italians must have hit me.

CONFIDENTIAL

1173

(SNOW)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJA NARA Date 06/12/02

291

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you see the person that hit you?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Then it could have been a colored soldier that hit you, couldn't
5 it?
6 A I didn't see any others down there.
7
8 Q Did you see the man come out of the door and hit you?
9 A He must have been waiting by the barracks, squatting down when
10 I came around the corner.
11
12 Q He was waiting for you?
13 A That is the way he did it.
14
15 Q He kind of ambushed you?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q And you walked right into it?
19 A I was running.
20
21 Q Didn't you know that you ought to have someone in front of you
22 to run interference for yourself?
23 A I was running but he caught me anyway.
24
25 Q You wanted to get there first?
26 A I wasn't particular to get there first.
27
28 Q You wanted to get the Italian?
29 A Sure, I was going to fight.
30
31 Q You were going in the barracks if necessary?
32 A If they didn't come out I was going in.
33
34 Q What were you going to do?
35 A Fight them.
36
37 Q As you were running along, did you have in mind what you were going
38 to do to those fellows?
39 A I had the intention to go and fight.
40
41 Q Didn't you think of what you were going to do as you ran down the
42 road?
43 A Did I have my mind on going down there?
44
45 Q Yes.

CONFIDENTIAL

1174

(SNOW)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

292

CONFIDENTIAL

A I was going to fight the Italians.

1 Q How about the club, did you get the biggest one you could find?

2 A I pulled up a club out of the ground.

3
4 Q How long did it take you to get it out of the ground?5 A It was a little fence with wire nailed to it, about so long, after
6 I got it out I got my feet on it.7
8 Q You say there was some wire on the boards?

9 A Strands of wire.

10
11 Q Why didn't you get a smaller board, a 1-by-4?

12 A I didn't run into nothing like that.

13
14 Q You would rather have a 2-by-4?

15 A I wouldn't rather, I should have stayed and rolled my pack.

16
17 Q You didn't like the result of that fight?

18 A I didn't like the result because I got hit.

19
20 Q You went to the hospital that night?

21 A Yes, sir.

22
23 Q When did you come back, the next morning?24 A The next morning I came back and the Lieutenant came up and told
25 me to get ready that I was sick and the sergeant came along and helps me
26 pack, I wasn't able, and they sent me back to the hospital.27
28 Q How long did you stay in the hospital?

29 A About three weeks.

30
31 Q Then after you came back, where did you go?

32 A I went down to the compound, this compound.

33
34 Q In the Fort Lawton area?

35 A Yes, sir.

36
37 Q And you have been in the compound up there ever since?

38 A No, sir, we are over here at the guard house.

39
40 Q And while you were in the compound did you discuss your part in
41 the fight with any of the rest of the boys?

42 A No, sir, I haven't said anything about it.

43
44 Q Didn't they want to talk about it?

45 A They asked me how I got hit.

CONFIDENTIAL

1175

(SNOW)

DECLASSIFIED
Authority 735033
By SJD NARA Date 06/12/02

293

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q They asked you how you got hit?
2 A Yes, sir, we laugh about it.
3
4 Q Did they tell you how much fun they had had?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q No one ever told you they had revenge for the knock you got?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Do you have anything else you would like to add to your
11 testimony?
12 A No, sir.
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1176

(SNOW) (END)

294

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. James Chandler, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 29 September 1944 by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4
5

6 The witness was sworn.
7
8

9 Q State your name, organization, and serial number.

10 A Private James Chandler, 37731142, 650th Port Company, Fort
11 Lawton, Washington.
12

13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir.
16

17 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, where were you wne you heard
18 about this fight.

19 A When I first heard about it I just came from the bus stop with my
20 wife and mother.
21

22 Q You had taken her up to the bus stop?

23 A Yes, sir.
24

25 Q And you came back to the area in which you lived?

26 A Yes, sir.
27

28 Q What building do you live in?

29 A I think it was 719.
30

31 Q Is that the building across from Building 700; the mess hall?

32 A Yes, sir, 719.
33

34 Q About what time did you arrive back at 719?

35 A I don't know exactly what time it was.
36

37 Q What were they doing around that building when you got back there?

38 A Quite a few of the gang was gone, they was fighting down there.
39

40 Q Could you hear the fight going on when you first arrived?

41 A Just heard a noise.
42

43 Q Windows being broken out, you could hear that?

44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1177

(CHANDLER)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You could hear hollering and clubbing going on?
2 A I heard hollering.'
3
4 Q Now, after you arrived back there and heard this fighting going
5 on down there, did you go over toward Building 700, this mess hall?
6 A I went- - I didn't go too near, I went by the mess hall.
7
8 Q What did you do while you were around the mess hall?
9 A Nothing.
10
11 Q Weren't there a bunch of fellows gathered on the southside of
12 the mess hall?
13 A I don't know, I didn't see anyone, I didn't even stop at the
14 mess hall.
15
16 Q Which side of the mess hall did you pass as you went toward the
17 It alian Area?
18 A I went on the left-hand side, I was on the left side toward
19 Lawton Road.
20
21 Q Then you passed on the left side of the mess hall and went down
22 Lawton Road?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q When you arrived at the intersection of Wyoming Avenue and Lawton
26 Road, did you stop there?
27 A No, sir.
28
29 Q Did you go on down Lawton Road and cut behind Building 708 and
30 go down to the area by that route?
31 A I went down to the building.
32
33 Q To the orderly room?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q Now, as you moved down the road from Building 700 toward the Italian
37 Area and toward the orderly room, did you see any individuals whom you
38 knew?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q Was there anyone walking up and down that road as you went down?
42 A No, sir, I didn;t see anyone I knew.
43
44 Q All the fighting was going on while you were going down there?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q When you arrived close to Building 708 did you see any fighting
2 around that building?

3 A No, sir, there was no fighting going on.
4

5 Q When you got around Building 709 on the south side, did you see
6 any fighting?

7 A I am getting mixed up on the buildings, I don't know the numbers.
8

9 Q That is the second one.

10 A I didn't pay any attention to no building but the orderly room.
11

12 Q You went directly from your barracks to the orderly room, which
13 is Building 713?

14 A Yes, sir.
15

16 Q Now, when you arrived in the vicinity of the orderly room, what
17 was the first thing you saw?

18 A The first thing I saw-- what do you mean?
19

20 Q What was the first thing you saw there? Did you see fighting,
21 men hitting one another with clubs?

22 A When I got there there was some-- I don't know who they were
23 because it was dark, it was inside the first place in the orderly room
24 and they was doing talking and keeping up a loud noise, that is all.
25

26 Q Now, I show you a floor plan of the orderly room which is Building
27 713 and I want to point out to you that Door A is the front door, the
28 door that goes into the end of the building, into the little room and
29 Door E is the side door that goes into the small room and there was a bed
30 I think on this side of the door, the left side and one on the right side
31 of the door. Door B is the door that leads into the large orderly room
32 where the American personnel stayed and where most of the fighting went
33 on. Room Y is the room that was the office of the American Captain on duty
34 with the Italian Company and where the testimony shows a large number
35 of Italians were lying on the floor and under the desk in that room and
36 I will ask you from what direction did you first approach Building 713?

37 A Well, this place that I noticed was the orderly room where there
38 was an American boy in there.
39

40 Q That is this big room?

41 A It must have been.
42

43 Q Where were you standing when you saw the American soldier in the
44 big room, Room X?

45 A At the door.

CONFIDENTIAL

179

(CHANDLER)

297

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Then you were standing by Door B when you saw all these American
2 soldiers there and some Italians in Room X; is that right?
3 A Yes, sir.
4
- 5 Q Now, you undoubtedly came up to the building from the direction
6 of Door E?
7 A Yes, sir.
8
- 9 Q As you approached the building coming toward Door E, you must
10 have seen a number of colored soldiers standing around the door on the
11 outside of this building near the window?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
- 14 Q Of that group you saw a good many persons whose names you know?
15 A Not many because-- I can't tell you who it was because I
16 wasn't paying any attention because it was dark, no lights. I didn't
17 see anything, I seen Willie Basden.
18
- 19 Q Where did you first see Willie Basden on the night of August 14th,
20 1944 in the Italian Area?
21 A By the first door.
22
- 23 Q Standing by Door E?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
- 26 Q And Willie had a club?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
- 29 Q What was he doing with the club?
30 A Nothing.
31
- 32 Q Did you see Willie hit any Italians as they ran out that door?
33 A No, sir.
34
- 35 Q Did you see any Italians?
36 A They wasn't coming out the door.
37
- 38 Q They were inside the building then?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
- 41 Q What kind of a club did he have, was it a long white club?
42 A I don't know, I don't think it was, it was a club about like that.
43
- 44 Q You are sure he had one?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

120

(CHANDLER)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You are not sure what kind he had?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Did you see any others?
5 A I seen Johnnie Ceaser.
6
7 Q Where did you first see Johnnie Ceaser?
8 A On the left-hand side.
9
10 Q On the left-hand side of Door E as you approached that door on
11 the night of August 14th, 1944?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q What kind of a club did Johnnie have?
15 A I didn't see any.
16
17 Q Are you sure?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Did he have a knife in his hand?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q After you saw Johnnie, who was the next man you saw?
24 A I saw Booker Thornton.
25
26 Q Where did you first see Booker?
27 A Outside the orderly room as I was approaching.
28
29 Q On the right side of the door, Door E?
30 A Right.
31
32 Q What kind of a club did Booker Thornton have in his hand?
33 A I don't remember seeing any club, he wasn't in the light.
34
35 Q Was Booker Thornton looking through the window when you first
36 observed him?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q Either Booker or Johnnie Ceaser, did you see either of those
40 men later that night?
41 A I saw Johnnie Ceaser.
42
43 Q Where did you see Johnnie the next time?
44 A After we left there, after I went inside the orderly room,
45 inside this place.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

299

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Room Z?
2 A The next door, I got through the next door, the American boy, one
3 of them was hurt and looked like he was bleeding and the other one said,
4 I understood, "We are American boys in here."
5
6 Q That was some soldier that said he was an American?
7 A An American boy.
8
9 Q You were standing in Room X when he said that?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q Who did he direct those remarks to?
13 A To me.
14
15 Q What did you do?
16 A Willie Basden had run to the door.
17
18 Q To Door B?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q Why had he run to Door B.
22 A He didn't run, he just came into it, but I was ahead of him.
23
24 Q You were in front of Willie as you approached Door B?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q And you went inside the room?
28 A No, sir, I stood at the door and this boy said-- this American
29 boy said he was an American, so when I seen that Willie Basden was trying
30 to get in the room with the club I told him they were American boys
31 in here and don't bother them.
32
33 Q You did stop Willie Basden from going into the room with the
34 club and striking the fellows in there?
35 A That is right.
36
37 Q And you did that by standing in Door B?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q Who were the others you recognized?
41 A I didn't recognize any more.
42
43 Q When you came up to the area of the orderly room, you saw a
44 jeep, didn't you?
45 A Well, who I saw in the jeep at that time was Richard Barber.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

300

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What was Richard Barber doing with the jeep?
2 A He was in the jeep driving.
3
4 Q Against the tent?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q How many times did Richard run into the tent?
8 A I only seen him run into the tent and back up and start again,
9 I didn't pay any attention to that.
10
11 Q Did you see Richard get out of the jeep?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Did you see anyone else get in the jeep?
15 A No, sir, I never did see the jeep any more, I never did look
16 toward the jeep.
17
18 Q Did you know on the night of August 14th, 1944, Willie Curry?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q Have you since learned who Willie Curry is?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q Did you see Willie Curry in the area on the night of August 14th
25 1944?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q If you did observe him you wouldn't recognize him that night?
29 A No, sir, I haven't recognized seeing him out there.
30
31 Q Did you see John Lee Hamilton?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q Where did you see him?
35 A I can't tell, I remember seeing him some place down there.
36
37 Q Did Hamilton have a club when you saw him?
38 A I don't remember.
39
40 Q Do you remember what he had?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q But you definitely saw him in the Italian Area on the night of
44 August 14th, 1944 in the vicinity of Building 713?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

301

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did you see Suttliff?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q What did he have?
5 A I didn't recognize anything he had.
6
7 Q Did he have a knife?
8 A I don't know.
9
10 Q He may have?
11 A I don't know.
12
13 Q He could have and you didn't see it; is that right?
14 A That is right.
15
16 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, did you see Walter Jackson?
17 A He was in the Italian Area, that is the best I can tell.
18
19 Q In the Italian Area?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q What did he have in his hand when you saw him?
23 A I don't remember anything. I remember seeing some boys faces in
24 the light, I recognized their face, but I can't tell where or exactly what
25 they had.
26
27 Q What weapon did you have with you when you entered the room?
28 You say you stood in Door B?
29 A A dirk.
30
31 Q Did you have it in your hand when you went in the building?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q When you entered Door B and stopped Basden from coming through
35 that door toward Room X, did you have to threaten Basden with the knife to
36 hold him back?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q When he saw you had a knife he stopped, did he?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q He didn't open up with his club against you to make you get out
43 of the door?
44 A No, sir, he said, "Let me get in", and I told him I understood
45 they was Americans.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

#)@ 302

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did he have on glasses?

2 A I don't remember.

3

4 Q Here are several knives. Will you point out the knife you
5 had with you on the night of August 14th, 1944 as you entered Room X
6 and carried that knife openly in your hand.

7 A This is the knife.

8

9 (INVESTIGATING OFFICER: Let the record show that the witness
10 identified dirk number 2250 with the marks CATTARAUGUS and with a 6 inch
11 blade as being the knife which he carried into Room X on the night of
12 August 14th, 1944 during the riot between the Italians and the colored
13 soldiers.)

14

15 Q Now, while you were inside Room Z, who in that room did you
16 see besides Basden?

17 A I didn't see no one that I knowed because I was about the first
18 one there, I don't know how it happened, but it happened to be the
19 first one in the room after they got the door off.

20

21 Q The door had to be knocked open?

22 A Yes, sir. I didn't have anything in my hand but a dirk.

23

24 Q Who knocked the door down?

25 A I don't know.

26

27 Q What was used to knock the door down?

28 A I cannot tell you that.

29

30 Q You were the first one through the door when it was battered down?

31 A There was somebody that smashed the door open, I think he pulled
32 it open, but he is a boy with the company.

33

34 Q What was his name?

35 A James Coverson.

36

37 Q James Coverson was the man who opened Door E on the night of
38 August 14th, 1944 and you were the first one to enter after the door
39 was opened?

40 A Yes, sir.

41

42 Q Now, did Coverson after opening the door come in the building?

43 A I don't know, but he must have come behind me, I don't know.

44

45 Q Now, when you entered Room Z, what was the first thing you observed

CONFIDENTIAL

135

(CHANDLER)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 in that room?
2 A Not anything.
3
4 Q Did you see a bed there on the left-hand side?
5 A I didn't see a bed.
6
7 Q Did you see any Italians in that room?
8 A No, sir, there wasn't anyone in that room.
9
10 Q When you got to Door B, was it open?
11 A Open.
12
13 Q After you had gotten through Door E to Door B it was open and
14 you stopped in the door?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q Still holding the knife in your hand?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q And you talked to the American soldiers who you have previously
21 referred to that came toward you?
22 A No, sir, he just stood up and he said, "We are American soldiers,
23 don't let them bother us," and they was fighting me in the door and I
24 had my knife and I told Basden to get back.
25
26 Q You hit no one with your knife?
27 A No, sir.
28
29 Q You just waved it in the air?
30 A Yes, sir, across the face of the door.
31
32 Q And you kept no one from going in?
33 A I guess I got too much chicken to cut anybody.
34
35 Q After you stood there waving your knife and keeping the soldiers
36 from entering, you saw Basden there?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q And behind Basden who came?
40 A I don't know, sir.
41
42 Q As you stood in Door B, whom did you observe besides the man doing
43 the talking?
44 A There wer men back on this some from our boys.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

304

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did some of the colored boys come through?
2 A No, sir, I don't know anything about that part, I didn't
3 see that at all.
4
5 Q Now, were all the men in there American soldiers and Italian
6 soldiers?
7 A The men in there I saw, they said they were American soldiers
8 and I wasn't interested in anything else, you know, only about the
9 American boys because I am an American soldier like him.
10
11 Q You were interested in the Italians, you were doing your best to
12 fight them and kill them.
13 A They was the ones they was after.
14
15 Q You were going to get all the Italians out of that room that was
16 in the building.
17 A I don't know what they did, after I went to the door and this
18 tall slim boy said they was American boys, I wasn't interested in
19 nothing, I thought the whole line up was American boys and I was ready to
20 throw them back.
21
22 Q Didn't you see the white soldiers with Italian armbands on.
23 A I didn't pay any attention to that, I could only observe about
24 two boys and one was bleeding and the one wasn't hurt and I think Johnnie
25 Ceaser, I think he is the one that went over and got the boy that was hurt
26 and he got him and taken him out.
27
28 Q Did you see Ceaser go in the room?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q What did he have in his hand?
32 A Nothing, he just passed and walked over and got this boy and taken
33 him out, the one that was wounded, I think he is a sergeant.
34
35 Q Did Johnnie lay his club down before he went in?
36 A I didn't see him with a club.
37
38 Q When he went in the room and got the wounded man and took him
39 out, he didn't have a club in his hand?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q Who else besides the tall American soldier and the wounded soldier
43 did you see?
44 A I seen several back of this, in this part of the room.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

305

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Were any of them bleeding?
2 A No, sir, there wasn't but one I seen bleeding.
3
4 Q Were these windows knocked out tat that time?
5 A I don't know.
6
7 Q Could you see out through the window?
8 A I wasn't paying any attention.
9
10 Q Here in the room, did you see a bunch of Italians in the west end?
11 A These are the only ones I seen.
12
13 Q You didn't see any soldiers over in the west end of Room X?
14 A That was the way the one boy that was cut was going, the one
15 boy was standing there and the one that was cut was here about the center
16 of the wall.
17
18 Q Back in the west corner of this building?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q Where was the man cut that you saw?
22 A I don't know, the blood made me sick at my stomach and I left.
23
24 Q Was it on the shoulder?
25 A Here.
26
27 Q On the right chest?
28 A On the right side.
29
30 Q Did you see anyone hit over the head in that building?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q Did you see a bunch of Italians go from X to Y?
34 A No, sir.
35
36 Q As you stood there Johnnie Ceaser passed you and went into Room X?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q What did you do with the knife that you didn't keep him from
40 going in?
41 A After that he said he was an American soldier.
42
43 Q Who said that?
44 A That boy.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1 3

(CHANDLER)

306

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q You turned around?
2 A Yes, sir, after keeping Basden out of the door. I don't know
3 whether Basden stepped back, there was a lot of noise around the place
4 and after I had seen the blood I was through, I turned and walked back.
5
6 Q You went in Door B and stepped into Room Z?
7 A Yes, sir.
8
9 Q While standing in this room, wasn't this door being chopped on?
10 A I don't know.
11
12 Q You mean you stood there and didn't hear that door being chopped
13 down?
14 A I wasn't there that long.
15
16 Q Now, as you stood in Door B and getting ready to go in this room,
17 you heard noise all around the building?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Could you hear a noise toward Door D?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q Hadn't you heard the beating on that door?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q The door was closed then?
27 A I guess so.
28
29 Q Did you see anyone enter D as you entered B?
30 A No, sir.
31
32 Q Or come out?
33 A I don't know.
34
35 Q Could you hear a noise in there?
36 A I don't know, I heard a noise.
37
38 Q You could hear hollering in Room R?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q When you turned around to go into Room Z, how many colored soldiers
42 gathered in that room?
43 A Well, I don't know exactly how many.
44
45 Q Were there twenty?

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

307

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A There wasn't that many.
2
3 Q Would you say ten?
4 A I don't know, sir. I imagine it was about five or six.
5
6 Q Five or six colored soldiers entered room Z while you stood at
7 Door B?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Did you tell those fellows those were American boys?
11 A I told the fellows those were American boys, don't bother them,
12 to go some other place.
13
14 Q To leave that room where the Americans were and go where the Italians
15 were, you told them to get out of that room where the Americans were and go
16 somewhere and seek the Italians?
17 A I said to leave here where these American boys were, to leave
18 the boys alone and go someplace and get the Italians, that these were
19 American boys.
20
21 Q What did they say to that?
22 A One of the boys hollered, "Very good," but they wouldn't unless
23 I had authority over them.
24
25 Q Did you have any authority over them?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q They didn't leave?
29 A No, sir, so I left.
30
31 Q You left the room?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q Before you left the room, who besides Basden did you see in the
35 room?
36 A Nobody.
37
38 Q You mean in that whole room you didn't see anybody?
39 A No one I could recognize, I don't want to tell a story.
40
41 Q You have later seen them and associated the face with the name?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q Are you sure?
45 A I am sure of it.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You didn't see anyone in Room Z other than Basden and several
2 men that went through there?
3 A No, sir, because someone said help that boy out.
4
5 Q Do you know who that was?
6 A No, sir.
7
8 Q Then you came through Door E?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q As you came out was there a crowd gathered around the door?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Who were they?
15 A When I came back I saw the MP's out there and Johnnie Pinckney.
16
17 Q The colored MP's?
18 A When I came back down to the outside the MP was standing out there,
19 he came up with Johnnie Pinckney I think, I don't know how many MP's there
20 were and I went back to my barracks.
21
22 Q You still had your knife?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q You took it back with you?
26 A Yes, sir, and gave it to the Captain.
27
28 Q Did anyone else have a knife except you?
29 A No one else had a knife except me.
30
31 Q When did you see your knife again?
32 A I never seen it until I came and gave it to the Captain.
33
34 Q When you came outside the door you saw Pinckney and you saw other
35 colored soldiers who you recognized?
36 A I didn't see anyone, the MP was standing right in front of the
37 orderly room.
38
39 Q Was he trying to come in the building?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q Was Pinckney trying to come in?
43 A No, sir, Pinckney was telling the boys to leave, the MP's is here
44 and for the boys to go back to their companies.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And you started back?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Who left with you?
5 I I went by my lone self.
6
7 Q You saw some other boys?
8 A I seen Coverson and Booker Thornton, they went back.
9
10 Q That is all you remember?
11 A Yes, sir, we went back, and I think I told you Booker Thornton
12 was going back.
13
14 Q Did Booker tell you all he had been doing?
15 A No, sir.
16
17 Q Did Booker have a knife or a club?
18 A He didn't have anything at that time.
19
20 Q He had thrown down his club?
21 A I guess so, he had if he had one.
22
23 Q When you went outside the building, did you come around the
24 building to this door?
25 A No, sir.
26
27 Q Which way did you go when you left Door E?
28 A I went angling back this way.
29
30 Q Between Building 709 and the latrine. Did you go in between the
31 two tents in front of the building?
32 A I don't know.
33
34 Q Do you remember the two tents?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Do you remember this big room in back of the first one, next to the
38 orderly room?
39 A I don't remember that barracks.
40
41 Q You don't remember which way you left?
42 A Only I think when I left I went straight up the hill to the road.
43
44 Q To the road?
45 A Yes, sir, but I didn't go down the road, I went across the road, right

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 back across. I went back the same way I came.
2

3 Q You went back the short way, parallel to Building 700 and back into
4 Building 719?

5 A Yes, sir.
6

7 Q When you got back did you go in your barracks?

8 A When I got back to the barracks, several MP's and the first sergeant
9 was there and he was talking to the boys and made the boys go inside.
10

11 Q Did you see the first sergeant talking to the MP's?

12 A He wasn't talking to the MP's, he was talking to the boys at
13 that time.
14

15 Q What were the MP's doing?

16 A Sitting there.
17

18 Q Did you talk to them?

19 A No, sir.
20

21 Q Did you hear them talking to anyone?

22 A No, sir, the first sergeant is the only one, I heard say anything
23 and I went upstairs and pulled off my clothes and went to bed.
24

25 Q Before you got in bed was there a lot of boys talking about the
26 fight?

27 A The rest of the boys was down there. Booker Thornton was there.
28

29 Q He came in with you?

30 A Yes, sir.
31

32 Q Who else came in after you and Booker Thornton?

33 A I don't know.
34

35 Q Weren't there a few of the boys discussing the fight?

36 A No, sir. Directly after this Lieutenant Sistruck, the Officer of
37 the Day, he came and everything was quiet.
38

39 Q What did he say?

40 A I don't know, he came up, I heard something, I heard his voice, but
41 I was very sleepy.
42

43 Q Was the light out then?

44 A I think he turned the light out.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Everybody went to sleep?
2 A Yes, sir, I guess so.
3
4 Q And the next day you moved in this Area No. 1?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q After you got up there did you discuss the fight with a bunch
8 of the boys?
9 A No, sir, no one discussed it with me.
10
11 Q Were they afraid?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Of what?
15 A Scared, afraid someone might talk I guess.
16
17 Q Everybody knew who was in the fight.
18 A I didn't hear them discuss it.
19
20 Q You didn't hear anyone discuss the fight at all?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q And you didn't use your knife on anyone?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q All of these persons whom you have named are the only persons you
27 recognized on the night of August 14th, 1944 in the Italian Area while the
28 fight was going on?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q When you arrived in the area you state that one window leading
32 into Room Z had been broken?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q How about the window leading into Room Y?
36 A I don't know.
37
38 Q Did you observe the window in Room R broken?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q You cannot say whether it was broken out at that time?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q Did you see anyone jumping out of the window when the Italians
45 were trying to escape?

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

312

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q While you were in Room X you didn't see any colored soldiers
4 in that room other than yourself?
5 A I was in further than the door.
6
7 Q But you did see Johnny Ceaser go through there and get the
8 American soldier?
9 A Yes, sir, he came by me just as I was reaching the place.
10
11 Q When he got ahold of the American soldier, which door did he
12 take him out?
13 A Out here.
14
15 Q Door B and E?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q He passed you?
19 A No, sir, I beat him out, I came out before he did. That is
20 when I left.
21
22 Q When you got outside the building the MP's were there?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q And how long after the MP's arrived was it until the fight was
26 over in the area?
27 A I don't know, sir, because I went back to the barracks, I went
28 straight upstairs.
29
30 Q Did you see any colored soldiers who had a rope and were
31 carrying off an Italian with them?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q Did you ever use that knife of yours to hit anyone?
35 A No, sir, I never have.
36
37 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 did you hit anyone?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q Are you sure?
41 A Yes, sir, I am sure. That knife has never been used since I
42 had it.
43
44 Q Did you know a test was run on that knife after it was turned
45 over to the Lieutenant?
A It may have been.

CONFIDENTIAL

35

(CHANDLER)

313

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Do you know what the test showed?
2 A What?
3
4 Q It showed human blood, it cut a human being.
5 A That knife hasn't cut no one.
6
7 Q How do you account for the fact it had blood on it?
8 A That knife didn't have any blood.
9
10 Q The test definitely showed human blood.
11 A No, sir, not that knife.
12
13 Q I want you to look here. Benzidine Test shows presence of blood.
14 A That knife was not used.
15
16 Q I want to know why you took the knife out of the sheath when you
17 went into the area if you didn't intend to use it?
18 A I didn't use it.
19
20 Q Why did you take the knife out of the sheath if you didn't intend
21 to use it?
22 A I taken it out for protection.
23
24 Q Why had made an assault upon you?
25 A No one.
26
27 Q You were afraid someone would make an assault?
28 A Well, I didn't know.
29
30 Q When you left Building 719 and went down in the area you took
31 the knife with you?
32 A Yes, sir, I had it already on.
33
34 Q And you didn't attempt to take any other weapon?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q You didn't think you needed anything else.
38 A I didn't take anything else.
39
40 Q You went down to kill the Italians, didn't you?
41 A Well, I went down there, but after I got down my mind changed.
42
43 Q When you went down you went down to kill the Italians?
44 A No, sir, not me.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHANDLER)

314

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What was your purpose in going there?
2 A Just going.
3
4 Q To see the fight?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q And you carried the knife in your hand to see the fight?
8 A After I went down there I got the knife.
9
10 Q Why did you take the knife out?
11 A I figured someone might hit me.
12
13 Q Did anyone attempt to hit you?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q This American soldier who you saw that was cut and bleeding,
17 do you know who hit him?
18 A No, sir, I don't.
19
20 Q Did you hit him?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q You cut that boy, didn't you?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q When you were standing in that doorway, you were keeping Basden
27 out of the room?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q And you don't know who hit the American soldier soldier?
31 A I don't know, I didn't do it.
32
33 Q What did you do with the knife after the fight?
34 A I taken it back to the barracks with me.
35
36 Q And the next day did someone pick the knife up from you?
37 A Captain Kapitz, he said, "All those that got those knives give
38 them to me."
39
40 Q And you turned it over to him?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q Did he say he would return it?
44 A He said the knife would be returned to us when we got on board, we
45 were supposed to go across.

CONFIDENTIAL

1197

(CHANDLER)

315

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q They would be returned to you after you got on the boat?
2 A Yes, sir, that is what he said.
3
4 Q Did he say what he was going to do with the knives?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q He just asked to turn the knife over to him and they would be
8 returned after you got on board?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q Do you have anything else you would like to add?
12 A No, sir.
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

138

(CHANDLER) (END)

316

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. Wallace A. Wooden, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 29 September 1944 by Lieut.
3 Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

4
5
6 The witness was sworn.

7
8
9 Q State your name, organization, and serial number.

10 A Wallace A. Wooden, 36789652, 650th Port Company, Fort Lawton,
11 Washington.

12
13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A No, sir.

16
17 (24th Article of War read and explained to the witness)

18
19 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, were you at Fort Lawton when
20 the colored soldiers attacked the Italian Quartermaster Company soldiers?

21 A I was.

22
23 Q What was the first mention you heard of the fight? What was the
24 first incident that called your attention to the fight?

25 A To tell the truth I was playing poker at the time the fight begun.

26
27 Q Shooting dice or playing poker?

28 A I wasn't shooting dice.

29
30 Q Who were you playing poker with?

31 A Nathaniel Spencer, Booker Thornton, William Wilson, William G.
32 Carter.

33
34 Q Who else?

35 A One of the fellows by the name of Townsell.

36
37 Q What Townsell was that, Booker?

38 A This fellow is from the 651st.

39
40 Q Where were you playing?

41 A In the extreme rear of Barracks 717.

42
43 Q Upstairs or down?

44 A Downstairs.

45

CONFIDENTIAL

1199

(WOODEN)

317

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q While you were playing, did you hear some noise outside the
2 building about 11 o'clock?

3 A No, sir, as a matter of fact I wasn't paying any attention to the
4 noise going on on the outside.

5
6 Q What happened inside the building?

7 A Some fellow came in there and blew a whistle for everybody to
8 fall out, but we didn't pay any attention.

9
10 Q Who blew the whistle?

11 A I don't know.

12
13 Q Someone came in and blew a whistle?

14 A Yes, sir and said to fall out. I didn't pay any attention.

15
16 Q Then what else happened?

17 A That is all, as far as I recall.

18
19 Q What called your attention to the fight outside?

20 A As a matter of fact I didn't know there was a fight outside even
21 thought I heard the whistle. That was a common occurrence in their area,
22 boys playing with one another.

23
24 Q Didn't you go outside?

25 A No, sir, I didn't, not then.

26
27 Q When did you first go outside?

28 A Afterwards the game got small, there were three left and we decided
29 to stop and I walked outside and stopped and went to the latrine before
30 I walked outside and I walked across the street and came back.

31
32 Q In the vicinity of Building 700 you went?

33 A Yes, sir.

34
35 Q What was going on then at the mess hall?

36 A At that particular time I can't say what was going on inside,
37 I didn't go on inside.

38
39 Q What was going on outside?

40 A A few fellows were standing and talking to themselves.

41
42 Q What were they doing?

43 A Standing talking.

44
45 Q What about?

CONFIDENTIAL

1200

(WOODEN)

318

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A I cannot say.
2
3 Q Was there a lot of talk about Willie Montgomery getting hit?
4 A I did hear something about that.
5
6 Q Some Italians had hit Willie?
7 A He had been hit.
8
9 Q Was the whistle blown outside of your quarters?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q Was the bunch there gathering and breaking down the fence?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q They had broken down the fence?
16 A I guess so.
17
18 Q Did you see the fence?
19 A I didn't pay any attention.
20
21 Q Was the fight going on down in the Italian Area then?
22 A I cannot say truthfully.
23
24 Q You didn't hear the noise?
25 A At the time I was there I couldn't say it was fighting.
26
27 Q You didn't hear the noise?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q When was the time you heard the noise?
31 A I didn't hear any noise when I came out, there were a few fellows
32 talking to themselves, but I didn't go up and try to listen.
33
34 Q How long did you stay outside the building?
35 A Several minutes.
36
37 Q Fifteen minutes?
38 A I don't know, you know.
39
40 Q Would you guess it would be ten or fifteen minutes or more?
41 A I don't know, I couldn't give no statement definitely.
42
43 Q After you heard the men talking around Barracks 700, where did
44 you go?
45 A To my barracks.

CONFIDENTIAL

201

(WOODEN)

319

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What did you do after you got back up there?
2 A I went to bed.
3
4 Q When you went to bed what was happening in the barracks?
5 A A lot of boys-- some of them was packing their duffle bags
6 and some of them was sitting around talking.
7
8 Q What were they talking about?
9 A That I didn't hear, everybody was in bed in the barracks and they
10 were fooling around.
11
12 Q They were talking about this fight, weren't they?
13 A I don't know, sir.
14
15 Q Didn't you hear some of them talking about the fight?
16 A Not at that time.
17
18 Q And you went to bed?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q And later you were awakened?
22 A No, sir, I didn't awaken any more until the following morning.
23
24 Q When did you hear them talking about the fight in the barracks?
25 A I didn't hear them.
26
27 Q When I asked you you said they weren't talking about the fight
28 right then.
29 A No, sir, I was in bed asleep.
30
31 Q When did you hear them talking about the fight?
32 A I didn't say they were talking about the fight in the barracks.
33 If I said it I didn't mean to say it, I didn't hear them talking about
34 the fight.
35
36 Q You have heard since that time a conversation carried on between
37 the members of your company about the fight?
38 A I heard some few fellows say something about it.
39
40 Q Where was that?
41 A In the guard house.
42
43 Q Since the fight?
44 A I heard them talking about they were sorry the fight happened.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1002

(WOODEN)

320

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who?
2 A Sims.
3
4 Q Jesse Sims?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q You heard Sims talking about it?
8 A He said he was sorry the thing happened.
9
10 Q He said he was there, didn't he?
11 A He didn't say.
12
13 Q Did he say what he did in the fight?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Did anyone in the fight say what they did?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q You heard no one that night in the barracks or subsequent to that
20 time in the guard house say anything about the fight or their participation
21 in it other than Sims?
22 A You know, a bunch of fellows were talking, you know, like things
23 happen.
24
25 Q Name the fellows.
26 A All of them, I don't know.
27
28 Q Name those you know.
29 A I heard Montgomery say he was sorry the fight happened.
30
31 Q Roy Montgomery, the bright colored boy?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q You heard him say he was sorry?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q What did he say he did?
38 A He didn't say.
39
40 Q He never told you he hit a man standing in Building 713?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Did you see him hit him?
44 A There was nobody-- I didn't see anybody fighting.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

203

(WOODEN)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You didn't see any fighting at all?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q And that is all you know about the fight?
5 A That is all, sir.
6
7 Q You went down there, didn't you?
8 A No, sir, I didn't have no part in it at all.
9
10 Q Didn't you get a club and go down there and help?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q What did you get mad at the Italians about?
14 A Me?
15
16 Q Yes.
17 A I haven't been mad at anyone.
18
19 Q Weren't you mad because they beat up Willie Montgomery?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q That didn't make you mad?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q You knew he had been hit?
26 A I didn't know if he did.
27
28 Q You saw him lying on the steps in front of Building 717?
29 A I did not.
30
31 Q You saw the group gathered around him while you were in front of
32 the building?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q Now, Wallace, you have been in a lot of trouble in your life?
36 A Yes, sir, I certainly have.
37
38 Q You have been tried for armed robbery?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q And convicted?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q And you know that other trouble you have been in, dealing in liquor
45 and running a house of prostitution, you know you have been tried for that?

CONFIDENTIAL

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1
- 2
- 3
- 4
- 5
- 6
- 7
- 8
- 9
- 10
- 11
- 12
- 13
- 14
- 15
- 16
- 17
- 18
- 19
- 20
- 21
- 22
- 23
- 24
- 25
- 26
- 27
- 28
- 29
- 30
- 31
- 32
- 33
- 34
- 35
- 36
- 37
- 38
- 39
- 40
- 41
- 42
- 43
- 44
- 45

A Yes, sir.

Q Now, do you have anything else you would like to tell me before you are excused?

A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

L205

(WOODEN) (END)

323

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. George L. Johnson, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 29 September 1944 by Lieut.
3 Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4
5

6 The witness was sworn.
7
8

9 Q State your name, organization, and serial number.

10 A George L. Johnson, 36897112, 651st Port Company, Fort Lawton,
11 Washington.
12

13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir.
16

17 Q Were you out at Fort Lawton on the night of August 14th, 1944
18 when the colored soldiers jumped on the Italians?

19 A Yes, sir.
20

21 Q What barracks do you sleep in?

22 A 672.
23

24 Q Were you in your barracks when you first heard of this fight?

25 A I was in bed.
26

27 Q You were in bed?

28 A Yes, sir.
29

30 Q And what was the first incident which drew your attention to the
31 fight?

32 A Well, I heard the noise, the first I heard of it I was frightened,
33 it scared me and I got up out of bed and went to the front door and I
34 heard fellows with sticks and as I got to the door Robert Smith was
35 standing in the door and the sergeant of our barracks, he said the boys
36 and the Italians are having it down there, I didn't do anything, I stood
37 there three or four minutes and went back and went to bed.
38

39 Q You went back to bed after you heard the fight?

40 A That is right.
41

42 Q When was the next time you got up?

43 A When I got back in bed and about 3:30 or 4 o'clock in the morning
44 the fellow across from me woke me up and told me to turn off the radio.
45 I then went back to sleep.

CONFIDENTIAL

1206

(JOHNSON)

324

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And you didn't get up until the next morning?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q That is all you know about the fight?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Wasn't there quite a few fellows came in after the fight?
8 A I wasn't up, I was in bed.
9
10 Q Who was sleeping next to you?
11 A Next to me was Leslie Porchi, and Albert Felton under me and
12 Marshall Moore on the other side.
13
14 Q When the fight started down there, George, wasn't there a bunch
15 of boys that ran out of your barracks down that way?
16 A I don't know anything about it.
17
18 Q Did you see any of them?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q You stayed in the barracks all the time?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q You never did leave the barracks?
25 A No, sir.
26
27 Q Who were the boys that went down that sleep in the barracks with
28 you?
29 A I don't know, sir.
30
31 Q You mean you don't know any of them in the fight?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q Were you in it?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q What would you say if four fellows identified you as being down
38 there?
39 A I would say that they was making a mistake.
40
41 Q You would say they were telling a lie, is that right?
42 A That is right.
43
44 Q Herman Johnson was there, wasn't he?
45 A I don't know, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHNSON)

325

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Do you know Willie Curry?

2 A A little bit.

3
4 Q Did you see Willie down there that night?

5 A I didn't see him when I wasn't down there.

6
7 Q You insist you weren't down there?

8 A That is right.

9
10 Q Do you have anyone to testify you were not there that you can
11 produce for us to question?

12 A Herman Johnson, he ought to be able to say.

13
14 Q Herman Johnson, you would like us to question Herman Johnson
15 concerning your whereabouts on the night of August 14th, 1944- is that right?

16 A That is right.

17
18 Q Now, if it was proven by evidence, George, that Herman Johnson
19 was down in the Italian Area on the night of August 14th, 1944 beating the
20 Italians, would you want us to use him as an alibi witness for you to
21 prove you were in your barracks?

22 A No, sir.

23
24 Q Do you know where Herman was that night?

25 A No, sir.

26
27 Q Do you know whether he was in the barracks that night?

28 A I don't remember seeing him.

29
30 Q Why do you want us to use Herman as a witness for you to prove
31 where you were on the night of August 14th, 1944?

32 A I don't know.

33
34 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, you state you were in your
35 bed; is that right?

36 A Yes, sir.

37
38 Q What time did you get intoxicated that night?

39 A I started around about 4:30 that evening, some boys in the
40 company got paid and brought up a lot of beer and about 8:30 I was pretty
41 well lit up and I went to bed.

42
43 Q You started drinking about 4:30 in the afternoon?

44 A Yes, sir, beer.

45

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHNSON)

326

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Where were you drinking?
2 A Down at the PX.
3
4 Q What boys were you drinking with?
5 A John R. Brown and Roy Montgomery.
6
7 Q Name the others you know.
8 A Theodore Davis was drinking beer.
9
10 Q Do you remember some more, that is only three?
11 A Some men in the company I don't know.
12
13 Q Some in the company you don't know?
14 A Yes, sir. Charles D. Lewis, Roy Lacey, Marshall Moore, that is
15 about all I can think of right now.
16
17 Q What time did you leave the PX?
18 A Around about 8:30 or a quarter to nine, something like that.
19
20 Q Did all of these boys leave with you?
21 A No, sir, Marshal left with me.
22
23 Q Where did you go from the PX with Marshall Moore?
24 A Straight to the barracks.
25
26 Q Does Marshall Moore live in the same barracks with you?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q Whereabouts does he stay?
30 A Right next to me.
31
32 Q You were kind of intoxicated when you went to your barracks about
33 8:30 or 9 o'clock?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q And you immediately went to bed?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q And you didn't see Herman Johnson or anybody else?
40 A No, sir, I don't remember.
41
42 Q Because if you were drunk you didn't see them?
43 A I didn't pay any attention or try to see them.
44
45 Q Did Marshall Moore help you up to your barracks and put you to bed?

CONFIDENTIAL

109

(JOHNSON)

327

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q Were you sick?
4 A Not exactly.
5
6 Q You got to your bunk and immediately went to sleep because you
7 were quite intoxicated?
8 A That is right.
9
10 Q When did you wake up next?
11 A When the fight started.
12
13 Q When the fight started?
14 A Yes, sir, the noise woke me up.
15
16 Q And you got up to see what it was all about?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q You didn't have to go to the latrine to vomit or anything?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q You got up when you heard about the fight?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q What did you do when you walked to the front door or before you
26 went to the front door, did you put on your clothes?
27 A I never did take them off.
28
29 Q You had your clothes on when you were in bed?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q What clothes did you have on?
33 A OD's.
34
35 Q Shoes?
36 A Shoes.
37
38 Q You hadn't taken your shoes off?
39 A No, sir, I didn't take anything off I had on.
40
41 Q Did you get your hat before you went to the front door?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q You went to the front door and looked out a few minutes, is that
45 right?

CONFIDENTIAL

219

(JOHNSON)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A That is right.
2
3 Q Who did you see at the front door?
4 A Robert Smith was standing at the door.
5
6 Q Did you see Herman Johnson?
7 A I don't remember seeing him.
8
9 Q You know where Herman Johnson does his pressing?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q When you got up did you see Herman Johnson pressing clothes there?
13 A Not that I remember.
14
15 Q If he had been there you would have seen him?
16 A I think so.
17
18 Q So he wasn't there, was he?
19 A I ain't saying, I don't remember.
20
21 Q Who do you remember seeing?
22 A Freeman Pierce and Joe Scott.
23
24 Q What was Pierce doing?
25 A Standing -- sitting on his bed and Joe Scott was in the bed.
26
27 Q Was Scott undressed and in bed?
28 A No, sir, he sleeps the first bed from the door.
29
30 Q Who else did you see?
31 A Thomas Chaney and Sergeant Battieste, the sergeant of the barracks.
32
33 Q He was at the front door of the barracks?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q Who else do you remember seeing there?
37 A The two that sleep beside me, Albert Felton and Foshi, that
38 is all I remember.
39
40 Q Going back to the time you were in bed and somebody woke you up--
41 A Just the noise.
42
43 Q Nobody woke you up?
44 A That is right.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHNSON)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who walked to the front door with you?
2 A Nobody, I walked there by myself.
3
4 Q How long did you stay at the front door?
5 A Three or four minutes.
6
7 Q Did you talk to anybody there?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Were quite a few boys on the outside?
11 A Yes, sir, quite a few in the yard.
12
13 Q But you didn't go out?
14 A No, sir, I didn't.
15
16 Q Was there any other boy standing at the front door?
17 A Robert Smith.
18
19 Q Did you have any conversation with Robert Smith?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q Didn't you talk with him at all?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q Is Robert Smith gone with the company?
26 A He is in the hospital.
27
28 Q You stood there three or four minutes and turned around and walked
29 back and went to bed?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q When you got back in bed did you talk to anybody?
33 A No, sir, I turned the radio on.
34
35 Q And you went back to bed then?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q Did you undress?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q You went back to bed in your clothes?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q How did you happen to go to bed with your clothes on?
45 A We were leaving early the next morning.

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHNSON)

330

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Weren't you going to get up earlier than the average morning?
2 A A little earlier.
3
4 Q Anyway you went back to bed with your clothes, shoes, and everything
5 on?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q Did you get under the blankets?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q You were just on top?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Did you put on your leggins?
15 A They were already on.
16
17 Q They were already on?
18 A Yes, sir, and I had my pack rolled.
19
20 Q Why, you weren't going to leave until about 8 o'clock the next
21 morning?
22 A No, sir, they didn't say no certain time.
23
24 Q Then if Robert Smith saw you standing in the door while the fight
25 was going on he should be able to testify to that?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q Do you want us to talk to Robert Smith about whether or not you
29 were standing in the door of Barracks 672 while the fight was going on
30 in the Italian Area?
31 A He was standing there when I arrived.
32
33 Q Do you want us to talk to Robert about it?
34 A It will be all right with me.
35
36 Q Then you offer Robert Smith as an Alibi witness to prove you
37 were not in the Italian Area?
38 A I don't offer nobody as an alibi witness.
39
40 Q You want to stand on your testimony you were not there?
41 A That is right.
42
43 Q Do you have anything else you would like to add?
44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

213

(JOHNSON) (END)

331

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Testimony of Pvt. Milton D. Bratton, taken at
Seattle, Washington on 29 September 1944 by Lieut.
Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witness was sworn.

Q State your name, organization, and serial number.

A Milton D. Bratton, 37731179, 650th Fort Company, Fort Lawton,
Washington.

Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
Article of War?

A Yes, sir.

Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, were you out at Fort Lawton?

A Yes, sir.

Q In what barracks?

A 719, upstairs.

Q What was the first incident that brought to your attention this
trouble that was going on outside the barracks?

A A man by the name of Wilson awakened me and told me there was
trouble going on outside and I should get up and put on my clothes in
case something happened.

Q Did you get up?

A Yes, sir, and put on my pants.

Q What was the cause for Wilson awakening you, if you know?

A He didn't say what, he said he wanted me to put on my clothes
in case something came up there.

Q Wasn't there someone that came in the building saying there was
a fight outside?

A No, sir, at the time he awakened me it must have been in progress
because there wasn't anyone that went out, just the boys that went to bed
were the only ones up there.

Q When you were awakened did you go around to the window?

A Yes, sir.

Q Did you move toward the front of the building?

CONFIDENTIAL

1214

(BRATTON)

332

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir, the window was at the side.
2
3 Q Did you look out the window on the south side?
4 A I don't know the directions.
5
6 Q Well, this is Virginia Avenue.
7 A That is where I looked out the window.
8
9 Q Could you see the mess hall?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q When you looked out what did you see?
13 A All I could see was a lot of fellows hollering and running around.
14
15 Q And teating down the board fence alongside the mess hall?
16 A I didn't see that.
17
18 Q There was a board fence out there previous to this night?
19 A I think it was wire.
20
21 Q 2-by-4's with wire stretched between them?
22 A Yes, sir, it come up like this.
23
24 Q Were they tearing down that fence when you looked out?
25 A No, sir.
26
27 Q You didn't see anyone tearing it down?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q After you looked out of the window, what did you do?
31 A I went back to bed.
32
33 Q Did you see a bunch of men out there you recognized?
34 A No, sir, I couldn't tell who was who.
35
36 Q You don't know who they were?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q They were making a lot of noise and hollering, though?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q Did you see some of them going toward the Italian Area?
43 A I didn't see anyone going that way, the mess hall was straight
44 ahead.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1215

(BRATION)

333

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You could see this road?
2 A No, sir, the road is on the other side.
3
4 Q Did you see anyone running down that side of the mess hall?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q All you could see was people in front of the building?
8 A In front of the mess hall.
9
10 Q Did you see any of them with clubs?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q After you saw that group of people you went back to bed?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Did you get in bed?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Did you go back to sleep?
20 A I didn't go to sleep immediately.
21
22 Q While you were awakened, what happened there inside Building 719?
23 A Wilson was talking and the boys there were talking.
24
25 Q Who were they?
26 A Sergeant Foster, Booker Townsell, J. D. Horton, and Caldwell.
27
28 Q What were they talking about?
29 A The fight.
30
31 Q What did they say?
32 A They were just talking, they were talking about the advisability
33 of staying up there.
34
35 Q They were discussing whether they should go down there?
36 A Yes, sir, whether they should stay up there.
37
38 Q You can state definitely Booker Townsell, Sergeant Foster, J. D.
39 Horton all remained in Building 719 while the fight was going on?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q Are you sure they stayed in the building?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q Could you hear the blows being struck?

CONFIDENTIAL

215

(BRATTON)

334

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q Did you hear any screaming and hollering?
4 A No, sir, I didn't hear anything but the boys around the barracks.
5
6 Q Did you go to the window and look out again?
7 A No, sir.
8
9 Q Did any of the other boys make remarks about what was going on
10 outside?
11 A No, sir, there was nothing to be seen.
12
13 Q There was still a bunch of people milling around?
14 A When I looked out the window.
15
16 Q Did you then go to sleep?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Did you go to sleep before the other boys got back to the barracks?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q You didn't see any of them when they got back?
23 A The next time I was awakened the first sergeant, Sergeant Hurks
24 had an officer with him, an MP, an officer, came up to quiet the fellows
25 down and they woke me up.
26
27 Q What did they say when they came back?
28 A The first sergeant?
29
30 Q Yes.
31 A He advised everybody to stop the noise and go to sleep.
32
33 Q Did they step inside?
34 A As far as I know, yes, sir.
35
36 Q Did the officer say anything?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q Did the first sergeant and the officer then leave the upper part
40 of Building 719?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q While you were awakened that second time and while the officer and
44 the first sergeant were up there, did you see anyone coming in from the
45 outside of the building other than the two men?
A No, sir, I went back to sleep.

CONFIDENTIAL

217

(BRATTON)

335

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you ascertain as you were awakened the second time whether
2 any beds were empty on the upper floor of Building 719?
3 A No, sir, the light was off.
4
5 Q So far as you know no one went in or out of that building
6 from the time the fight started until then.
7 A I imagine everybody that was out came back in.
8
9 Q But you didn't see them come back in?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q And you don't know who went out after the fight started?
13 A No, sir, you see I worked on KP that night up until about
14 9 o'clock and after that I helped the platoon sergeant stencil some
15 things, and I had a headache to boot.
16
17 Q Do you know Roy Montgomery?
18 A I didn't become acquainted with him until I got in the stockade.
19
20 Q You know him when you see him?
21 A Yes, sir, I became acquainted with him since we came in the
22 stockade.
23
24 Q Do you know James Chandler?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q Did you see Chandler on the night of August 14th, 1944?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q What dealings did you and Chandler have that night?
31 A This is before I went-- he awakened me and borrowed my field
32 jacket.
33
34 Q Did you loan him your field jacket?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q What did he tell you he wanted with it?
38 A He went up to the bus with his mother and wife, as a matter of
39 fact I went in front of the building to meet his mother, whom I didn't
40 know.
41
42 Q Did you go down?
43 A No, sir, I didn't want to get up.
44
45 Q Did Chandler later return your field jacket?

CONFIDENTIAL

-213

(BRATTON)

336

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A It was there, I don't know when he brought it back, I didn't
2 see him when he brought it back, but it was there.

3
4 Q Did you examine your field jacket to determine whether there
5 were blood stains on it or anything like that?

6 A No, sir.

7
8 Q Did you own a knife, Bratton on the night of August 14th, 1944?

9 A Yes, sir.

10
11 Q Did you have that knife with you?

12 A That night, yes, sir.

13
14 Q What kind of a knife was it?

15 A I have a pocket knife which they have at the stockade now.

16
17 Q Was it a long bladed knife?

18 A No, sir.

19
20 Q Could you identify the knife if you saw it again?

21 A Yes, sir.

22
23 Q You didn't loan your knife to anyone, did you?

24 A No, sir.

25
26 Q You say that Booker Townsell was there with you?

27 A He was across the isle in bed.

28
29 Q Was he there all the time?

30 A All the time I was awake.

31
32 Q I believe you said you were awake during the fight and heard the
33 noise?

34 A I was awake I imagine when the fight was going on.

35
36 Q About how long did you hear the noise?

37 A I wasn't out of bed over ten minutes.

38
39 Q And Booker Townsell was there?

40 A Yes, sir.

41
42 Q Do you know that Booker Townsell has been identified as being in
43 the Italian Area by several colored soldiers?

44 A I might have been mistaken, while I was awake he was in bed with
45 his clothes off.

CONFIDENTIAL

-213

(BRATTON)

337

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q He couldn't have been both places at once?
2 A He was in bed the whole time I was awake.
3
4 Q If it develops that Booker Townsell was there during the fight,
5 what would your reaction be to that?
6 A I would be surprised, I don't see how it could be possible.
7
8 Q Now, were you still awake when some of the boys got back from the
9 fight?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q You were sound asleep?
13 A I presume I was. The next time I was awakened was when the
14 first sergeant came up.
15
16 Q Now, when the first sergeant came up you say you were awakened
17 and Booker Townsell was still there?
18 A I cannot say, he sleeps across the isle and the lights were out.
19
20 Q Were the lights turned on?
21 A No, sir, they had a flashlight and stopped at the head of the
22 stairs.
23
24 Q And you say you didn't leave the barracks at any time while the
25 fight was on?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q You stayed there all the time?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q It is possible if you were asleep as you say you were that Booker
32 Townsell got up and left the barracks and you don't know whether he was
33 there when the first sergeant came back or not?
34 A No, sir, I cannot say.
35
36 Q He could have gotten up sometime after you went to sleep?
37 A I suppose so, I cannot say.
38
39 Q It is impossible for you to say that Booker Townsell was in bed
40 during that time?
41 A No, sir, I cannot say that. but when I was there the
42 first time he was there.
43
44 Q After you went to sleep up to the time the first sergeant came up,
45 you couldn't state?

CONFIDENTIAL

(BRATTON)

338

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir, I don't know.

2
3 Q Furthermore, when you and Townsell and all that group were
4 lying in bed talking, Townsell was talking about going down there, wasn't
5 he?

6 A No, sir, I didn't hear that.

7
8 Q What was the discussion you referred to a moment ago?

9 A The discussion was the advisability of whether we should stay
10 where we were.

11
12 Q Why did you discuss that?

13 A We were figuring there would be a kick back from what was going on.

14
15 Q Do you have anything else you would like to add to your testimony?

16 A No, sir.
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

[22]

(BRATTON) (END)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

339

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. William G. Jones, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 29 September 1944 by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4
5

6 The witness was sworn.
7
8

9 Q State your name, organization, and serial number.

10 A William G. Jones, 36945784, 650th Port Company, Fort Lawton,
11 Washington.
12

13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir.
16

17 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, you were out at the Fort
18 Lawton Staging Area when there was a fight between the Italian soldiers
19 and the colored soldiers, were you?

20 A Yes, sir.
21

22 Q What barracks do you sleep in?

23 A 719.
24

25 Q Were you in Barracks 719 when you first heard of this fight?

26 A No, sir.
27

28 Q Where were you?

29 A Standing out in front.
30

31 Q What was the first incident that was brought to your attention
32 which caused you to know there was a fight going on?

33 A The first sergeant telling the boys to get back in the barracks.
34

35 Q As you stood in front of Building 719 other than the first
36 sergeant who did you observe out there?

37 A Boys out in the street talking and hollering.
38

39 Q What were they talking about?

40 A Hollering they was fighting.
41

42 Q Fighting with the Italians?

43 A Yes, sir.
44

45 Q Did they say they were going down and kill the Italians?

CONFIDENTIAL

1222

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

340

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A That was after awhile.
2
3 Q You said you heard about the fight, then what did you do?
4 A I went up there when it first started.
5
6 Q Where were you?
7 A Up here around the corner.
8
9 Q Up around the barracks?
10 A No, sir, up where the bus stop, with the girls that came up to see us
11
12 Q Who did you go up there with?
13 A Me and Masteur Graham.
14
15 Q What was the girl's name?
16 A Miss Brooks.
17
18 Q Did you take her to the bus stop?
19 A About half way.
20
21 Q Just before the fight started you had been with Willie Montgomery?
22 A Yes, sir, down at the service club.
23
24 Q After that you, Willie, Luther Larkin, Addison George and another
25 soldier walked up to your company?
26 A We came up by here and Corporal Graham went in.
27
28 Q When you other soldiers got in the vicinity of the mess hall or
29 Building 700, something happened to Montgomery?
30 A We were in the mess hall of the 578th boys, I didn't go in--
31
32 Q Didn't you go inside Building 700?
33 A Oh, yes, sir.
34
35 Q And had a beer?
36 A I didn't have no beer.
37
38 Q Wasn't there any beer there?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q But you didn't drink any?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q And did you hear music being played on a guitar?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1223

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJA NARA Date 06/12/02

341

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q That was being played by a boy by the name of Nelson?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q And the first sergeant told you they were closing the mess hall,
5 the 578th?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q Sergeant Tanner?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q And then you went outside the building?
12 A Yes, sir, with the rest of the group and the first sergeant was
13 with us.
14
15 Q When you went outside the building you saw a lot and heard a lot
16 of noise going on?
17 A A lot of soldiers standing around.
18
19 Q What did you do?
20 A I was standing there talking to the girls.
21
22 Q Didn't you take a look at one of the boys laying on the ground?
23 A There wasn't anybody laying on the ground.
24
25 Q Had Willie Montgomery been hit?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q You didn't see Willie Montgomery as you stood there?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q Did you see Addison George?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q Did you see Luther Larkin?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Where did you first see Roy Montgomery after you went outside the
38 mess hall?
39 A Part way up the hill toward the barracks.
40
41 Q Was it beyond the intersection of Virginia Avenue and Lawton
42 Road where you saw Willie?
43 A Almost to the top of the hill where the road goes by the
44 orderly room.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(JONES)

1224

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

342

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You met Willie half way up Lawton Road?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Take a look at this map and show me where you met Willie.
5 This is the intersection of Virginia Avenue and Lawton Road.
6 A Here.
7
8 Q You saw Willie on Lawton Road opposite 666, is that right?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q What was Willie doing when you met him?
12 A He and Addison George were standing in the road.
13
14 Q When you met Willie on Lawton Road opposite 666, he was accompanied
15 by Addison George, Luther Larkin and Roy Daymond, wasn't he?
16 A Yes, sir, they was all standing there.
17
18 Q And you had some conversation with them?
19 A They just asked me where I was going and I told them up here, with
20 the girl.
21
22 Q Did you go up the hill then?
23 A Across that road up there.
24
25 Q You took her up to Lawton Road?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q Where did you leave the girl?
29 A Around the corner to the white warehouse.
30
31 Q By the white warehouse?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q You left the girl somewhere up on Utah Avenue?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q After you left the girl you came back?
38 A Me and Corporal Graham came back.
39
40 Q You came back down to your area through Lawton Road?
41 A No, sir, down the other street.
42
43 Q What street is that?
44 A Behind the barracks.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1225

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

##343

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Florida Avenue?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q You came back toward the front of 719?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q When you arrived in front of 719, what was going on there?
8 A The first sergeant was telling the boys to go in?
9
10 Q What did you do then?
11 A I was asking what was going on.
12
13 Q What did the sergeant say?
14 A The sergeant said for the boys to go inside.
15
16 Q Did any of them go inside?
17 A Yes, sir, the boys started back.
18
19 Q Where did you go?
20 A Back to the barracks.
21
22 Q 719?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Then did you go to bed?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q While you were outside Barracks 719 who did you see besides
29 the first sergeant?
30 A Addison George.
31
32 Q What was he doing in front of the building?
33 A Standing with the first sergeant.
34
35 Q Who else did you see?
36 A I don't know.
37
38 Q Did you see Roy Daymond?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q Did you see Willie Montgomery?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q Did you see Luther Larkin out there?
45 A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1226

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

344

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you see Luther Larkin go downstairs and go in the vicinity
2 of Building 700 and blow a whistle?
3 A No, sir.
4
5 Q You didn't hear a whistle blown in the vicinity of 700?
6 A No, sir.
7
8 Q Now, you went back inside and went to bed?
9 A Yes, sir. layed on top of the bed.
10
11 Q Did you sleep upetairs?
12 A Downstairs.
13
14 Q When you got downstairs what happened downstairs?
15 A The boys were talking about what they did.
16
17 Q The fight isn't over yet?
18 A The fight was over when I got back.
19
20 Q The fight was over when you got back?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q Then when you came back in the building some of the boys were
24 talking about what they did?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q Tell me who was inside?
28 A Frank Hughes.
29
30 Q What did Frank Hughes say he had done down in the Italian Area?
31 A He said he cut one with a knife.
32
33 Q Where did he say he had cut one with a knife?
34 A He didn't say, he said he had cut one with a knife.
35
36 Q Did he say he was in the orderly room?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q Who else was there?
40 A David Walton.
41
42 Q What did David say he did?
43 A He hit one with a stick.
44
45 Q He hit one with a club?

CONFIDENTIAL

1227

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJA NARA Date 06/12/02

345

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q Did he say who the man was he hit with the club?
4 A2 No, sir.
5
6 Q Who else?
7 A Robert Sanders.
8
9 Q What did Robert say he had done in the Italian Area?
10 A He and Robert Barber drove a jeep through a tent.
11
12 Q Which one said he drove it into the tent?
13 A Both said it at that time.
14
15 Q Both Robert Sanders and Richard Barber said they had driven into
16 the tent?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Did they say why?
20 A He said they had somebody in there.
21
22 Q They were trying to run over them?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Did they say they knocked the door down?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q Was Sanders arguing with Barber about who had driven the jeep?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q They were having a little trouble about which one really run
32 the jeep into the tent?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q There was some dispute about which one did it?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q They both claimed each had done it?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q Who else was talking?
42 A Luther Larkin.
43
44 Q What did he say he did?
45 A He said he blew the whistle.

CONFIDENTIAL

1228

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

346

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Where did he say he blew the whistle?
2 A He said he blew the whistle for the boys to fall out.
3
4 Q Did he say for what purpose?
5 A To help fight.
6
7 Q To help fight the Italians?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Did he say the boys came out when he blew the whistle?
11 A He said some of them came out.
12
13 Q Who else was talking?
14 A Sergeant Hurks.
15
16 Q What did Sergeant Hurks say he did?
17 A He said he threw some rocks.
18
19 Q He said he threw some rocks?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Did he say into what building he threw the rocks?
23 A He threw them into the barracks.
24
25 Q Did he say he hit anyone?
26 A He didn't say, he just said he threw the rocks.
27
28 Q Did he say he threw at the Italians through the window?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Did he say he had hit any of them?
32 A He didn't say.
33
34 Q Wasn't there a bunch from upstairs at the same time?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Did you hear Sims say anything about what he did?
38 A He said he hit some with a stick.
39
40 Q He said he had hit a bunch with a stick?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q Did he say where he hit them?
44 A No, sir, he said down in here.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1229

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

347

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q He said he knocked the air out of them?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Did you talk to Jesse further about the part he played?
5 A No, sir, I wasn't talking, I was listening.
6
7 Q Did Sergeant Hurks tell you Richard Suttliff was in the
8 area?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q Did he say what Suttliff did?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q What did he say?
15 A He just said he was down there fighting, he was arguing.
16
17 Q Was Levert Williams in the latrine when you were in there telling
18 what he had done?
19 A He was standing there?
20
21 Q What did Williams say he did?
22 A He hit with a stick.
23
24 Q Did he say he had beat up anyone?
25 A He didn't say, he said he had hit them with a stick.
26
27 Q Did he say where he had hit them with a stick?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q Henry Jupiter, where was Henry when he was talking about it?
31 A Sitting on Price's bed.
32
33 Q What was Henry saying?
34 A He said he hit one with a stick over the head.
35
36 Q He said he had hit one?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q Did he say he knocked him out?
40 A I cannot say.
41
42 Q Did he make any further remark?
43 A That is all.
44
45 Q John Pinckney--

CONFIDENTIAL

1230

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

348

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A He had an MP band on.
2
3 Q Was he talking any?
4 A He was sitting in the jeep with the MP's.
5
6 Q Did you hear the MP's talking after the fight was over.
7 A I heard them arguing with the boys, I didn't hear what they were
8 saying.
9
10 Q Didn't you hear the MP's say the boys did a good job?
11 A Yes, sir, when the MP's came back.
12
13 Q The MP's came and told the boys they did a good job and saved them
14 from doing it?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q Do you know who told them that?
18 A One of the MP's.
19
20 Q If you saw him again could you identify him?
21 A I don't think so.
22
23 Q Was it just one MP that came back or two of them?
24 A Two of them.
25
26 Q Which one was doing the talking?
27 A Both of them.
28
29 Q Both of them said the boys did a good job?
30 A He said they done a good job, he said we should have killed them'
31 that is what he said.
32
33 Q Did you see Roy Daymond after the fight?
34 A Yes, sir, he was in the barracks.
35
36 Q Who was he talking to?
37 A Robert Sanders and Barber.
38
39 Q What did he tell them he had done? What did Roy Daymond say he
40 had done during the fight?
41 A He said he stood behind a door and hit one as he ran out.
42
43 Q What did he say he hit him with?
44 A He didn't say.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1231

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

349

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did he say he knocked him out?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q What did Addison George say he did?
5 A He said he had a white stick.
6
7 Q Did he say he hit anyone?
8 A He said he hit about four of them.
9
10 Q Did he say he knocked them out?
11 A He didn't say.
12
13 Q Where did he say he hit them?
14 A In the area.
15
16 Q Walter Jackson, did he say he had been there during the fight?
17 A He said he was throwing bricks.
18
19 Q Did he say where he was when he was throwing bricks?
20 A Outside the barracks.
21
22 Q He was throwing inside the window of the barracks?
23 A Through the window.
24
25 Q Did he say he hit any of the Italians on the inside?
26 A He didn't say.
27
28 Q Robert Gresham, what did he say he did while he was down in the
29 Italian Area?
30 A He said he hit them with his fist.
31
32 Q He said he hit one with his fist?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Did he say he hit one with his fist?
36 A He said he hit one with his fist.
37
38 Q Did you see him when he was coming out of the area?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q What did Luther Iarkin say he did?
42 A Blew the whistle.
43
44 Q He said he went down there?
45 A He said he went down there.

CONFIDENTIAL

1232

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

350

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What did he say he did?
2 A He hit some with a stick.
3
4 Q Did he say he threw rocks?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Did he use a knife on any of them?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Arthur Stone, when you saw Arthur Stone what did he say he did
11 down there?
12 A He had a stick in his hand.
13
14 Q He had brought a stick from the Italian Area?
15 A He had one in his hand?
16
17 Q Was he telling the MP's what he did?
18 A I don't know.
19
20 Q He still had the stick in his hand when he was talking to the MP's?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q Was it a butt can holder?
24 A It looked like one that came out of a bed.
25
26 Q A bed post?
27 A It looked like one, I don't know whether it was or not.
28
29 Q Devid Walton, he said he hit one of the boys down there?
30 A Yes, sir, he had a long knife.
31
32 Q Did he say he used the knife on anyone?
33 A He didn't say but he had one, he had one in his hand.
34
35 Q Did you see the knife he said he had?
36 A He had it in his hand.
37
38 Q What kind of a knife was it?
39 A A long knife.
40
41 Q Could you identify the knife if you saw it again?
42 A I didn't see nothing but the blade.
43
44 Q Did it have a long blade?
45 A About that long.

CONFIDENTIAL

1233

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

351

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q He said he came from the Italian Area?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Wilbur Jenkins, where did you see him?
5 A Standing with Robert Sanders and Richard Barber.
6
7 Q What did he say to Richard and Sanders?
8 A He said he beat up two with his fist.
9
10 Q He said he used his fist and beat up a couple of them?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q Did he say where he had beaten them?
14 A No, sir, just down there.
15
16 Q Jesse Sims, on the night of August 14th, 1944, did you see Jesse
17 Sims?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Who was he arguing with?
21 A With David Walton.
22
23 Q What did Jesse say he did?
24 A Threw rocks and hit one with a stick.
25
26 Q Did he say what building it was in?
27 A In the barracks.
28
29 Q Did he say what building he hit them with the stick in?
30 A He hit them as they ran out.
31
32 Q Did he say it was over at the orderly room?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q Is there anyone else you heard talking whom you recognized whether
36 I have called his name or not that you can identify as being in the fight?
37 A That is all I know.
38
39 Q When you heard these men talking in front of 719, the fight had ended
40 and the MP's were telling the boys to get back to the barracks?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q They had had no opportunity to make up any story about their
44 fighting since they had quit fighting, is that right?
45 A I don't know.

CONFIDENTIAL

1234

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

352

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you enter into the conversation with these boys about the
2 part you had played in the fight?
3 A No, sir, they asked where I was.
4
5 Q Did you tell them you had been in the fight?
6 A No, sir.
7
8 Q You didn't mention to anyone you had been down in the fight?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q Did you see any Italian soldiers walking down Lawton Road as
12 you met Willie Montgomery and Luther Larkin and Addison George?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q Did you see Willie Montgomery hit by the Italian soldiers?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q Do you know Jesse Sims pretty well?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q Do you know Johnnie Ceaser fairly well?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q Did you see Jack Chapman there that night?
25 A No, sir.
26
27 Q You know him pretty well?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q Do you know Alvin Clark?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q Do you know Robert Sanders?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q Did you on the night of August 14th, 1944 state to Robert Sanders
37 that you had been down in the fight?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q Did you state in the presence of Alvin Clark on the night of August 14
41 that you had been down in the fighting?
42 A I didn't see Alvin Clark at no time.
43
44 Q Did you on the night of August 14th, 1944 state to Johnnie Ceaser
45 that you were down in the fight?
A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1235

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

353

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q While you were in Barracks 719 we have definite testimony
2 which places you as the man who came into the barracks and told the
3 boys there was a fight going on and everybody to get out in front.
- 4 A I didn't tell nobody nothing, I wasn't there when it started.
- 5
- 6 Q Now, Jones, you want to change the statement you made a
7 moment ago ?
- 8 A Yes, sir.
- 9
- 10 Q You were over in the mess hall, Building 700, is that right?
- 11 A Yes, sir.
- 12
- 13 Q And you had a girl?
- 14 A Yes, sir.
- 15
- 16 Q And you brought the girl out and walked up the street a little
17 ways, about even with Building 666 on Lawton Road; is that right?
- 18 A Yes, sir.
- 19
- 20 Q And as you walked up the road you left the girl there at the
21 little path that runs through there?
- 22 A I left her at the other side of that last barracks, that last
23 barracks.
- 24
- 25 Q When you left her there you turned around and went back with
26 Willie Montgomery and Luther Larkin and Daymond?
- 27 A Yes, sir.
- 28
- 29 Q And as you approached the intersection of Lawton Road and
30 Virginia Avenue--
- 31 A Luther Larkin, Daymond and me walked in front of Montgomery,
32 he was drunk-- I don't know whether he was or not-- but we came to
33 Virginia Avenue and Lawton Road and there were three Italian soldiers
34 and Montgomery said something to them, I didn't pay any attention.
- 35
- 36 Q Then you saw Montgomery chase the Italians down the road?
- 37 A Just a little ways, by the tree, and the Italian ran back and
38 hit him and ran back down the road.
- 39
- 40 Q The Italian ran back and hit Montgomery and then ran down the
41 road down into their area?
- 42 A Yes, sir, and Daymond picked him up and carried him back.
- 43
- 44 Q Daymond picked him up and carried him in front of 719
45 and laid him down?

CONFIDENTIAL

1236

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

34 354

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2
- 3 Q Then what happened?
- 4 A Daymond ran in the barracks and told the boys Montgomery had
5 been hit by the Italians and they came back out to see what was wrong with
6 him and Larkin and Daymond told them and there were 20 or 25 boys
7 standing around looking at him and then Daymond ran up the hill and me
8 and him went to talk to Sergeant Palmer.
- 9
- 10 Q Didn't Larkin blow the whistle?
- 11 A He went across the street looking for a whistle or something.
- 12
- 13 Q Did you and Daymond--
- 14 A I went up the hill to see Sergeant Palmer what run the 650th
15 and he come out and asked what was wrong and we said that Montgomery
16 had been hit by the Italians on this hill and and he came over and said
17 to go call an ambulance.
- 18
- 19 Q While you were talking to Sergeant Palmer, did you see Sergeant
20 Hurks?
- 21 A No, sir, I didn't see him, Luther talked to Hurks.
- 22
- 23 Q Then when Luther left the vicinity of Building 700 he went toward
24 Building 668 and told Hurks what was wrong?
- 25 A Yes, sir, the majority of these boys came out of these barracks.
- 26
- 27 Q Then Luther went up and talked to Hurks?
- 28 A Yes, sir.
- 29
- 30 Q What did he do?
- 31 A Blew the whistle and the 651st boys came out.
- 32
- 33 Q The 651st Port Company members and the 650th?
- 34 A Yes, sir.
- 35
- 36 Q They all came around Building 700?
- 37 A Yes, sir.
- 38
- 39 Q Then what happened?
- 40 A I went down the hill.
- 41
- 42 Q To the Italian Area?
- 43 A Yes, sir.
- 44
- 45 Q Did you go in the first group?

CONFIDENTIAL

1237

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

355

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir, I helped put Montgomery in the ambulance.
2
3 Q When Luther blew the whistle you state about 25 or 30 came
4 out?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Then when Sergeant Hurks blew the whistle how many men of the
8 651st came down and joined Sergeant Hurks in the vicinity of Building 700?
9 A About 50.
10
11 Q So you had a party of about 75 or 100 men assembled around
12 Building 700?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q Then after they had assembled in the vicinity of Building 700,
16 who led them into the Italian Area?
17 A Larkin and Hurks.
18
19 Q Larkin and Hurks?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Where did that first group get their clubs?
23 A They broke this rail fence up.
24
25 Q They broke the fence down in front of Building 700?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q And they carried it with them to the area?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Did they pick up any rocks around Building 700?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q Did you go in the first group that went to the Italian Area?
35 A No, sir, I helped put Montgomery in the ambulance.
36
37 Q Was it an ambulance or a jeep?
38 A An ambulance.
39
40 Q Did the ambulance go then?
41 A Yes, sir, they came across the street.
42
43 Q You went back of Building 700, you and Sergeant Gresham?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1238

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

356

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And went behind the mess hall, Building 700?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q When you got behind the mess hall, Building 700, what did you
5 do?
6 A Threw coal.
7
8 Q You and Sergeant Gresham?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q You threw coal?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q In back of Building 700 and hit Barracks 708?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q At the time you and Gresham threw coal against 708, what was the
18 group of 75 or 100 men doing in the Italian Area?
19 A Going in the barracks.
20
21 Q Going into the barracks?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q In 708 and 709?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q Were the Italians making noise?
28 A Hollering.
29
30 Q Could you see the Italians running as you stood behind Building 700?
31 A Yes, sir, I seen some running down the road.
32
33 Q Down Wyoming Avenue?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q Was there some colored soldiers chasing them?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q Who did you see chasing the Italians down Wyoming Avenue?
40 A I couldn't see them.
41
42 Q Who in this first group that went into the Italian Area did you
43 recognize?
44 A Hurks and Larkin. These are the only ones I was paying any attention
45 to, the majority of them were from the 651st.

CONFIDENTIAL

1239

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJD NARA Date 06/12/02

357

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Twenty-five or thirty came out of your barracks?
2 A Yes, sir, I know.
3
4 Q Who were they?
5 A Sims.
6
7 Q Sims came out of Barracks 719 and went down to the Italian
8 Area in the first group?
9 A Yes, sir, and Walter Jackson.
10
11 Q What did Sims and Jackson take as they left?
12 A They didn't have anything, they picked up rocks.
13
14 Q As they went along?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q Who else did you see? Who tore the fence down?
18 A Henry Jupiter.
19
20 Q Who else?
21 A Robert Sanders.
22
23 Q Who else?
24 A Those are the only two that tore the fence down.
25
26 Q Who else did you see in the first group that went down to the
27 Italian Area that you knew?
28 A Well, sir, the boy they was talking about, Snow.
29
30 Q Snow was one that went down in the first group?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q Did he have a club?
34 A No, sir.
35
36 Q Who else did you see?
37 A Alvin Clark.
38
39 Q Who else did you see going down there?
40 A A colored boy, I don't know him, I think his name is Nelson Alston.
41
42 Q He went in the first group?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q Who else?

CONFIDENTIAL

1240

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

358

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A David Walton and Frank Hughes.
2
3 Q Who else?
4 A Lee Taylor.
5
6 Q Who else?
7 A Freddie Lee Simmons.
8
9 Q Who else?
10 A Robert Suttliff.
11
12 Q Who else?
13 A Albert Pettus.
14
15 Q You saw him in the first group?
16 A Yes, sir, and Sergeant Mack Shaw.
17
18 Q Did he have a club when you saw him go in the area?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q What did he have?
22 A Nothing, they were all just running down.
23
24 Q Who else did you see?
25 A Sergeant Howard.
26
27 Q Is Sergeant Howard a member of the 650th?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q Is that Sergeant William H. Howard?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q What did he have with him?
34 A Nothing.
35
36 Q Who else did you see, Jones?
37 A Levert Williams.
38
39 Q What did he have in his hands?
40 A A stick.
41
42 Q What kind of a club was that?
43 A A little stick.
44
45 Q A 2-by-4?

CONFIDENTIAL

1241

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

359

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A About this wide?
2
3 Q About 3 feet long?
4 A About that long.
5
6 Q Who was it that was waving the stick and telling the boys to
7 come on, Levert?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q He was one of the first to go down?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q Who else?
14 A Johnnie Ceaser.
15
16 Q What was he doing?
17 A He was up there with Luther Larkin.
18
19 Q Did he have a stick?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q What did he have?
23 A Nothing.
24
25 Q But he was running into the Italian Area?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q He was running along with Luther Larkin?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Who else did you see?
32 A I don't know.
33
34 Q That was all you remember?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Now, after you and Gresham arrived behind Building 700 and observed
38 what was going on in the Italian Area and you threw coal at building 708,
39 who did you see in the area you recognized?
40 A The same group.
41
42 Q The same group you had seen previously?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q Who did you see in the vicinity of the Italian Area particularly?

CONFIDENTIAL

1242

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJD NARA Date 06/12/02

360

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Robert Sanders and Richard Barber.
2
3 Q Sanders and Barber were chasing one of the Italians?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q Which way did the Italian run?
7 A About three Italians run toward the dispensary.
8
9 Q Down Wyoming Avenue toward the dispensary, Building 705?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q Did you see them catch the man they were chasing?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q He got away?
16 A I don't know.
17
18 Q Did you hear him holler after he left your sight?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q Did you hear them hit them?
22 A No, sir, they were throwing rocks.
23
24 Q They were throwing rocks at these Italians running from them
25 down Wyoming Avenue on the night of August 14th, 1944?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q Who else did you see chasing the Italians?
29 A That MP ran up this way with Gresham.
30
31 Q Now, you state you saw an Italian running out of the area
32 toward Building 701 and 702 and Gresham and an MP took after him?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q The Italian whom you saw running out of the Italian Area and
36 running between Building 700 and 701, he was being chased by the tall
37 MP who had an MP club?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q And Gresham joined him, did he.
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q Did they catch him?
44 A They ran up here and came out again.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1243

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJD NARA Date 06/12/02

361

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You watched them run him up Virginia Avenue?
2 A Yes, sir, he went this way.
3
4 Q Did you see the MP and Gresham chasing him as he came back
5 across Wyoming Avenue the second time?
6 A He ran this way and they came back.
7
8 Q Gresham and the MP came back here to the corner?
9 A That is when the Major and Lieutenant Si~~s~~trunk came down.
10
11 Q Why was the MP chasing the Italians?
12 A He was going to bust his skull.
13
14 Q Why was Gresham chasing him?
15 A Gresham said he would help catch him.
16
17 Q He wanted to help catch him and help bust him?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q This MP was a tall slim fellow?
21 A That is right.
22
23 Q He had a club?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q Who else did you see that participated in that fight on the
27 night of August 14th, 1944? How about Mathis, did you see Mathis in
28 the Italian Area?
29 A I don't know Mathis.
30
31 Q How about Herman Johnson?
32 A He is not in our company.
33
34 Q Do you know Herman Johnson?
35 A I know him.
36
37 Q Did you see him that night?
38 A I don't remember seeing him.
39
40 Q Who did you see through the windows of the buildings that were
41 inside the Italian Area?
42 A There was some boys standing in this road by the bushes.
43
44 Q Who were they?
45 A There were about 10 or 12 of them, I didn't see them, I could
see rocks coming out of the bushes.

CONFIDENTIAL

1244

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

6 362

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You couldn't tell who the fellows were?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Are you sure you don't know who they were?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Didn't you go down to see who they were?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Did Gresham go down to see who they were?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Did the MP go down?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q That was before the MP arrived there?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q If you could see the MP again, could you recognize him?
20 A No, sir, I don't know him.
21
22 Q But you are sure, Jones, it was a white MP?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Not a colored MP?
26 A He wasn't colored.
27
28 Q Was it a light complexioned MP?
29 A It wasn't a colored MP, he was white.
30
31 Q You are sure he was white?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q And he had an arm band and a stick?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q And Gresham joined him to chase the Italian running up in that
38 direction?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q What kind of clothes did the MP have on?
42 A OD's, pants and blouse.
43
44 Q He had on OD pants and blouse and garrison cap. Did he have
45 on an arm band and carry a stick in his hand?

CONFIDENTIAL

1245

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

363

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A He had white leggins and a leather belt.
2
3 Q Do you know Private Lomax, an MP at Fort Lawton?
4 A I don't know Private Lomax.
5
6 Q Did you hear the MP's voice at any time he was in this vicinity
7 on the night of August 14th, 1944?
8 A No, sir, he just come down and some other MP's told him to
9 stay and keep the colored boys from going down and bothering them.
10
11 Q Do you know where this MP came from?
12 A He said he came down here with six other MP's and they told him
13 to stay there.
14
15 Q In the vicinity of Building 700?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q What did he say?
19 A "God damn, I am going to catch him and bust his skull." Gresham
20 said, "Let's go."
21
22 Q The MP who chased the Italian had been stationed in the vicinity
23 of Lawton Road and Wyoming Avenue?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q And he was standing there when the Italian ran out of the area?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q And the MP said, "God damn, let's get him"?
30 A Yes, sir, let's go bust his skull. I ran a little ways and
31 stopped.
32
33 Q You then only chased the Italian up as far as the front end of
34 Building 700 and you stopped?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Gresham and the MP continued to chase him?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q They got between Building 701 and 702 when he turned to the left?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q Did you see Gresham and the MP chasing him after they went behind
44 Building 701?
45 A They stopped.

CONFIDENTIAL

1246

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

364

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q They stopped?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Then where did the MP go?
5 A He stayed there.
6
7 Q Did you see him any more that night?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Have you seen him since that time?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q But you are sure the MP didn't catch the Italian?
14 A No, sir, he didn't catch him.
15
16 Q How was the Italian dressed that you boyswere chasing?
17 A He had on coveralls, fatigues.
18
19 Q Did he have on shoes?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Pants?
23 A Coveralls.
24
25 Q Did you see the Italian go back into the Italian Area?
26 A He cut back this way.
27
28 Q And you didn't see him any more?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q While you were there in the Italian Area, did you see any Italians
32 that had been caught by anyone?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q Did you see any Italians running from the colored soldiers, running
36 back in the woods?
37 A No, sir,
38
39 Q Did you see any colored soldiers driving the jeep?
40 A No, sir, but I heard about it.
41
42 Q Then you didn't see Curry or any of these other soldiers here
43 that drove into the tent?
44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1247

(JONES)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

365

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you see any Italian soldiers jumping out of the windows of
2 Building 709?

3 A No, sir, I couldn't see down there.
4

5 Q Now, Jones, in your first statement today, a few minutes ago,
6 you stated after the fight was over you came back to the barracks and
7 entered into a conversation with several members of your company and of
8 the other company, where in you discussed the fight that had been going
9 on in the Italian Area between the colored soldiers and the Italian soldiers.
10 Is that statement which you made concerning what was said in your presence
11 true?

12 A Yes, sir, what the boys said was true.
13

14 Q The first part of your statement concerning the statements made
15 in the latrine, in Building 719, you don't want to change?

16 A No, sir.
17

18 Q Why did this MP make the remark he was going to bust his skull?

19 A I don't know.
20

21 Q Is there anything else, Jones, you would like to add to your
22 testimony?

23 A That is all I know.
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1248

(JONES) (END)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

366

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Sgt. John S. Brown, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 30 September 1944 by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6
7

8
9 Q State your name, organization, and serial number.

10 A Sergeant John S. Brown, 34518593, 578th Port Company,
11 Fort Lawton, Washington.
12

13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
14 24th Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir, some of them.
16

17 Q Do you want me to explain them to you?

18 A Yes, sir.
19

20 (24th Article of War read and explained to the witness)
21

22 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, were you in Barracks 720?

23 A Yes, sir.
24

25 Q That is where you were when you heard a lot of noise on the outside
26 of that barracks in the vicinity of Building 700?

27 A I was in the building right across from 700.
28

29 Q In 720?

30 A Yes, sir.
31

32 Q What was the first incident which you heard that called your
33 attention to the noise that was going on outside?

34 A There was a boy woke me up, Earl Lallis.
35

36 Q What did Earl tell you when he awakened you?

37 A He woke me up and he said there was a fight and I said, "Who?"
38 and he said, "The two companies fixing to leave and the Italian prisoners."
39

40 Q Did you get up?

41 A Yes, sir.
42

43 Q What did Earl do?

44 A Nothing.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1249

(BROWN)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

367

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did he go outside the building?
2 A Not that I know.
3
4 Q Did this noise continue on the outside of the building while you
5 laid in bed?
6 A After Lallis woke me up the first sergeant told us that
7 nobody could go out of the barracks.
8
9 Q Was that Sergeant Tanner?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q Who did you observe there?
13 A McDaniels.
14
15 Q Who else?
16 A Earl Lallis.
17
18 Q Were both of these boys in bed at that time?
19 A I don't know, Earl was.
20
21 Q You don't know whether McDaniels was in?
22 A I don't know whether he was in bed.
23
24 Q He was in the building?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q You talked to him while the fight was going on?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q Did you see him?
31 A I heard his voice.
32
33 Q You could be definite that McDaniels was in the building at the
34 time the fight was going on outside between 11 and 12 o'clock?
35 A I heard he was in the barracks at that time. I heard McDaniels
36 was in the building at the time the first sergeant told us nobody could
37 come out of the barracks.
38
39 Q Now, at the same time that McDaniels was in the building and
40 the first sergeant was telling them not to come out, did you hear boards
41 being broken in front of Building 700?
42 A I heard it once.
43
44 Q You heard it once?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1250

(BROWN)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

368

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Didn't you get up to see what was going on that caused the first
2 sergeant to say to stay in the barracks?
3 A No, sir.
4
- 5 Q Wasn't there anyone in your part of the barracks that went to the
6 window to look out?
7 A Earl Lallis was telling about it, I don't know whether he went
8 to the window.
9
- 10 Q Was he talking to you?
11 A He called, "Brown, wake up, there is a fight going on out here,"
12 and I asked him who it was and he said, "The two companies fixing to leave
13 and the Italian prisoners." He said, "Aren't you going to get up," and
14 I said no, because I was too tired.
15
- 16 Q What did you hear McDaniel say about the fight?
17 A Nothing. He said the first sergeant must be scared that is why
18 he won't let nobody come out.
19
- 20 Q What else did McDaniel say that you heard?
21 A Nothing.
22
- 23 Q Did you see McDaniels after the fight was over?
24 A He was in the barracks.
25
- 26 Q Now, after you heard the boards breaking and heard the first
27 sergeant telling them not to come out and also heard McDaniels in the
28 barracks and Lallis in the barracks, did you hear the fighting going on
29 in the Italian Area?
30 A No, sir.
31
- 32 Q You heard glass being broken?
33 A No, sir.
34
- 35 Q Didn't you hear people hollering?
36 A Once.
37
- 38 Q Was that before or after the time you heard the boards being broken?
39 A It was about the time the boards were broken.
40
- 41 Q About the time you heard the boards being broken in front of
42 Building 700 you heard hollering in the Italian Area?
43 A I heard hollering, I couldn't tell what direction.
44
- 45 Q Did it sound like some men in pain?

CONFIDENTIAL

1251

(BROWN)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

369

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q Just hollering?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q Did you hear rocks being thrown against buildings?
7 A No, sir.
8
9 Q Did you hear clubs being slammed against buildings?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q You didn't hear any of that?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q You never got out of your bed at the time the fight was going
16 on?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q And you never even looked out?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q You had no interest in it whatsoever?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q You were tired and didn't want to get up?
26 A I didn't want to get up, it wasn't interesting me at all.
27
28 Q It wasn't interesting for you?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q Did you see Willie Montgomery when he was hit?
32 A I didn't know him.
33
34 Q You did not see the boy that was hit in front of Building 700
35 there?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q Didn't you see the boys carry him from Building 700 and put him
39 in front of Building 719?
40 A No, sir, I didn't see that.
41
42 Q Do you know Johnnie Ceaser?
43 A No, sir.
44
45 Q You have learned their names since you have been in the guard house?

CONFIDENTIAL

1252

(BROWN)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

370

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Yes, sir, I know him when they call his name.
2
3 Q Do you know Henry Jupiter?
4 A No, sir.
5
6 Q You know him now?
7 A No, sir, I don't know him. I didn't know anybody but Fletcher
8 Carter and Davis-- I didn't know them until I went in the guard house.
9
10 Q You know Sergeant Theodore Davis?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q You know Sergeant Fletcher Carter?
14 A Yes, sir, I learned their names since I went to the stockade.
15 I didn't know anyone personally, just one of the boys coming from Chicago,
16 one of the companies, his home is in Chicago and he came over to the
17 kitchen, he knew Herbert Thomas.
18
19 Q What time did this fight start on the night of August 14th?
20 A I don't know.
21
22 Q Didn't you have a watch?
23 A Yes, sir, but I didn't have it on.
24
25 Q Didn't you tell us once before at a previous hearing it started
26 about 10:20?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q Why did you say 10:20 if you didn't have your watch?
30 A I forgot I broke the band and I didn't have it on.
31
32 Q You were just testifying-- guessing at the time when you testified?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q Yet didn't you state definitely to Major Manchester you looked
36 at your watch and it was 10:20 when the fight started?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q That testimony you gave to Major Manchester was erroneous?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q You didn't look at your watch?
43 A No, sir.
44
45 Q Because you didn't have your watch on?

CONFIDENTIAL

1253

(BROWN)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

371

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q Is the testimony you are giving me now erroneous?
4 A No, sir.
5
6 Q You are definite you saw McDaniels in the barracks?
7 A Yes, sir.
8
9 Q Corporal McDaniels has testified before me under oath that from
10 9:30 on the night of August 14th, 1944 until after 12 o'clock on that
11 same night he remained in Building 700 peeling potatoes?
12 A In the kitchen?
13
14 Q In the kitchen.
15 A No, sir, it wasn't him.
16
17 Q That is what he testified under oath.
18 A No, sir, because I left the kitchen at 10:05 and he wasn't
19 peeling potatoes then and he wasn't peeling none when he was in the
20 barracks. He said the first sergeant must be scared to let them out.
21
22 Q Why was it you didn't have your watch?
23 A It was broken.
24
25 Q How was it broken?
26 A One of the links coming through. I pulled one of the fellows
27 out of line that was coming through.
28
29 Q Why?
30 A Because he came in the front door.
31
32 Q That was that night?
33 A That evening.
34
35 Q At mess?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q You pulled him out of line?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q And put him at the back of the line?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q You broke your watch then?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1254

(BROWN)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

#&@372

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you lose a setting out of your ring that night?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Where did the sitting fall out?
5 A I was sitting on my bunk.
6
7 Q Did you find it?
8 A It was just an eagle.
9
10 Q Did you lose it inside the room?
11 A I didn't look for it.
12
13 Q Did you hear it fall?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q You didn't look for it?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q You say it was an eagle?
20 A It was an eagle.
21
22 Q Still you didn't look for it?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q You didn't lose it at that fight, did you?
26 A No, sir, because I ain't down there.
27
28 Q Do you know Sergeant Oran Lee?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Did you see him the night of the fight?
32 A I seen him before the fight.
33
34 Q Did he have an MP stick?
35 A I seen him in the kitchen.
36
37 Q Was he in the kitchen?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q When you left him in the kitchen, did you see him any more?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Did you see Sergeant McGinnis?
44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1255

(BROWN)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

373

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Does Sergeant Oran Lee live in the same barracks with you?
2 A I don't know, sir, I think he does stay downstairs.
3
4 Q Doesn't Sergeant McGinnis live in the same barracks?
5 A Yes, sir, down stairs.
6
7 Q Did you see Sergeant McGinnis that night.
8 A No, sir, I don't know McGinnis.
9
10 Q Now, the part of your story that you have previously told me
11 that you want to change is that you did not lie in your bed all during
12 the evening, but raised up and looked out the window?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q You looked out the window and saw some boys walking by the
16 street?
17 A Two of them.
18
19 Q You don't know who they were?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q Did you see whether they had clubs in their hands or not?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q Which window did you look out of when you raised up?
26 A The one on this side of the barracks.
27
28 Q The one on the side next to Building 719?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q You looked out the right side of the building or the side nearest
32 Building 721?
33 A Yes, sir, down here.
34
35 Q And you saw these men walking down Virginia Avenue somewhere
36 between 721 and 720; is that right.
37 A On this side of the street.
38
39 Q What side of the road, next to Building 701?
40 A Yes, sir, along by the commissary.
41
42 Q You couldn't tell whether they had clubs or not?
43 A No, sir.
44
45 Q Were they walking or running?

CONFIDENTIAL

1256

(BROWN)

DECLASSIFIED
Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

374

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

A Walking.

Q Did you see any other people when you looked out?

A No, sir.

Q You didn't see anyone down there?

A No, sir.

Q That is all you saw that night?

A Yes, sir, that is all I saw.

Q Do you have anything else you want to testify about at this time?

A No, sir

CONFIDENTIAL

1257

(BROWN) (END)

375

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Enzo Antonelli, taken at Seattle,
2 Washington on 30 September 1944 by Lieut. Colonel
3 Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6
7

8 Pvt. Canio Mecca, 28th Quartermaster Service Company
9 was sworn as English-Italian interpreter.
10
11

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
13 Article of War?
14

15 A No, sir.
16

17 (24th Article of War read and explained to witness)
18

19 Q After you returned to your barracks on the night of August 14th,
20 1944, did you find a shovel in your barracks?
21

22 A Yes, sir.
23

24 Q Where did you find the shovel?
25

26 A Inside my barracks, in 708.
27

28 Q Did the spade have a cover on it?
29

30 A No, sir, just like that.
31

32 Q I hand you a spade and ask you if the spade you found in Barracks
33 708 on the night of August 14th, 1944 is like this shovel?
34

35 A Practically the same.
36

37 Q Can you identify this as the shovel you found that night?
38

39 A No, sir, I cannot swear it is the same, it is very similar.
40

41 Q It looks like the same shovel?
42

43 A Yes, sir.
44

45 Q What did you do with the shovel after you found it in the barracks
on the night of August 14th?
46

47 A I kept this next to my bed on the side in Barracks 708.
48

49 Q Was the shovel which you found in Barracks 708 on the night of
August 14th, 1944 later taken from you?
50

51 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1258

(ANTONELLI)

376

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Do you know the American soldier that took it from you?
2 A I don't remember.
3
4 Q You turned the shovel over to him?
5 A He took it, he said, "Give it to me."
6
7 Q And you gave it to him?
8 A Yes, sir, I think it was an American soldier.
9
10 Q He took it from you?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q Is there anything else you can tell us whether I have asked
14 you or not?
15 A No, sir.
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

256

(ANTONELLI) (END)

380

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of T/5 Willie Prevost, Sr., taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 30 September 1944 by Lieut.
3 Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

4
5
6 The witness was sworn.

7
8
9 Q State your name, serial number, and organization.
10 A T/5 Willie Prevost, Sr., 38547289, 650th Port Company
11 Fort Lawton, Washington.

12
13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A No, sir.

16
17 (24th Article of War read and explained to the witness)

18
19
20 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, were you out at Fort Lawton
21 when the fight happened between the colored soldiers and the Italian
22 soldiers?

23 A Yes, sir.

24
25 Q What was the first thing you heard about the fight?

26 A The first I heard about the fight was when Sergeant Thomas came
27 and told our first sergeant.

28
29 Q What building were you in when Sergeant Thomas told the first
30 sergeant about it?

31 A Headquarters, sir.

32
33 Q Which building is it?

34 A I was in the 650th Headquarters Barracks.

35
36 Q Building 665?

37 A I don't remember.

38
39 Q When you heard Sergeant Thomas call the first sergeant about the
40 fight, you went outside the building?

41 A Yes, sir.

42
43 Q What did he say?

44 A He said there was a riot going on down in the area.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1263

(PREVOST)

381

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What else did he say was happening?
2 A That is all I heard.
3
4 Q Could you hear noise going on down that way?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q You left Building 665 and went to the area?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Where did you first get your club?
11 A I didn't have a club.
12
13 Q A knife?
14 A No, sir, I never had a knife.
15
16 Q What did you have?
17 A A half inch board.
18
19 Q Three or four feet long?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Where did you pick that board up?
23 A I don't remember where I picked it up, I picked it up going into
24 the area.
25
26 Q Did you go to the mess hall first or did you go straight into the
27 Italian Area?
28 A I went on into the area.
29
30 Q Right straight into the Italian Area?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q You didn't stop by the mess hall?
34 A No, sir.
35
36 Q Had the boys gone to the area when you got there?
37 A Yes, sir, a bunch of fellows were down there.
38
39 Q Where did you first arrive, along this road?
40 A Well, I went from the building down on the side road up to
41 the orderly room.
42
43 Q Before you got to the orderly room did you see some colored
44 soldiers going up and down this road?
45 A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

254

(PREVOST)

382

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you see any boys you knew after you left the building until
2 you got to the orderly room?
3 A No, sir, I didn't know any of them.
4
5 Q Did any of them go with you when you left 665?
6 A No, sir.
7
8 Q Not a single one went with you?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q And a bunch had gotten there already?
12 A I imagine there was because there was a bunch in that area.
13
14 Q Would you say you saw any of the 651st that was down there?
15 A No, sir, I don't know any of the 651st.
16
17 Q How about the 578th.
18 A I don't know any of them.
19
20 Q You have learned them since that time?
21 A I don't know any of them, only two I know since I have been in
22 the stockade.
23
24 Q Do you know Willie Basden?
25 A He is in the 650th.
26
27 Q You know him pretty well?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q You saw him?
31 A I didn't see him.
32
33 Q After you got down to Building 713, the orderly room, who was the
34 first man you saw?
35 A Robert Sanders was in a jeep.
36
37 Q What was he doing when you first saw him?
38 A Driving the jeep into a little building on the left-hand side.
39
40 Q A tent?
41 A Possibly it was a tent, I couldn't tell.
42
43 Q He was running the jeep into the building?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

255

(PREVOST)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q And he knocked the tent down?
2 A I didn't pay any attention, I walked into the building.
3
4 Q Who else on the outside did you see besides Robert?
5 A Emanuel Ford.
6
7 Q What was he doing?
8 A That is the time he was coming from the area.
9
10 Q Did Emanuel have a club at the time you saw him?
11 A I didn't see him with any.
12
13 Q Did you talk to him?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q You then went into the orderly room?
17 A Yes, sir, I went in the orderly room.
18
19 Q Now, this is a floor plan of the orderly room which I show you.
20 You recognize this is the side door and here is where you saw the jeep
21 running into the tent--
22 A As I was going in it sit to the left.
23
24 Q When you came up to the door, there were a lot of men around
25 the door, weren't there?
26 A Yes, sir, but I didn't recognize any of them.
27
28 Q Weren't there a lot around the window that was broken out that goes
29 into the little room in the corner of the building, Room Y?
30 A I can't tell exactly, there was a lot in that area.
31
32 Q Around the door did you see anyone that you recognized besides
33 Sanders who was in the jeep?
34 A There was Wallace Woodin.
35
36 Q He was standing around at Door E?
37 A Around at the door on the left, and David Walton.
38
39 Q Walton and Woodin were standing at Door E?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q What did Woodin have in his hand?
43 A I didn't see him with anything, he possibly had something but
44 I didn't see him with anything.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

384

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Nearly all the boys had something that night, didn't they?
2 A I couldn't see in the dark, I didn't recognize so many of these
3 boys.
4
5 Q Wallace had a stick?
6 A I couldn't say.
7
8 Q Who else did you see while you were getting ready to go in?
9 A In the orderly room?
10
11 Q While you were getting ready to go in the orderly room?
12 A I didn't see anyone going in, I can't remember.
13
14 Q You went in the building and when you went in through Door A, who
15 was the first man you saw?
16 A I don't remember seeing anyone in the orderly room outside of
17 those two. I do remember a fellow chopping the door down.
18
19 Q What was his name?
20 A I don't know who he was. I don't know whether I went down after
21 the door was knocked down, that is when Pinckney, the MP, walked up.
22
23 Q Was the door knocked down?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q They were battering on the door trying to get it down?
27 A Yes, sir. There was one man with an ax.
28
29 Q What kind of an ax, a double bitted ax?
30 A With a red handle on it, about that long.
31
32 Q With a red handle?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q A double bitted ax?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q Could you identify the ax if you saw it?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q And they finally knocked the door down?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q When the door was knocked down a bunch came in the door?
45 A In the orderly room.

CONFIDENTIAL

(PREVOST)

385

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Were you around this door or behind this door while it was being
2 chopped?

3 A The door was facing like this and he had his back to me, the
4 fellow chopping on the door, and I was standing about here, I was
5 in the orderly room and after the door was knocked down there wasn't
6 any light in the room at that time.

7
8 Q But the light in this room was shining out when they were knocking
9 the door down?

10 A I didn't see anyone in this room after the door was knocked down.

11 Q The fellow that knocked the door down, did he run?

12 A No, sir, he went in to the orderly room I guess.

13
14 Q Who was the fellow with the ax?

15 A I don't know who the fellow was.

16
17 Q It wasn't Robert Mathis?

18 A I couldn't say because I don't know who it was.

19
20
21 Q I show you an ax and ask you if this is the ax you saw the
22 colored soldier using on the night of August 14th to chop down the
23 orderly room door to Building 713?

24 A Yes, sir.

25
26 Q It is?

27 A Yes, sir.

28
29 Q And do you know the man who used that ax to chop the door down?

30 A No, sir.

31
32 Q Have you seen him since that time?

33 A No, sir, I don't know his name.

34
35 Q You saw his face, didn't you?

36 A No, sir, if I saw his face I am sure I could recall his name.

37
38 Q Do you know where this soldier who used the ax to chop the door
39 down went after he knocked the door down?

40 A No, sir.

41
42 Q Did you see what he did with the ax?

43 A No, sir, I didn't.

44
45 Q Who else did you see in the building you recognized while you were

CONFIDENTIAL

(PREVOST)

386

CONFIDENTIAL

1 there?
2 A I don't remember seeing anyone but Wallace Woodin and Walton.
3
4 Q Do you know James Chandler?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Did you see him?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Do you know Henry Jupiter?
11 A Yes, sir, I know him.
12
13 Q Did you see Henry in there?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Do you know Roy Montgomery?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Did you see Roy there?
20 A I didn't see him in there.
21
22 Q William G. Jones?
23 A Yes, sir, I know him.
24
25 Q He was there, wasn't he?
26 A I didn't see him.
27
28 Q Do you know Johnnie Ceaser?
29 A I know him.
30
31 Q Did you see him?
32 A I didn't see him.
33
34 Q Do you know Willie Ellis?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Did you see Willie Ellis there?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q Did you see John Lee Hamilton?
41 A I didn't see him.
42
43 Q Do you know Jefferson D. Green?
44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1253

(PREVOST)

387

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you see Addison George in there?
2 A I didn't see him.
3
4 Q Joe Trice?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Arthur Williams?
8 A I didn't see him.
9
10 Q Booker Townsell?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Booker Thornton?
14 A I didn't see him at the time I was in the orderly room, that
15 is all I seen in there.
16
17 Q You know Thomas Battle, don't you?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q Willie Curry?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q Those were the only two you saw in there?
24 A The only two that was in there at the time I was in there.
25
26 Q You saw some American soldiers in there?
27 A No, sir, I didn't see any soldiers, Italian or American.
28
29 Q No Italians?
30 A No, sir.
31
32 Q And no Americans?
33 A I don't remember seeing any.
34
35 Q Did you see any colored soldiers beating individuals inside that
36 room?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q Did you hear any American soldiers being beat by the colored
40 soldiers?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Do you mean you were standing in that room and didn't hear the
44 beating going on in Room Y?
45 A I didn't hear anybody beating anybody in the next room.

CONFIDENTIAL

(PREVOST)

388

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did you hear people hollering?
2 A It was dark, I couldn't see anybody.
3
4 Q It was dark in this room?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Did you stand in that door there?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Who else did you see in there you knew?
11 A That is all I remember seeing to tell the truth.
12
13 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944 while you were watching the
14 door being chopped down, you saw Robert Mathis standing in Door D, didn't
15 you?
16 A I couldn't say it was Robert, I don't know.
17
18 Q You thought it was Robert?
19 A It was a fellow around his size.
20
21 Q He looked like Robert from where you were standing?
22 A He was a slender fellow on the build of him, but actually I don't
23 know.
24
25 Q From your position you saw the man chopping on the door and you
26 believed it was Robert Mathis?
27 A I wouldn't say that, I didn't see his face.
28
29 Q When you came on the outside of the orderly room, who did you see
30 out there you recognized?
31 A I don't remember seeing anyone I recognized. Pinckney and the
32 of ther fellow came up and he told the boys to go back to their barracks,
33 that is when I saw those boys in the area.
34
35 Q When you left the orderly room Pinckney, the acting MP, was there?
36 A Yes, sir, and Emanuel Ford.
37
38 Q What was he doing when you saw him?
39 A They were all coming back.
40
41 Q He was still in the Italian Area, just leaving?
42 A Yes, sir, we left.
43
44 Q Emanuel and you left together?
45 A I don't remember walking with him.

CONFIDENTIAL

(PREVOST)

389

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did he still have his stick?
2 A I didn't see it.
3
4 Q Had you laid down your stick or did you still have it?
5 A No, sir, I threw it down before I came out of the area.
6
7 Q You still had it when you came out of Building 713 when you saw
8 Pinckney?
9 A I didn't have no stick in the orderly room.
10
11 Q Where did you leave your stick?
12 A I left the stick across in front of the orderly room coming back
13 out of the area.
14
15 Q As you were coming out of the area you threw your stick down and
16 didn't have it any more?
17 A No, sir, not after I left the area.
18
19 Q Did you go back to your barracks after you left the Italian Area?
20 A Well, I came across in front of Building 719 and stood there
21 awhile.
22
23 Q As you stood in front of Barracks 719 did you see any other
24 boys coming out of the Italian Area?
25 A I just stood there and they had a bunch standing in the road
26 and that is the time the ambulance was coming.
27
28 Q When you saw them standing in front of 719, who else did you see
29 you recongized?
30 A I saw Sergeant Aubry, he was the first sergeant trying to get
31 the boys in the barracks.
32
33 Q Did you see the MP's talking to any of the colored soldiers?
34 A No, sir, I didn't stay there very long.
35
36 Q Did you see the MP's come up and park their cars in front of
37 Barracks 719?
38 A Well, there was one car that parked there, I think one jeep
39 came up and he left and went back and got more MP's, he didn't stay there.
40
41 Q Where did you go after you left the vicinity of Barracks 719?
42 A Back to the barracks.
43
44 Q Back to Barracks 665?
45 A I don't know exactly the number, but it is the 650th.

CONFIDENTIAL

112

(PFEVOST)

390

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q But in the 600 Area?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q When you got there did you go inside your barracks?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q When you got in there did you see anyone in there you knew?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Were those boys talking about the fight that night?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Didn't you hear anyone discussing the fight after they were in their
14 barracks?
15 A No, sir. When I came back Sergeant Duvall and Sergeant Sanders
16 was in bed.
17
18 Q Was Sergeant Duvall down in the fight?
19 A I didn't see him, he was there in bed when I came back.
20
21 Q Was Johnnie Sanders in the fight?
22 A I didn't see him.
23
24 Q Who else came back after you did?
25 A David Walton.
26
27 Q Where did you see David at the fight?
28 A I saw him in the orderly room.
29
30 Q After you saw David in the orderly room, you didn't see him until
31 you saw him in the barracks?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q What did he have in his hand when he was in the orderly room?
35 A Nothing, but when I came back to the barracks he had a knife in his
36 hand.
37
38 Q Did he say he used the knife on the boys?
39 A He didn't say.
40
41 Q Did you see him use the knife while you were there?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q Who else came back to the barracks after you got there?
45 A I don't remember who else, I don't remember who else came in.

CONFIDENTIAL

(PREVOST)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Does Hughes live in the barracks with you?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
- 4 Q Who are some of the boys that live in the barracks?
5 A Walter Wafter was still in the barracks when I got back there.
6
- 7 Q Who else?
8 A I saw Johnnie Sanders and Sergeant Aubry and Jack Mack.
9
- 10 Q Sergeant Mack?
11 A Pfc. Jack Mack.
12
- 13 Q You saw him in the Italian Area?
14 A No, sir.
15
- 16 Q He talked about being there?
17 A No, sir.
18
- 19 Q Who else did you see that came back in the barracks?
20 A I couldn't say they came back, I don't remember them saying
21 anything.
22
- 23 Q Are there any others that came back after you arrived?
24 A Not that I remember.
25
- 26 Q Since that day, since you have been in the guard house, who
27 have you discussed this fight with?
28 A I haven't discussed it with anybody.
29
- 30 Q Have you heard it discussed with anybody?
31 A No, sir, I don't, if I had I would let you know.
32
- 33 Q Have you heard any of the colored boys in the guard house discuss
34 their part in it?
35 A No, sir. After they put them in the stockade I didn't hear
36 any more about it.
37
- 38 Q You saw Wallace Woodin and Walton standing behind whoever the man
39 was chopping on the door?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
- 42 Q When the door fell in, what did Wallace and Walton do?
43 A Neither one went inside when I was there.
44
- 45 Q As you stood there did you see Walton and Wallace either go in

CONFIDENTIAL

(PREVOST)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 in the room or out of the room?
2 A I went out of the room ahead of them.
3
4 Q You don't know whether they came out or went in the building?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q You didn't see the man chopping the door or rather you didn't
8 see him after the door was chopped down?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q Who else did you see there in the orderly room?
12 A That is all I seen when I was there.
13
14 Q Before the door was knocked down could you hear them further back
15 in this room hollering?
16 A No, sir, if I heard anybody hollering I would have looked and
17 seen where they were hollering from.'
18
19 Q Didn't you hear anything that sounded like guys hitting something?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q When you were standing in this room and they were chopping the
23 door down, you heard clubs hit on something inside the building?
24 A I don't remember hearing nothing.
25
26 Q Did you hear that American soldier telling someong he was an
27 American soldier and not to attack him?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q You didn't hear that?
31 A No, sir. I don't know anything else about it .
32
33 Q And you didn't hear the noise going on in the rest of the building
34 while that door was being chopped down?
35 A No, sir. That boy that was chopping on the door made a lot of
36 noise.
37
38 Q You heard the boys hitting the Italians?
39 A To tell the truth, I don't remember it.
40
41 Q When you were inside the orderly room there was somebody throwing
42 rocks in the windows?
43 A They weren't throwing in the orderly room, there was a bunch of
44 fellows out there.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

175

(PREVOST)

393

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Rocks were pouring in that little room, 10 or 15 rocks while you
2 were in the orderly room?

3 A Yes, sir, but I didn't hear anyone in there.

4
5 Q When you came outside you saw some fellows standing at that
6 window?

7 A I don't know their identification, I couldn't identify them
8 because it was dark.

9
10 Q There was at least 10 or 15 boys right there throwing rocks
11 in the window and you saw at least five or six of them you knew.

12 A I didn't. Some of them were on the other side of the orderly
13 room.

14
15 Q Did you see Willie Ellis?

16 A Willie Ellis said Luther Larkin blew a whistle, him and Sergeant
17 Gresham, I don't know.

18
19 Q Willie Ellis--

20 A He said Larkin and Gresham, but I don't know to be sure, that
21 is why I wouldn't want to say.

22
23 Q Who did you see besides those you have named?

24 A I don't recall seeing any other fellows.

25
26 Q Is there anything else you would like to add to the testimony you
27 have given here today?

28 A No, sir.
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1276

(PREVOST) (END)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

394

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. Elva Shelton, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 30 September 1944 by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4
5

6 The witness was sworn.
7

8
9 Q State your name, organization and serial number.

10 A Private Elva Shelton, 37615747, 650th Port Company, Fort
11 Lawton, Washington.
12

13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A No, sir.
16

17 (24th Article of War read and explained to the witness)
18

19 Q On the night the colored soldiers and the Italian soldiers got
20 in trouble, were you present?

21 A I was in my barracks.
22

23 Q What barracks do you sleep in?

24 A 668.
25

26 Q And you were in your barracks when the fight started?

27 A Yes, sir.
28

29 Q What was the first thing you heard about the fight on the night
30 of August 14th, 1944?

31 A Well, after I heard about the fight it was the next morning, but
32 I did hear a lot of ambulances or whatever they were going down in the
33 area.
34

35 Q Didn't you hear a lot of noise around there when the fight first
36 started, a lot of noise?

37 A I heard a noise, but what they were doing I didn't know, I had
38 an idea it was a fight, I didn't know.
39

40 Q What kind of a noise did you hear?

41 A A noise, just a lot of voices.
42

43 Q Window glass breaking and stuff like that?

44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1277

(SHELTON)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

395

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You didn't hear the rocks being thrown against the buildings?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Did you hear screaming like a fellow was hurt.
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q You recall you were in your barracks and you heard this noise.
8 Did you get up?
9 A I was already up.
10
11 Q Who else was in your barracks?
12 A Quite a few were in the barracks.
13
14 Q Who?
15 A I don't know who was in the barracks, I couldn't name them
16 except the sergeant, I know the sergeant was in the barracks.
17
18 Q What was his name?
19 A Thomas, Palmer, and Mack Shaw.
20
21 Q Were they all in their barracks at that time?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q Did any of them leave during the fight?
25 A I don't know whether they left during the fight, but I know
26 Thomas came and said for us all to stay there.
27
28 Q After the fight was over and after the noise stopped, a bunch
29 of boys came back?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q Who came in that you remember?
33 A I don't remember who came in, all I know some came in.
34
35 Q Who were they?
36 A I don't know.
37
38 Q You don't know who they were?
39 A I don't know, I wasn't paying any attention, I couldn't name
40 them because I don't know.
41
42 Q After they came in what did they talk about?
43 A They didn't talk about anything because the sergeant made they
44 stop talking.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1278

(SHELTON)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

290

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q He didn't turn out the lights?
2 A No, sir, the OD did.
3
4 Q The boys came in not long before the OD came along?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q They were all in there talking about it, weren't they?
8 A Yes, sir, they were talking about it.
9
10 Q What were they talking about?
11 A I don't know, possibly the fight, I don't know what they said.
12
13 Q You heard them talking about the fight?
14 A Yes, sir, naturally.
15
16 Q What were they saying?
17 A I cannot repeat the statements.
18
19 Q Who were the guys talking about the fight?
20 A I don't know.
21
22 Q Since the night of the fight have you heard any of the boys
23 talking about the fight?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q While you have been in the guard house you have heard them talking
27 about it?
28 A No, sir, that is the one thing they don't talk about down there.
29
30 Q You mean in the guard house they don't talk about this fight?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q Do you know Roy Montgomery?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q Did you hear him talking about it?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q You haven't heard anybody talking about it?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q Did you go down to the fight?
43 A No, sir.
44
45 Q You stayed in your barracks?

CONFIDENTIAL

1279

(SHELTON)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

397

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Do you know Roy Daymond?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Did you see Roy that night?
5 A No, sir, he didn't live with us.
6
7 Q Roy Daymond has testified that on the night of August 14th, 1944
8 you were in the fight in the Italian Area in the vicinity of 713 with
9 a club and that he saw you down there?
10 A He testified to a lie, that is all.
11
12 Q You were identified by an Italian by the name of Grossi as
13 the man whom he saw in the orderly room with a club?
14 A He testified to a lie because when he said I was in the room
15 with a club I wasn't and he told a lie too.
16
17 Q If Roy Daymond, whom you know, if he testified you were down there,
18 he testified to a lie?
19 A Yes, sir, he did.
20
21 Q Have you and Roy had any trouble?
22 A No, sir, we are good friends.
23
24 Q For a long time?
25 A Ever since I have known him.
26
27 Q He would have no reason to tell me that?
28 A No, sir.
29
30 Q He told the other boys he was down there?
31 A No, sir, he ain't told me nothing.
32
33 Q You have been identified by the Italians as being in the
34 orderly room and at the same time and at the same place Roy Daymond
35 testified you were down there and he saw you with a club in your hand.
36 A I raised my hand to tell the truth and I am going to tell the
37 truth.
38
39 Q That is your story, you didn't go down there, you remained
40 in the barracks while the fight was going on?
41 A Yes, sir, absolutely.
42
43 Q You heard the fight and you heard the noise and you didn't
44 go outside?
45 A I didn't leave the building at no time.

CONFIDENTIAL

1280

(SHELTON)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJPNARA Date 06/12/02

398

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And you didn't talk to anyone after the fight, but you heard
2 someone talking about it and you don't know who that was?

3 A No, sir, just a whold bunch of men were talking about that and
4 I wasn't interested much.

5
6 Q You were not interested in what they said?

7 A No, sir.
8

9 Q Do you have anything else you would like to add to the testimony
10 you have given today?

11 A No, sir.
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1281

(SHELTON) (END)

399

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Booker Townsell, Private, taken
2 at Seattle, Washington on 30 September 1944
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6
7

8
9 Q State your name, organization and serial number.

10 A Booker Townsell, 36836812, 650th Port Company, Fort Lawton,
11 Washington.

12
13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir.
16

17 Q Where were you on the night of August 14th, 1944 when the
18 fight happened?

19 A I was at camp.
20

21 Q What barracks do you live in?

22 A 718.
23

24 Q Were you in the barracks on the night this happened?

25 A Yes, sir.
26

27 Q What were you doing?

28 A In bed.
29

30 Q You were in bed?

31 A Yes, sir.
32

33 Q What awakened you?

34 A When I was awakened up, the Major, the OD or whoever it was was
35 trying to stop the racket made by the boys.
36

37 Q That was after the fight was over?

38 A Yes, sir, I am sure the fight was over because they made them
39 put the light out.
40

41 Q Previous to that time what did you do?

42 A Well, I got off a detail, loading stuff on a train and when I
43 got through I ate supper and taken a shower and packed my barracks bag
44 between 8:20 and 9 o'clock and went to bed.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1282

(TOWNSELL)

400

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q About 9 o'clock?
2 A Between 8:30 and 9.

3 Q Did you go to sleep?
4 A Not right off, I laid up and talked to a fellow.

5
6 Q Who was that?
7 A J. D. Horton.

8
9 Q Did you and J. D. Horton talk about any particular thing?
10 A No, sir, we didn't, only wondering how it would be at home,
11 we didn't know where we were going.
12

13 Q You talked to J. D. Horton until you went to sleep?
14 A We talked about 5 or 10 minutes and I said I was going to
15 sleep because we had a long journey and I dozed off to sleep.
16

17 Q Was there any crap game going on in the building?
18 A When I went to sleep?

19
20 Q Yes.
21 A No, sir, there wasn't at the time I laid down.

22
23 Q Did you later wake up?
24 A No, sir.

25
26 Q You slept straight through until the officer, the MP came in
27 the building after the fight?
28 A Yes, sir, I slept until he came upstairs. I am sure the fight
29 was over at that time, they came upstairs, the officer came in and a
30 sergeant and made them put the lights out.
31

32 Q Now, did you hear any noise while you were in bed and while
33 you were awake in front of the building?
34 A I was asleep.

35
36 Q Did you hear any noise?
37 A No, sir.

38
39 Q Did you hear anybody come in the building and say for everybody
40 to go out to the fight?
41 A No, sir.

42
43 Q Did you hear anyone break the board fence in front of the building?
44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(TOWNSELL)

401

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did you hear Willie Montgomery come into the barracks?
2 A No, sir, he didn't live upstairs.
3
4 Q Where did he live?
5 A Downstairs, he didn't live upstairs.
6
7 Q You lived upstairs?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Did you hear Luther Larkin come in and blow a whistle?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Did you hear the boys as they left the vicinity of the mess
14 hall to go down in the Italian Area?
15 A No, sir.
16
17 Q Did you hear rocks being thrown against Building 708 and 709 in
18 the Italian Area?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q You didn't hear anything from the time you went to sleep until
22 you were awakened by the MP and the officer?
23 A No, sir, I didn't hear anything until then.
24
25 Q After the fight was over and after the MP came in the barracks
26 and turned out the lights, did you hear any conversation?
27 A I heard a fellow, I don't know who it was, he came in after
28 everything was over and he said some yellow dogs lived in the barracks
29 and they wouldn't get out and help. Who that was I don't know, he didn't
30 interest me because I didn't even get out to see, in fact, I didn't
31 try to see who he was.
32
33 Q Did you later that night hear someone talking about it?
34 A No, sir, I went back to sleep.
35
36 Q The next morning did you hear any conversation about it?
37 A No, sir, when I awakened it was reveille.
38
39 Q Did you hear any conversation later?
40 A At Reveille Luther Larkin told the company commander he saw
41 some Italians, three of them and he run after them.
42
43 Q Did he say what he did when they ran after him?
44 A He said he run after the MP.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(TOWNSELL)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did Luther say what he did after that?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q After you moved from Barracks 719, where did you go?
5 A To the stockade.
6
7 Q While you were in the stockade, did you hear anyone talking
8 about what they did?
9 A No, sir, no one talked about nothing they did.
10
11 Q Did any of the boys say they had heard one of the Italians had
12 been hanged?
13 A Well, I heard that after I come down here.
14
15 Q Then at the time you were in the stockade you didn't know
16 one had been hanged?
17 A I didn't know one had been hung.
18
19 Q Since you have been in the stockade have you heard the boys
20 talking about the fight?
21 A No, sir, all the boys in the stockade claim they don't know
22 anything about it. I am very interested in straightening it up because
23 I know I has no business in there and several men I know in bed had
24 no business there.
25
26 Q Who else was in bed that is now in the stockade that you know?
27 A There was J D. Horton upstairs and Milton Bratton and Lee
28 Dixon, those men I know wasn't there.
29
30 Q Who that you know was down there?
31 A I can't say nobody I know, but I can say I know they wasn't.
32 I waked up and they was coming back, I don't know who that was.
33
34 Q You know some of them were down there and coming back after
35 you were awakened?
36 A Yes, sir, I know one of the fellows.
37
38 Q Who was that?
39 A Booker Thornton.
40
41 Q He came in?
42 A That is all I could say.
43
44 Q Did you hear him?
45 A The only reason I know it was him, me and him is friends or supposed

CONFIDENTIAL

(TOWNSELL)

403

CONFIDENTIAL

1 to be, and that is the only reason I know.
2
3 Q Did Booker say what he did?
4 A He didn't say he had been there.
5
6 Q What time was the fight over?
7 A I couldn't say what time it was.
8
9 Q Do you know about what time?
10 A Just to my estimation of the time the OD came up, it was
11 around 12 o'clock, that is my estimation of it.
12
13 Q Did you have a watch?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q You just estimate it was about 12 o'clock when the OD came
17 up?
18 A That is what I would say, that is what time I would estimate.
19
20 Q What time was it you went to sleep, an estimate?
21 A Around between 8:30 and 9.
22
23 Q You slept from then until 12?
24 A Until they came up. I couldn't say it was 12 because I don't know
25 that is my guess.
26
27 Q Do you and Booker Thornton look quite a bit alike?
28 A No, sir, because he is older, and larger than I am.
29
30 Q Have you ever talked to Booker Thornton about the fight?
31 A No, sir, I haven't talked about it because we have been mostly
32 separated after we had been put in the stockade.
33
34 Q Do you know Alvin Clark?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Did you see Alvin on the night of August 14th, 1944?
38 A No, sir, I didn't see him, he don't live upstairs.
39
40 Q Did you see him outside the building on the night of August 14th,
41 1944?
42 A I wasn't out there, I don't know, sir.
43
44 Q Do you know any Italian boys?
45 A No, sir, I don't know one from another.

CONFIDENTIAL

1008

(TOWNSELL)

404

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Have you ever seen any of them?
2 A Out by the barracks every day.
3
4 Q Did you see any on the night of August 14th, 1944?
5 A No, sir, because I went to bed at 8:30 or 9 o'clock.
6
7 Q Didn't you testify here once before when an Italian soldier
8 by the name of Sergeant Todi identified you as being the person
9 whom he saw in the orderly room on the night of August 14th, 1944?
10 A He testified he saw me?
11
12 Q 'Weren't you present when this Sergeant Todi testified he saw
13 you?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q What do you say to that?
17 A I say he was lying.
18
19 Q What else do you say?
20 A I haven't been down there.
21
22 Q What else?
23 A I don't know what I said before, I know I didn't say I had
24 been there, I said he hadn't saw me down there.
25
26 Q Didn't you say when Sergeant Todi identified you, as follows:
27 "If I done something I would want to be convicted"?
28 A Yes, sir, I said that if I did something I will be convicted.
29 I have not said I would want to be convicted, I didn't say that.
30
31 Q Didn't you also say if you went down there you would not have
32 gone down with your bare hands?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q What would you have taken?
36 A If I went down to fight I would have a stick or something, if
37 I had went down there.
38
39 Q Didn't you know there was a light in the orderly room?
40 A I don't know because I hadn't been there.
41
42 Q There was a light in the orderly room.
43 A Maybe there was a light shining out the door, I don't dispute
44 that.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(TOWNSELL)

405

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you have a conversation with Alvin Clark after the fight
2 was over wherein you told Alvin you had beat up one of the fellows, in
3 fact, you had hit the first one inside here?

4 A No, sir. I got proof that I wasn't out of bed, several
5 fellows in the company can prove I wasn't out of bed.

6 Q Who are some of the fellows who will testify that you didn't
7 get out of bed?

8 A Milton Bratton, Horton, Foster, Lee Dixon, they can testify
9 I didn't get out of bed, and Ernie Martin.

10 Q Willie Ellis, could he testify you weren't there?

11 A I don't know whether Willie was there or not.

12 Q Willie Ellis testified as follows: "I saw Booker Townsell
13 standing with a club in his hand next to Building 713."

14 A I beg your pardon, he made a mistake, he maybe talking about
15 Booker Thornton. Everyone knows I didn't move out of bed. He said he
16 saw me down there?

17 Q That is right.

18 A He is absolutely lying.

19 Q Why, would Willie Ellis have any reason to lie?

20 A That is exactly what I want to know, why would he?

21 Q I don't know, he testified that he saw Booker Townsell standing
22 out there and that was under oath.

23 A I will testify under oath that I haven't and I got witnesses
24 to prove that I haven't.

25 Q You want us to question J. D. Horton?

26 A Yes, sir.

27 Q And Lee Dixon?

28 A Yes, sir.

29 Q Who else?

30 A Bill Foster.

31 Q Where is he?

32 A With us.

33 Q Ernest Martin?

34 A Yes, sir, he is up there with us. Also Milton Bratton, he is

CONFIDENTIAL

(TOWNSELL)

406

CONFIDENTIAL

1 there with us.
2
3 Q Do you know that Lee Dixon was in the building all the time
4 you were there?
5 A No, sir, he went to bed at the same time I did.
6
7 Q Was he in the building at the same time the fight was going
8 on?
9 A I cannot say where he was, I didn't wake up until the
10 OD came up, but I do know I was asleep on this side and he was sleeping
11 on that side.
12
13 Q How do you know he was in the building when the fight was going on?
14 A I am talking about after I awakened up.
15
16 Q You want to use Lee Dixon was an alibi witness?
17 A No, sir, not as an alibi, I am telling the truth.
18
19 Q You want us to use Dixon to prove you were in the barracks while
20 the fight was going on?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q How can Lee Dixon prove you were in the barracks if you don't
24 know Lee was there?
25 A He was there when I went to bed and he was there when I got up.
26 I know he wouldn't go out and get in the fight and come back to bed.
27
28 Q Do you know that Lee Dixon has admitted he was there and he
29 has been identified as one being in the fight?
30 A No, sir, I don't think Lee Dixon would lie on himself, maybe he
31 was there.
32
33 Q Is there anything else you would like to add to the testimony
34 you have given in this case?
35 A No, sir.
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1289

(TOWNSELL) (END)

407

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of T/5 Addison George, taken at
2 Seattle, Washington on 30 September 1944 by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4
5

6 The witness was sworn.
7
8

9 Q State your name, organization, and serial number.

10 A T/5 Addison George, 38545855, 650th Port Company, Fort
11 Lawton, Washington.
12

13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
14 Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir.
16

17 Q On the night of August 14th, 1944, you were with Willie Montgomery
18 and Luther Larkin over at the mess hall?

19 A Yes, sir.
20

21 Q Who did you see around the mess hall?

22 A Around the mess hall?
23

24 Q Yes.

25 A Everyone was in the mess hall at the time.
26

27 Q Who did you see you knew?

28 A Luther Larkin, Roy Daymond, Jones, Montgomery and
29 Frank Hughes.
30

31 Q Jupiter?

32 A No, sir, I didn't see him at the mess hall.
33

34 A Sims?

35 A I didn't see him.
36

37 Q John Lee Hamilton?

38 A No, sir.
39

40 Q Booker Townsell?

41 A No, sir, I don't remember.
42

43 Q You know Booker?

44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1290

(GEORGE)

408

CONFIDENTIAL

1 There was a bunch of them in there, in other words, there was some from
2 the other companies in there too.
3
4 Q All drinking beer, dancing, and listening to the guitar?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q After you left the mess hall you left with Jones and Larkin
8 and who else?
9 A I don't believe Larkin.
10
11 Q Who else did you leave with?
12 A Who was along-- Jones, Daymond, and some other boys.
13
14 Q Was Willie Montgomery with you?
15 A No, sir, we met up with him.
16
17 Q After you left the mess hall and met Willie, you saw Willie
18 start toward the Italian soldiers?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q Where were you then?
22 A That was after they came out of the mess hall, they came out of
23 the mess hall and went down the road then I goes across and I goes to the
24 barracks and they they went up the road, but what they did I don't know.
25
26 Q You went over to what barracks?
27 A I went over to the barracks from the mess hall, 719.
28
29 Q Where do you sleep in 719?
30 A Downstairs.
31
32 Q While you were in 719 did you see Booker Townsell?
33 A No, sir, I didn't.
34
35 Q Did you go upstairs at all that night?
36 A Yes, sir. We was upstairs, I went over to 719 then I went upstairs
37 and went to shooting dice.
38
39 Q You went to shooting dice about 10 o'clock?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q Was it after they ran you out of the mess hall and closed it?
43 A Yes, sir, that is when it was.
44
45 Q It must have been about 11 o'clock, that is when the mess hall closed.

CONFIDENTIAL

1291

(GEORGE)

409

CONFIDENTIAL

1 around 11 o'clock when the party was over.
2 A I don't know what time it was closed.
3
4 Q But anyway you left when the mess hall closed and Sergeant Tanner
5 of the 578th told everybody to leave, you went to 719?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q And when you got to 719 you got in a game?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q Who was shooting craps with you?
12 A Me, and Willie Scott and Jackson.
13
14 Q Walter Jackson?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q While you were up in 719 did you see Booker Townsell up there?
18 A Not that I remember.
19
20 Q Did you anyone in bed asleep?
21 A Well, there was some in bed. I didn't pay any attention to who
22 they were.
23
24 Q Do you know whether or not Booker was asleep?
25 A No, sir, I don't. I don't know whether he stayed in that barracks
26 or the other barracks.
27
28 Q How long did you stay up in the crap game?
29 A We stayed in the crap game a pretty good while.
30
31 Q An hour?
32 A It may have been longer than that. The crap game broke up
33 between 11 and 12 o'clock as close as I can estimate. I wasn't paying
34 any attention.
35
36 Q What broke the game up, this boy hollering to come outside?
37 A A boy came up and he said there was a fight.
38
39 Q Out in front of the building?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q Who was that boy?
43 A I didn't pay any attention.
44
45 Q Wasn't it Larkin?

CONFIDENTIAL

232

(GEORGE)

410

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Larkins came up there first, it seemed like Larkins' voice to
2 me.
3
4 Q Larkin came up and said the fight was going on?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q What did he say?
8 A He asked about a whistle or something like that. I know there
9 was a voice, I don't know his voice.
10
11 Q He asked for a whistle?
12 A Yes, sir. Whether he got the whistle I don't know.
13
14 Q He went outside then?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q Did you see anyone else come up other than the man who came up
18 and announced the fight was going on and Larkin?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q Did you leave when he asked for the whistle?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q Did you leave when the fight was going on downstairs?
25 A Not right then.
26
27 Q You left later than that?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q When you went downstairs, who went with you?
31 A All of us.
32
33 Q Everybody went out?
34 A Everybody.
35
36 Q The whole game broke up, everybody left?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q Some of the boys in the upstairs of the barracks went out?
40 A I don't know.
41
42 Q Why did you all go at once?
43 A Why?
44
45 Q Yes, because there was a fight?

CONFIDENTIAL

203

(GEORGE)

4;;

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A That is what made us want to go.
2
3 Q When you got outside the building what was happening?
4 A When I got outside the building the biggest bunch was gone.
5
6 Q That had already gone in the Italian Area?
7 A Yes, sir.
8
9 Q What were they doing around Building 700?
10 A They were just standing out there in front.
11
12 Q What were they doing?
13 A They were talking about the Italians that hit Montgomery, that
14 is what they were talking about when I came downstairs.
15
16 Q Who was in that group that was talking?
17 A I didn't pay any attention.
18
19 Q Did you see Luther Larkin in the group at that time?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q Did you see Roy Daymond?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q You saw a lot of people there you knew?
26 A I saw lots I knew, but I didn't pay any attention who they were
27 or nothing like that.
28
29 Q What are the names of some of them?
30 A That is just it, I didn't pay any attention. I stood there a
31 little while and I didn't pay no attention, then I went across the road
32 to the mess hall, this 719 mess hall and I stood up there awhile, I stood
33 around here at the corner of the mess hall like that and I went around
34 on the corner about 4 or 5 minutes.
35
36 Q While you stood there on the corner who did you see that you
37 knew?
38 A I couldn't see, it was dark down there. I could see the people
39 moving but I am not sure who they were.
40
41 Q You were then standing back of Building 700?
42 A Yes, sir, standing at the corner.
43
44 Q Looking down in the Italian Area?
45 A I stood there four or five minutes then I came back.

CONFIDENTIAL

1234

(GEORGE)

412

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Where?
2 A To 719.
3
4 Q As you came back up toward 719, did you see anyone?
5 A No, sir, I didn't.
6
7 Q Go ahead.
8 A Then I came on in barracks 719 and at that time the first
9 sergeant was there and told me to go back in the barracks and I
10 asked what was this about and he said, "You hush your mouth and go
11 in the barracks", and I went in and took off my clothes and went to
12 bed.
13
14 Q And went to sleep?
15 A No, sir, I didn't go to sleep at that time.
16
17 Q What did you do?
18 A I went on the bed and I laid down awhile and Frank Hughes,
19 David Walton and Robert Sanders, while I was by the bed I heard them
20 saying about how they hit one, they said, "I hit one", that is all they
21 were talking about in the front of the barracks, in front of 719.
22
23 Q Was that downstairs or upstairs?
24 A I was sleeping downstairs.
25
26 Q They were standing in front talking about how they had hit these
27 fellows?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q Sanders, Frank Hughes and Dave Walton?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q Did you hear Willie Ellis?
34 A No, sir.
35
36 Q Did you hear Booker Townsell talking at that time?
37 A No, sir. The boys you called out didn't sleep down there.
38
39 Q Where did they sleep?
40 A I don't know.
41
42 Q Who else that slept downstairs was in the fight?
43 A Practically all the boys downstairs was in bed.
44
45 Q All except those three you mentioned?

CONFIDENTIAL

(GEORGE)

413

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.

2
3 Q Let's go back to the place you stood behind Barracks 700.
4 Did you see men running to and from those buildings in the Italian
5 Area?

6 A I saw moving about.

7
8 Q Did some have clubs?

9 A I couldn't see any clubs.

10
11 Q Now, on the night of August 14th, 1944, what part did you play
12 in the fight?

13 A Well, I am going to tell the truth, I wasn't down there, I am
14 innocent, but now and then some of the boys speak about it, just now
15 and then.

16
17 Q What have you heard Montgomery say?

18 A No, sir, I haven't been around him.

19
20 Q Do you know Roy Daymond?'

21 A Yes, sir.

22
23 Q You and Roy are pretty good friends?

24 A Just about like anybody else.

25
26 Q I suppose you know Roy came in here and said you were in the
27 fight?

28 A Well, he just lied.

29
30 Q I suppose you know Robert Sanders said he saw you at the fight?

31 A He lied.

32
33 Q You admit being in back of one of the buildings. Don't you
34 admit going into the area?

35 A No, sir, that is right.

36
37 Q What did you do when you stood in back of the building?

38 A Just stood there.

39
40 Q Didn't you have a club when you stood there looking into the
41 Italian Area?

42 A No, sir, because I wasn't going down there.

43
44 Q If William G. Jones said that you told him that you and some
45 others struck about four of those Italians with a stick on the night of

CONFIDENTIAL

-236

(GEORGE)

414

CONFIDENTIAL

1 August 14th, 1944, what would you say to that?
2 A He really lied.
3
4 Q If one of your friends said he saw you pick up a stick in
5 Room Y, that is the little room where the Captain stayed, and carry that
6 stick into that other room, what would you say to that?
7 A He lied, sir.
8
9 Q Why do you say he lied?
10 A I know he lied, I wasn't there.
11
12 Q You didn't go hear the orderly room?
13 A No, sir, I didn't go in that area.
14
15 Q You didn't even throw anything?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q And you didn't hit anybody?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q You didn't try to hit anybody?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q Why did you go down there?
25 A I went there and looked.
26
27 Q Didn't you go down in back of Building 700 for the purpose of
28 hitting Italians?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q You just went down to watch?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q And you didn't have the desire to go down there, you were afraid
35 somebody would hit you?
36 A I didn't have in my mind to go there, it was too dark to be
37 running around in there, some of them would knock you out.
38
39 Q But you wanted to go down there?
40 A I did, but I was a little too scared I reckon.
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1297

(GEORGE) (END)

\$L%145

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Testimony of Pvt. Wallace Woodin and T/5 Willie
Prevost, taken at Seattle, Washington on 30 September
1944 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witnesses were reminded they were still under oath and
of their rights as witnesses under the 24th Article of War.

Q Did you on the night of August 14th, 1944 see Wallace Woodin
in the Italian Area?

PREVOST: I seen him standing in the orderly room.

Q On the night of August 14th, 1944?

PREVOST: Yes, sir.

Q What did he have in his hand?

PREVOST: I didn't see anything.

Q Wallace, you have heard Willie's testimony. Do you have anything
to say to that?

WOODIN: Where did you see me? You know you didn't see me
down there.

PREVOST: You was standing in the orderly room.

WOODIN: You didn't see me, you know you didn't. Do you want to
get you a medal for it?

PREVOST: No, I don't want no medal.

CONFIDENTIAL

1298

(WOODIN-PREVOST) (E)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 of the building?

2 A No, sir.

3

4 Q Did you see a jeep come up and stop in front of Building 719
5 while you were standing in the doorway?

6 A No, sir.

7

8 Q When **you** arrived down there then there was a large number of
9 colored soldiers assembled over in front of the building and over across
10 the street by the mess hall, 700?

11 A Yes.

12

13 Q What were they doing?

14 A There was a bunch of them and they were saying something about
15 the boys fighting.

16

17 Q Could you hear a lot of noise down in the Italian at that
18 time?

19 A Yes.

20

21 Q Did you hear yelling and screaming?

22 A It seemed like there was a lot of racket down there.

23

24 Q What did you do then?

25 A I discovered what it was all about and went back upstairs and
26 went to bed.

27

28 Q Did you see anyone standing over in the vicinity of 700 that
29 you recognized while outside of the building?

30 A I was on the outside of the building.

31

32 Q While you stood in the doorway did you see any of the colored
33 boys?

34 A No, it was dark and I couldn't tell.

35

36 Q How come you went back upstairs?

37 A Well, I don't want to be in it. I discovered what was happening
38 up there and I didn't want to be in it.

39

40 Q Well, why didn't you want to be in it, all the rest seemed to
41 want to be in it?

42 A I never believed in anything like that and I wasn't used to it
43 and I didn't know what it was all about.

44

45 Q You went back upstairs and went to bed?

CONFIDENTIAL

(DIXON)

3

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes.
2
3 Q Did you take your clothes off?
4 A Which you speaking of -- when I went downstairs?
5
6 Q When you went back upstairs?
7 A I pulled them off and went to bed.
8
9 Q When the fight started you didn't have them on?
10 A No, sir, I was asleep.
11
12 Q When you went back upstairs you took off your clothes and
13 went to bed?
14 A Yes.
15
16 Q Did you go to sleep?
17 A I didn't go right then.
18
19 Q It wasn't long after that that some of the boys began to come
20 in after the fight.
21 Q There was some boys coming in and out of the barracks. I
22 didn't pay any attention.
23
24 Q Did you hear any of the boys coming into 719 and talking about
25 the fight?
26 A I didn't hear anything. They was just talking about the fight.
27
28 Q No one spoke to you about being in the fight?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q After you left Barracks 719 on the day following the fight
32 and went to the guardhouse, did you hear any further discussion?
33 A I never did until we got here to this other area and a
34 Lieutenant Kapitz was telling us about it.
35
36 Q What did Lieutenant Kapitz tell you about the fight?
37 A He was telling the whole crowd about the fight down there
38 and what happened.
39
40 Q Did he tell you that one man was hanged?
41 A Yes, he did.
42
43 Q What did he say was liable to happen?
44 A I don't know. I can't remember all that he said about it.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(DIXON)

4

CONFIDENTIAL

11 Q Now, were you later placed in the guardhouse with the remainder
12 of the boys in your Company and the 651st Company?

13 A Yes.

14 Q While in the stockade, did you hear anyone discussing their
15 part in the fight?

16 A No, sir.

17 Q Do you mean you have been in the guardhouse all this time and
18 you haven't heard a single soul discuss the part they played in the fight?

19 A No, sir; I haven't.

20 Q Now, you know, Lee, that you have been identified by an
21 Italian as being in the Italian Area on the night of 14 August 1944?

22 A Well, he made a mistake; he never saw me.

23 Q Well, weren't you present at the time that he identified you
24 as being in the Italian Area?

25 A Yes, I was present.

26 Q Did you have a chance at that time to question him about his
27 identification?

28 A Well, I asked the man out there who questioned us and he claimed
29 he saw me, but didn't know what kind of clothes I had on.

30 Q IS there anything else that you want to tell me about this
31 fight?

32 A There is nothing I know about the fight myself other than it
33 was happening when I got up.
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(DIXON) (END)

1302

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Further testimony of T/4 Carl A. Johnson,
2 taken at Seattle, Washington, on 2 October
3 1944, by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

4
5 The witness was reminded that he was still
6 under oath and of his rights as a witness.
7

8 Q Sgt. Johnson, you are acquainted and familiar with the fight
9 which happened between the Italian Quartermaster Company and the Negro
10 soldiers on the night of 14 August 1944?

11 A Yes, sir.
12

13 Q Following the fight, on 15 August 1944, you were asked to
14 make an investigation concerning that fight were you not?

15 A Yes, sir.
16

17 Q And you did make an investigation on the morning of 15 August?

18 A Yes, sir.
19

20 Q Did your duties as investigator require you to go into the
21 Italian Area?

22 A Yes, sir.
23

24 Q While in the Italian Area did you make a search for weapons
25 and possible weapons that were used by the colored soldiers against
26 the 28th Italian Quartermaster Company?

27 A Yes, sir.
28

29 Q While you were in Barracks 708, in the 28th Italian Quartermaster
30 Company, did you find a spade in that barracks?

31 A No, sir; it was 709, I believe.
32

33 Q Where did you find a spade in Barracks 709?

34 A It was on the south side of the Barracks 709, the 4th bed
35 from the Lawton Road door.
36

37 Q I hand you a spade that is marked "J-1145" and ask you if you
38 have ever seen that spade before?

39 A Yes, that is the spade that I found in Barracks 709.
40

41 Q What did you do with this spade after you found it?

42 A I took it to the Provost Marshal's Office in Fort Lawton, and
43 locked it up in the basement.
44

45 Q Did you ascertain from the markings on the spade to whom it

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHNSON)

6

CONFIDENTIAL

1 belonged?

2 A No, sir. It was turned over to Major Manchester's office the
3 morning after we had found it.

4
5 Q Is there anything else concerning this weapon which you would
6 like to submit?

7 A We had an idea that these boys had picked up some souvenirs
8 and got an Italian soldier that spoke English and asked him if any of the
9 boys had any souvenirs and we went through all the barracks and we got
10 into Barracks 709 and he made a speech to all the boys and got them all
11 in the circle and asked if anybody had anything that had been used by
12 the colored soldiers and the soldier that sleeps in this fourth bed went
13 behind his barracks bad and brought us this spade.

14
15 Q Did he tell you at the time where he had found it?

16 A He found it in Barracks 709. I went down there today and looked
17 over that Barracks and I am pretty sure it was 709. I was pretty sure it
18 was 709 because 709 had a door torn off and that's what I was going on.

19
20 Q Sgt. Johnson, on the morning of 15 August 1944, while you were
21 making an investigation in the Italian Quartermaster Area, did you find a
22 double-bitted axe?

23 A Yes, sir.

24
25 Q Where did you find that axe?

26 A Inside the door of the 28th Quartermaster Italian orderly room.

27
28 Q I hand you an axe which is marked "EVA" and I can't make out the other
29 letters on it, which has a white handle with the upper portion of the handle
30 painted red and ask you is this the axe which you found in the orderly room
31 of the 28th Italian Quartermaster Company on the morning of 15 August
32 1944?

33 A Yes, sir.

34
35 Q That is all.

36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHNSON) (END)

1304

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

8

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Was there fighting going on then when you first started looking?
2 A I could hear it.
3
4 Q Did you hear windows and lights being broken?
5 A Yes.
6
7 Q Could you hear the people hollering?
8 A I heard some of our boys hollering?
9
10 Q Italian boys hollering?
11 A I don't know who they were.
12
13 Q You could hear a lot of hollering?
14 A Yes.
15
16 Q Did you hear rocks being thrown against the building?
17 A Yes, I could hear a little. First of all, after I got down there,
18 I didn't hear too much noise. Most of it was in frong of the building.
19
20 Q That's when all these colored soldiers were gathered over in
21 front of the building, just across the street from your building?
22 A I don't know whether there was any over there.
23
24 Q Weren't they tearing down that fence, that little fence that
25 was along the building of 700?
26 A No, I don't see them.
27
28 Q You remember that fence?
29 A Yes.
30
31 Q You didn't see them tearing it down?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q Was it torn down when yougot over there?
35 A I didn't pay much attention to them.
36
37 Q After you listened to the fight going on down in the area,
38 then youwent down?
39 A Yes.
40
41 Q Where did you first get your club?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q Didn't you take a club?
45 A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(STEWART)

L306

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

9

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Which way did you go to the Italian Area after leaving Building
2 719?
3 A Well, I went down the little street.
4
5 Q Did you go down this road here, the Lawton Road?
6 A Yes.
7
8 Q As you moved down Lawton Road towards the Italian Area who did
9 you see along the road that you knew?
10 A It was dark.
11
12 Q And wasn't there a bunch of people running down the road?
13 A No, sir; they wasn't running down there.
14
15 Q Who did you see standing out in front of the building?
16 A It was pretty dark.
17
18 Q Well, you saw someone? You didn't walk out there in front of
19 the building, the light was shining here from the intersection and you
20 surely saw someone that you knew.
21 A There was nobody there.
22
23 Q You mean to tell me there was no street light in the front of
24 Building 718?
25 A There is one close to the PX.
26
27 Q There is one at the intersection of Virginia and Lawton Road.
28 You could see those people out there in front of that road.
29 A I don't know anybody that was down there.
30
31 Q You don't know anybody that was in the Italian Area?
32 A I don't know anybody. I seen those fellows but I couldn't
33 recognize any of them. I didn't pay much attention to them.
34
35 Q You knew nearly everybody in your Company.
36 A I knew them but didn't pay any attention.
37
38 Q After you started down the Italian Area, where did you first
39 go into the Italian Area?
40 A Well, I went on down this road and down to the orderly room.
41
42 Q When you first got on the orderly room, what did you first see
43 happening?
44 A The MP's were helping those guys.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(STEWART)

1307

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

10

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q The MP's hadn't arrived when you got there.
2 A When I got there the MP's were down there and they had stopped
3 and quieted them down. When I got in there I helped them pick those
4 fellows up.
5
6 Q Before you got to the area those fellows had arrived?
7 A Before I got to the area they had already gotten there.
8
9 Q They had already gotten there when you arrived?
10 A I didn't know they was down there, but they was.
11
12 Q Who was down there?
13 A There was a colored MP down there and he's in our Company.
14
15 Q What was his name?
16 A John Pinkney.
17
18 Q What was John doing when you first saw him down there?
19 A He was hollering at those guys and making them go on.
20
21 Q Who was he hollering at?
22 A I don't know.
23
24 Q Was he hollering at you?
25 A No, he was standing up there in that other door.
26
27 Q You were inside of the building when John hollered at you?
28 A He didn't holler at me. He hollered at the other guys in the door.
29
30 Q Didn't he holler at the boys outside of the building?
31 A There was only MP's there.
32
33 Q Weren't a bunch of men gathered around the place on the outside?
34 A They was all standing out there about 20 or 30 feet from the
35 orderly room. It wasn't all that many standing out there.
36
37 A There were a lot of people down there, Leslie.
38 A Not when I got there.
39
40 Q Well, you met some when you got down there?
41 A When I first got up and went down there there was a lot of
42 them standing in the barracks. There wasn't nobody going down there and
43 coming down there.. I wanted to go down there and see exactly what was
44 going on. When I got down there the colored MP stopped the fight.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(STEWART)

1308

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

11

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q There was no one going down except yourself?
2 A If they had they was close to the mess hall there.
3
4 Q Then you got down there, the MP's had already arrived and
5 were running the boys out?
6 A Not all the MP's.
7
8 Q I didn't say all the MP's. I say some of the boys were running
9 the boys out.
10 A The colored MP's were down there.
11
12 Q And he was making them leave?
13 A Yes.
14
15 Q And there weren't many when the colored MP arrived?
16 A The colored MP was already down there.
17
18 Q There weren't very many when you got there?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q How many would you say were down there all together?
22 A I don't know.
23
24 Q 175?
25 A No, I don't know exactly how many were down there. When I
26 got there about 20 or 30.
27
28 Q And out of that 20 or 30 who did you recognize?
29 A It was so dark down there I couldn't see.
30
31 Q You didn't see anyone you knew?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q Did you see some of them close to Building 713?
35 A No.
36
37 Q None of them were close to that building?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q Did you see any of them running to and fro in the area?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q You didn't see any of them chasing Italians?
44 A No.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(STEWART)

1309

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

12

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You didn't see any Italians?
2 A Not until I got inside.
3
4 Q Who did you see inside?
5 A I saw men on the floor cut up and bleeding. The sergeant said --
6 I don't know -- he was a fellow and he was sitting in the corner hurt.
7
8 Q He had been hit on the head?
9 A No, I think he was hit down here and under his arm. I helped
10 him get up and put him in the ambulance when it came down.
11
12 Q He had been cut in the groin and stabbed in the right shoulder?
13 A Yes, somewhere.
14
15 Q He was bleeding pretty badly wasn't he?
16 A Yes.
17
18 Q Did you see a tall American soldier that had been hit on the
19 arm and on the head?
20 A No, not that I know of.
21
22 Q Did you see a bunch of Italians in this room Y while you
23 were in this building who were beaten up and lying on the floor?
24 A Yes.
25
26 Q And you saw a bunch of them in this corner that were beaten
27 up didn't you?
28 A They were laying all around the place.
29
30 Q And this door had been chopped down?
31 A Yes, I think it had been torn up.
32
33 Q And this door had been broken into hadn't it?
34 A Which one is that?
35
36 Q That is the front door?
37 A That is the one I think was chopped in and tore up.
38
39 Q And all these windows had been torn out and screens pulled
40 off hadn't they?
41 A I don't know. One of those rooms was knocked completely out
42 and one Italian was laying down in there.
43
44 Q And he had a window over his head?
45 A Well, I don't know if it was the sash or not, but his head
was sticking through one of the panes in the window.

CONFIDENTIAL

(STEWART)

1310

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

13

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And there were a bunch of Italians lying under a desk weren't
2 they?
3 A Yes.
4
5 Q And this room Z, there were two Italians lying on the floor
6 weren't there?
7 A I don't know. I wouldn't say whether I seen any there or not.
8
9 Q Now, when you arrived there they were knocking the tent down
10 weren't they?
11 A It was already torn down when I got there.
12
13 Q Was there anyone in the jeep?
14 A I didn't see anybody in it when I got there.
15
16 Q But the tent had been nocked down by the jeep?
17 A Well, I don't know what it was knocked it down but it was down.
18
19 Q And the car that was sitting outside with the white sheet
20 over it, the lights had been broken out of it by people throwing rocks
21 through it?
22 A I didn't see any car.
23
24 Q You didn't see any car with a white sheet as a cover over it?
25 A No, sir.
26
27 Q Right next to the side door of the orderly room?
28 A I didn't recognize one if I seen it.
29
30 Q When you arrived down there was this hollering still going on
31 around the building?
32 A Well, the colored MP was hollering.
33
34 Q There wasn't any of the Italians hollering?
35 A They was groaning and hollering.
36
37 Q Were any of the colored soldiers still hollering beside the MP?
38 A They was cussing.
39
40 Q They were cussing the Italians?
41 A No, the colored MP.
42
43 Q They were cussing the MP?
44 A Yes.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(STEWART)

1311

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

14

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q What were they saying about John, the MP?
2 A They was cussing him and calling him different names.
3
4 Q Because he had stopped the fight?
5 A I guess so.
6
7 Q Did you hear anyone in particular hollering at him?
8 A No, I just heard that through a rumor.
9
10 Q Did you see anyone trying to hit John Pinkney?
11 A No, they didn't try to hit him.
12
13 Q They were still trying to hit the Italians though?
14 A They had stopped then. They were standing over there and
15 he wasn't close to them.
16
17 Q How long after you arrived there was it until additional MP's
18 arrived besides the ones that were with Pinkney?
19 A I don't know.
20
21 Q When you got ready to leave Barracks 719 you put on your
22 helmet didn't you?
23 A Yes.
24
25 Q Why did you put your helmet on?
26 A If there was a fight down there I didn't want to get hit.
27
28 Q You expected to get hit didn't you?
29 A Yes, I was expecting I might get hit on the head or something ,
30 but I wasn't too sure.
31
32 Q Were you going down to help break up the fight?
33 A Yes, at the time I seen what was going on.
34
35 Q You wanted to help to break up the fight?
36 A Yes.
37
38 Q Did you make any effort to help break it up?
39 A By the time I got there the MP's had stopped it.
40
41 Q You stated when you got there there were 20 or 30 colored soldiers
42 standing close to Building 713 didn't you?
43 A They wasn't standing close to it.
44
45 Q Where were they standing?

CONFIDENTIAL

(STEWART)

1312

DECLASSIFIEDAuthority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

15

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A About 20 or 30 feet from it.

2 Q You didn't tell those people to move out did you?

3 A There was nothing for me to tell them after the MP's were there.

4 Q Of all this group that you saw down there, you didn't recognize
5 a single man?

6 A No, sir, it was too dark.

7 Q You know, Stewart, that you have been identified by Sergeant
8 Grant N. Farr as being the man who was in the orderly room and while in
9 there had a knife in your hand and waved it in his presence?

10 A No, I didn't know that. When I got down there I never had
11 seen that sergeant.

12 Q Well, you know that Sergeant Farr did identify you as the man
13 who stood in the orderly room?

14 A Yes, and he said I had on a white shirt, but I never owned one.

15 Q You had white under clothing on didn't you?

16 A No -- I had on white underclothing, but he was talking about
17 one of these little sleeveless shirts.

18 Q You didn't have on a T-shirt?

19 A No, I didn't.

CONFIDENTIAL

(STEWART) (END)

1313

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. Edward Sanders, taken
2 at Seattle, Washington, on 2 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7 Q Please state your full name, grade, serial number, organization,
8 station and duty.

9 A Edward Sanders, Private, 36788638, 650th Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.
11

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
13 24th Article of War?

14 A No, not so much.
15

16 Q Do you want me to explain them to you?

17 A Yes.
18

19 Q All right. (the 24th Article of War was read to the witness)
20 Do you understand that?

21 A Yes, sir.
22

23 Q On the night of 14 August 1944, were you out at Fort Lawton
24 when the colored soldiers attacked the Italians?

25 A Yes, sir.
26

27 Q In what barracks do you sleep?

28 A 719.
29

30 Q What was the first incident that called your attention to the
31 fight that was going on outside on the night of 14 August?

32 A Well, the first incident was that some of the fellows brought
33 a fellow in and said he was hurt.
34

35 Q Do you know who that man was?

36 A He was laying out on the couch and I came over to see.
37

38 Q Was it Willie D. Montgomery?

39 A I think it is the little boy that they brought in. He was
40 little, but I can't recall his name.
41

42 Q How long had the fight been going on when they brought this
43 man in?

44 A Well, the fight had just begun when they brought the boy in
45 and I had been writing a letter and I heard it out there and I stopped

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

1314

17

CONFIDENTIAL

1 writing and got up and heard the whistle.

2

3 Q What did they do about the boy they brought in?

4 A It is a little sofa laying in the aisle of the barracks and they
5 liad him on the couch and some of the boys were working on him. He had
6 been hit in the head.

7

8 Q Was he bleeding?

9 A Yes.

10

11 Q Was he a heavy set soldier?

12 A Well, I seen him once down in the 650th Company, but I don't
13 remember his name. I can't recall his name.

14

15 Q You don't know whether it was Clark or Snow?

16 A I don't know whether it was Clark or Snow. I never seen Clark.

17

18 Q Then when you saw them lay him down you heard the whistle blow?

19 A Yes.

20

21 Q Outside?

22 A Outside.

23

24 Q You were inside when you heard it?

25 A That is right.

26

27 Q Did you go outside?

28 A No, sir. I was afraid to go outside. I was afraid I might
29 get hit by some stray shot. I didn't go out in the excitement at all.

30

31 Q What did you do?

32 A I went as far as the latrine. I went in there and washed my
33 hands -- I had some ink on it -- and took a drink of water and came on
34 back over and the fellows were talking and we had some arguments about
35 the excitement.

36

37 Q Who were you arguing with about the excitement?

38 A A fellow by the name of Briscoe -- Pfc Briscoe and another boy.
39 Briscoe and Boatland. We had an argument about the excitement. So, all
40 I heard was a lot of fellows was getting hurt and a lot of the fellows
41 were getting their helmets.

42

43 Q Did you get your helmet?

44 A No, sir.

45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

315

18

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did Briscoe?
2 A A lot of fellows was scrambling, but I can't recall their names
3 or who they are. I know they were running around.
4
5 Q Didn't somebody come in the building and say "everybody out"?
6 A I don't know who it was blew the whistle, but somebody said
7 "everybody get their helmet."
8
9 Q Didn't somebody say "get your helmet and everybody out"?
10 A I don't recall who it was. He ran upstairs and hollered and
11 I didn't know who it was.
12
13 Q Did you see him come back down?
14 A A crowd of them come on downstairs.
15
16 Q And they went outside?
17 A Yes.
18
19 Q Who did you see going out?
20 A I couldn't know them. It was excitement and some of the was
21 running back in and running out. I can't remember any of the fellows
22 I seen.
23
24 Q You remember a lot of those men that went out that night. You
25 knew those people quite well.
26 A I can't remember the fellows that was in it. It was such
27 excitement.
28
29 Q Whether they were injured or not they went outside the building.
30 A They was running.
31
32 Q Who were some of them that ran outside?
33 A I can't remember their names. I don't even know them. Some
34 of them were from different companies.
35
36 Q Well, they were in your barracks and everybody was getting
37 ready to go to bed.
38 A Most everybody on my floor was going to bed.
39
40 Q A lot of them that were on your floor ran down.
41 A I don't think so.
42
43 Q Who lives on your floor?
44 A I can't call their names. We have nicknames.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Give me the names.

2 A Australia Boatland and Gentry and Briscoe were there. He lives
3 in the next bed to me. Another boy he's in the 651st Company and I can't
4 recall his name. A lot of them was on my floor, but up on the top floor
5 they had a new bunch of fellows that had been transferred into the 640th
6 and I hardly know them because I hadn't been friendly with them.

7
8 Q You knew a bunch of the older boys.

9 A I knew most of the fellows that was on my floor and they
10 were not in the excitement.

11
12 Q Do you know whether Herman Gentry was in the fight or not?

13 A No.

14
15 Q Are you sure Gentry didn't go outside?

16 A Yes, because Gentry was busy writing. He was sending a box
17 to his wife or somebody and we just got through talking and I kept telling
18 him and he kept asking me "Why are you afraid?" and he said, "These
19 fellows that don't go out now and defend themselves are the men that are
20 going to draw back and not help any of the boys overseas."

21
22 Q Did that make you feel bad?

23 A The Italians have never done anything to me and I don't want to
24 go out. I wouldn't want to go out on such a mission as that.

25
26 Q Who was it that said "the guys that don't go out and help now
27 are yellow and will draw back on the other side?"

28 A One of the boys who was arguing about that was the light boy --
29 I can't recall his name -- he's a heavy set boy and he's with the Company
30 now. He's a T/5.

31
32 Q Would you know his name if I call it?

33 A I might recall it.

34
35 Q Was Joseph L. Demartra the fellow that you heard say "the
36 fellows that didn't go out then and help the Company would be the boys
37 that would fall back when you went overseas?"

38 A Yes, that is the one. I said to him, "I don't go out on silly
39 missions such as that. I don't go out on those kind of missions and if it
40 was the case that the Company would call all the men out or call the sergeants
41 out together into something like that, I would be glad to go."

42
43 Q Wasn't the Company called out by some of the boys that night?

44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

20

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q The whistle was blown.
2 A No, Sgt. Aubry was quite busy trying to get papers straight.
3
4 Q Wasn't the whistle blown?
5 A Yes, but nobody knows who blowed the whistle.
6
7 Q Don't you know that Luther Larkin blew the whistle?
8 A No, sir, I couldn't recall who blew it.
9
10 Q Didn't someone come in the building and say "everybody out?"
11 A I heard somebody run up and get their helmet.
12
13 Q Was it Addison George?
14 A I couldn't say.
15
16 Q Is he a corporal?
17 A I think he is a corporal.
18
19 Q If he had ordered you out, wouldn't you have gone out?
20 A I wouldn't go out unless the officers or first sergeant give
21 me orders to go out.
22
23 Q Well, then what happened after you went out of the building?
24 A I came back into the barracks. It was about 10:45 o'clock and
25 usually they put the lights out around eleven o'clock and it was almost
26 time to put the lights out and we had to get in bed. I had my bed already
27 made up, all I had to do was get my clothes off and get to bed.
28
29 Q Did you take your clothes off?
30 A Yes. I didn't go right to sleep but I was laying in bed and
31 a whole lot of them was talking.
32
33 Q Wasn't there a bunch of them that came back from the fight
34 and got in their beds and stood around the bed and talked there?
35 A There was a bunch of them in the bed and a bunch gathered upstairs
36 but I didn't know who was in it or not. Some of them started to talk
37 and they said, "Well, you better keep that argument down because you don't
38 know who might be listening about what's going on" and that's all. A
39 couple of the MP's came in there trying to find out what happened. The
40 Mp stayed around tsalking but I never could hear.
41
42 Q After they left wasn't there a lot of talk that went on between
43 the members of the Company as to who was down in the fight?
44 A They started talking but they stopped because one of the sergeants
45 told them to quit talking about it because they might get into a lot of

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

314

CONFIDENTIAL

1 trouble about it if they were talking about it.
2
3 Q Who was that you heard talking at first about it?
4 A One of the little boys in there. I can't recall his name.
5
6 Q Would you know his name?
7 A He lives on the 2d floor.
8
9 Q Would you know his name if I called it?
10 A I might know his name.
11
12 Q What was his rank?
13 A Private, I think. He was talking about -- I don't know whether
14 he had anything to do with it because they was all talking about it.
15
16 Q What did he say about it?
17 A Well, he was talking about fellows -- one of the Italians hit
18 the boy and --
19
20 Q Who did he say he hit?
21 A He hit this boy-- the dark boy.
22
23 Q Snow?
24 A I think so. It would be bad if the boys didn't go out and help.
25
26 Q On the night of 14 August 1944, after the fight, you heard
27 Walter Jackson talking to some of the boys?
28 A Yes.
29
30 Q What was Walter saying?
31 A He was saying that the fellows would be yellow -- they would be
32 yellow not to go out and help defend the boy that was hurt by some
33 Italian and nobody knew how the boy was hurt, whether he had been interfering
34 with the Italian or what happened. We had an argument and I said, "Listen,
35 this country is in war and those people have been captured and they have
36 been brought here as prisoners and I don't think it is right to go out on
37 such a foolish mission, to go out here and start any kind of trouble with
38 these people because they are not bothering us and if the boy was hurt it
39 would be best to find out in the morning about what it was all about."
40
41 Q What did Walter say about that?
42 A He said, "You are with those people", and they wanted to start
43 an argument with me and they wanted to jump on me and Briscoe told me to
44 cut the argument down and go to bed. I told him as far as I am concerned
45 I don't go on those kind of foolish missions.

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q What did Walter say to that?
2 A The sergeant up by his bed told him to quit arguing and stopped
3 talking. I didn't like the way it was going and I continued talking about
4 it and I said I wouldn't go out on anything like that. It would be best
5 to find out what the boy did or what's wrong.
6
- 7 Q Did you find out the next day what happened?
8 A Well, the next day, that morning early, the next morning on
9 the 15th, we was supposed to be shipped out. We was supposed to go down
10 to the casualty area. Well, we had to go down there to get our breakfast
11 but I overheard one of the sergeants in the latrine talking about the
12 excitement out there.
13
- 14 Q What sergeant was that?
15 A Sergeant -- he's a staff sergeant in the 650th
16
- 17 Q Sgt. Spencer Martin?
18 A Yes.
19
- 20 Q What did you hear him say about it?
21 A Sgt. Martin was talking to some of the boys and he said, "That's
22 more serious than you thinks about that excitement that went on last night.
23 It is very sericus because one of the Italians was hurt", and one of the
24 boys asked him did he know who was in the excitement and he said he wasn't
25 down there but he heard a lot about it and it is very serious.
26
- 27 Q Who did he say was in it?
28 A He said that he heard that one of the first sergeants or staff
29 sergeants in the Italian outfit was hurt.
30
- 31 Q Who, of his boys, did he say was in it?
32 A Well, Martin didn't mention anything about the names who was
33 down there, but he said if any of these boys in the 650th was in that
34 excitement that there is going to be some trouble.
35
- 36 Q Did he say they better keep their mouth shut?
37 A No, but he said there was going to be some trouble if anybody
38 come up about up.
39
- 40 Q Then, the remainder of the night, after you had your argument,
41 with Walter Jackson concerning the fight, who else did you talk to that night?
42 A You mean that night?
43
- 44 Q Yes.
45 A Well, I had an argument across the room with a boy.

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What was his name?

2 A He's a sick boy. I don't know him good because he hasn't been
3 in the Company very long and he had his ears hurt and he wanted to get
4 on me about talking about these Italians.

5
6 Q Had he been down in the fight?

7 A No, he hadn't been out. This boy is very sick. He had some
8 kind of operation on his ears.

9
10 Q Is there anything else about the fight which you know that you
11 haven't told us?

12 A I don't think so, sir, unless that evening I went down the PX
13 and got me some cigarettes and some writing paper and came back to the
14 barracks. I tried to get a pass to go to town.

15
16 Q You didn't hear them start anything about the fight before it
17 happened, did you?

18 A Only I know that the boys went down the PX during the afternoon
19 and they used to have a few glasses of beer.

20
21 Q Had there been a bunch of them drinking that night?

22 A Yes, singing and drinking.

23
24 Q Had there been any fighting going on?

25 A No, sir.

26
27 Q Had you heard them saying anything about jumping on the Italians?

28 A No, sir.

29
30 Q Have you ever seen any fighting between the Italians and colored
31 soldiers before?

32 A No, because I met a couple Italians.

33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS) (END)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pfc. Samuel Thomas, taken
2 at Seattle, Washington, on 2 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization,
8 station.

9 A Samuel Thomas, Pfc., 36891274, 650th Port Company, Fort Lawton,
10 Washington.
11

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
13 Article of War?

14 A Not very much, sir.
15

16 Q I will read it to you. (The 24th Article of War was read to
17 the witness) Do you understand that?

18 A Yes, sir.
19

20 Q On the night of 14 August 1944, when this fight started between
21 the Italians and colored boys were you in your barracks?

22 A No, I wasn't in the barracks.
23

24 Q Where were you?

25 A I was with my girl friend.
26

27 Q Where was she?

28 A She was out on the post.
29

30 Q What time did you leave here?

31 A Something around twelve o'clock or after.
32

33 Q I thought you said you were married?

34 A I am sure.
35

36 Q But you had another girl friend here?

37 A Yes, sir.
38

39 Q Did you have her out to the post to a party or something?

40 A Just came out to see me.
41

42 Q She knew you was getting ready to go?

43 A Yes, sir.
44

45 Q What is her name?

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A I got her name here. I can't think of her last name. I had
2 just met her. That is her name, sir. (Showing paper to investigating
3 officer) Ona Gardner.
4

5 Q She lived here in town?
6 A Yes, sir.
7

8 Q You were with Ona Gardner on the night of 14 August?
9 A Yes, sir.
10

11 Q What time did you take Ona home or to the bus?
12 A She was in a car.
13

14 Q She had her own car?
15 A Another girl was with her that had a car. It was after twelve
16 sir.
17

18 Q After twelve?
19 A Yes, sir.
20

21 Q You weren't supposed to have them out after eleven were you?
22 A No, sir.
23

24 Q Why did you keep her out after eleven?
25 A I don't know what time it was. The MP told me that I had her
26 out there too late.
27

28 Q What did he say he was going to do to you?
29 A He didn't say he was going to do nothing.
30

31 Q He didn't try to arrest you?
32 A No, sir.
33

34 Q You sent them out of the camp?
35 A Yes, I went to the east gate.
36

37 Q And they went off?
38 A Yes.
39

40 Q Have you seen her since that date?
41 A No, sir.
42

43 Q Have you talked to her?
44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

'26

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What did you do after you took her to the east gate?
2 A Came to bed, sir.
3
4 Q When you came back the boys weren't in bed were they?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q They were missing in the barracks?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q The lights were off?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q After you got back did you go to sleep?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Was there any one came in?
17 A No, sir, not at time.
18
19 Q There wasn't any noise on the outside of the barracks?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q Didn't you hear any noise going on in the Italian Area?
23 A No, sir. I lived on the hill and I couldn't hear the noise.
24
25 Q You couldn't hear it from Barracks 665?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q You learned later it was going on -- about the time you got in?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q What time did you learn about the fight?
32 A About 8:30 or nine o'clock.
33
34 Q You must have heard someone talking about it?
35 A The next morning.
36
37 Q Who did you hear?
38 A I just heard the rumor of it.
39
40 Q Who gave the rumor?
41 A I seen the MP's in the hill and I asked.
42
43 Q Who did you ask?
44 A Well, there was no certain one. I just asked anybody that
45 was talking about it.

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did someone tell you about it?
2 A People were talking?
3
4 Q Who were the boys?
5 A I don't know any by name.
6
7 Q You knew all the men in your Company didn't you?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q But you didn't know the boys who were talking?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Were these boys of your own Company?
14 A They were just boys talking.
15
16 Q You know the names?
17 A No, sir, I don't.
18
19 Q What were they saying?
20 A They said some of the boys had a fight.
21
22 Q Did they say what they done?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q Did they say one man had been hanged?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q You never heard them mention that?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q Since you have been in the guardhouse, have you heard any
32 talk about it?
33 A The boys come down here, sir.
34
35 Q What did they say?
36 A Well, naturally, when any come down they tell us what was said.
37
38 Q And what do they say?
39 A They says they asked me this and that.
40
41 Q Did they say that they told who was downthere?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q You were present were you not when there was a line up held
45 of all colored soldiers of the 650th and 651st Port Companies when the

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

125

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Italians were present to make identifications of those people as being
2 in the Italian Area that night?
3 A Yes, sir.
4
5 Q Were you identified?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q Do you know who identified you?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q You heard the identification?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Did you have a chance to talk to him about it?
15 A No, sir.
16
17 Q They didn't ask you if you wanted to say anything?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q What did the Italian say who identified you as being in the
21 fight?
22 A He didn't say anything that I heard. He just pointed his finger
23 at me.
24
25 Q You have been identified twice haven't you?
26 A Well, just one time.
27
28 Q What about the 2d time you refer to?
29 A That is up at the mess hall.
30
31 Q When you were down before Major Manchester and Sgt. Todde
32 identified you as being one of the members of the colored soldiers who
33 attacked the 28th Italian Quartermaster Company on the night of 14 August
34 what did you say when he identified you?
35 A Well, that was down at the mess hall. That's the only time I
36 was identified. Up here at the other mess hall -- the 650th -- I wasn't
37 identified.
38
39 Q You weren't identified at that time?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q Then, you have been identified by the same man twice haven't you?
43 A Well, if that was the same man.
44
45 Q You have been identified twice then?
46 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Do you remember being present when Sgt. Todde was asked the
2 following questions:
3

4 "Now, Todde, was Pvt. Thomas with other colored American soldiers
5 at the time you saw him on the night of the 14th of August 1944?" and
6 Sgt. Todde answered "Yes, sir."

7 A Was that here, sir?
8

9 Q Yes.

10 A Yes, sir, in there sure.
11

12 Q Do you also remember hearing the following question:
13

14 "Were any of the other colored American soldiers who were
15 around, or near, or with Pvt. Thomas, armed with any clubs, sticks, knives,
16 rocks or shovels"? and his answer was "Yes, sir."

17 A No, sir.
18

19 Q You also heard the question asked:
20

21 "Did you observe Pvt. Thomas giving any assistance to any
22 colored American soldiers who were near him and around him, or with him,
23 to put down their clubs and leave the building?" and he said, "I couldn't
24 say about that, I didn't observe." Also, "Did you observe Pvt. Thomas
25 giving any assistance to any colored American soldiers or any Italian
26 soldiers who had been wounded as a result of the attack?" and you heard
27 him say, "I don't remember that, sir."

28 Do you remember that?

29 A Yes, sir.
30

31 Q What did you think of his identification?

32 A Well, I know the man was wrong.
33

34 Q Is there anything further that you want to give us in this case?

35 A Nothing but I will say to the last that I wasn't there. I
36 wasn't there.
37

38 Q Thank you very much.
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

1327

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pfc. Arthur Williams, taken
2 at Seattle, Washington, on 2 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
8 and station.

9 A Arthur Williams, Pfc., 36789202, 650th Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.
11

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
13 24th Article of War?

14 A Yes, sir.
15

16 Q On the night of 14 August 1944 were you out at Fort Lawton
17 when the colored soldiers attacked the Italians?

18 A Yes, sir.
19

20 Q What were you doing?

21 A Barbering.
22

23 Q Whose hair were you cutting?

24 A I don't know definitely whose hair I was cutting but I was
25 participating in barbering.
26

27 Q What building were you in?

28 A I was in the old barracks -- 668.
29

30 Q You were cutting hair when you first heard of the fight?

31 A Yes, sir.
32

33 Q What incident called your attention to the fight?

34 A Well, I will tell you. I purchased some commodities to use
35 going on the trip. Well, I had all my commodities -- I had purchased about
36 \$10 worth -- candy, cigarettes and tobacco and so forth and in the meantime
37 I had all my barbering equipment out and my duffle bag was unpacked because
38 I didn't have any time to get that. I had been getting the Company ready.
39 I was still cutting hair at the time.
40

41 Q What did you first hear to make you know there was a fight
42 going on?

43 A Well, I don't know. I will have to recall that.
44

45 Q Was there a lot of noise and hollering?

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

1328

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A There was a party going on in the next barracks down the street.
2 I didn't even know there was no fight out in the Italian Area.
3
4 Q You knew there was a party going on and they were playing a
5 lot of music?
6 A Yes.
7
8 Q Could you hear that electric guitar?
9 A No, sir. A guy told me they was having a party.
10
11 Q Did you go to the party?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q You heard all this hollering around there?
15 A Yes, I heard it around the mess hall.
16
17 Q And you heard the windows being broken in there didn't you?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q Did you hear rocks being thrown against the building?
21 A No, sir, I was in the barracks.
22
23 Q Did you hear any screaming down in the Italian Area later
24 that night?
25 A No, sir.
26
27 Q You didn't hear nothing except that one little noise around
28 the mess hall?
29 A That is right.
30
31 Q Did you ever go outside the barracks and look down that area?
32 A No, sir, I didn't.
33
34 Q With all that noise going on you didn't go out?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Did you lose a razor that night?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q Do you know the boys that have straight edge razors?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q have you ever sharpened a razor for the boys?
44 A No, just my own.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And you didn't lose any razor that night?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Have you ever sharpened any of their knives for them?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q When the fight was over, and the boys began to come back up
8 to the area, you saw that didn't you?
9 A I didn't see them coming up there, but I saw the barracks.
10
11 Q You saw what?
12 A Well, several of them coming back in the barracks.
13
14 Q Who did you see coming back in the barracks after the fight
15 was over?
16 A I didn't see anybody. Where I am looking my bed is in the back
17 of the barracks.
18
19 Q But you weren't in bed?
20 A No, but I work at my bed. The front door is up further.
21
22 Q But the boys came in talking about the fight?
23 A They all came in but I didn't know who they were.
24
25 Q Did you hear them talking?
26 A Yes, but I didn't know what it was. I wasn't going to leave all
27 my equipment to hear some bunch of fibbing.
28
29 Q Well, you know they weren't fibbing because they came back from
30 a fight?
31 A I didn't know.
32
33 Q Weren't you interested in the fight?
34 A No, I wasn't.
35
36 Q Well, you know that you have been identified as being down
37 there?
38 A Yes, I know that.
39
40 Q Who identified you?
41 A An Italian.
42
43 Q And he told where you were?
44 A Yes.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And were you there?

2 A No, sir, I wasn't.

3

4 Q How do you figure he identified you?

5 A Going by what he said. He said he saw me and I said he didn't
6 because I wasn't there.

7

8 Q Why do you think he identified you as being there?

9 A He probably thought he saw me or someone that looked like me.
10 I am positive that I wasn't down there.

11

12 Q Well, there aren't very many colored soldiers that have gold
13 teeth is there?

14 A There is several of them.

15

16 Q In your Company?

17 A Yes, that have one gold tooth in the front. One and two and
18 so forth.

19

20 Q But he definitely identified you as being down there?

21 A Just say he identified me. That's all. The best I can say
22 is that I wasn't down there.

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30

31

32

33

34

35

36

37

38

39

40

41

42

43

44

45

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS) (END)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of T/5 John Mack Sanders, taken
2 at Seattle, Washington, on 2 October 1944, by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6
7
8

9 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization and
10 station.

11 A John Mack Sanders, T/5, 36892726, 650th Port Company, Fort
12 Lawton, Washington.
13

14 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
15 Article of War?

16 A I think I am, sir.
17

18 Q Do you want me to explain it to you?

19 A It has been explained to me before, sir.
20

21 Q On the night of 14 August 1944, were you in Barracks 665 when the
22 fight started between the colored soldiers and the 28th Italian Quarter-
23 master Company?

24 A No, sir, I was not in that barracks.
25

26 Q Where were you?

27 A I was in another barracks, I think two barracks below.
28

29 Q Was it the barracks where Williams cuts hair?

30 A Yes, that is the one.
31

32 Q Were you in that barracks when the fight started?

33 A I guess when it started.
34

35 Q What was the first thing you heard about the fight?

36 A The first thing I heard about it was after I left out of the
37 barracks.
38

39 Q Well, didn't you hear the fighting going on when you were in the
40 barracks?

41 A No, sir.
42

43 Q Didn't you hear any noise down around that mess hall?

44 A No, sir, I didn't hear the noise down there.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1332

(SANDERS) JOHNNIE MAC

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q And the first thing you heard was when you left the barracks?
2 A The first thing I heard was the whistle.
3
4 Q Was the whistle in the vicinity of the barracks or down below?
5 A Right in front of the barracks.
6
7 Q Who was blowing the whistle?
8 A I don't know, sir.
9
10 Q You didn't see who was blowing the whistle and you heard the
11 man blow it?
12 A I don't see the man.
13
14 Q Wasn't there a bunch of people gathered up there?
15 A The whistle blew and me and some other boys was playing cards.
16
17 Q Who was the other boy?
18 A Sammy Adams. We call him "Kingfish." The whistle blew and
19 I said, "What the hell is that for", and he said, "I don't know." He said,
20 "We will finish the game", and in about two or three minutes we went out.
21 I saw a big bunch of soldiers over in front of this other barracks.
22
23 Q That is this one over here across the road? (indicating)
24 A Yes, the two story barracks.
25
26 Q You saw a bunch of boys down 719?
27 A Yes, I don't know the number of it. I went down there and I
28 heard somebody say that one of our boys got hit.
29
30 Q Who said that?
31 A I don't know. Then, I was going in the barracks to see who
32 it was.
33
34 Q Wasn't there a whistle being blown?
35 A No, the whistle blew once or twice out there in the road.
36
37 Q By the time you got out the whistle had stopped blowing?
38 A Yes.
39
40 Q Hadn't the people started to assemble?
41 A I don't think so because the whistle seemed like it blowed right
42 in front of this barracks. It was all down in front of this other barracks.
43
44 Q When you got down to Barracks 719, you saw this great crowd
45 gathered around this barracks?

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

1333

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q Who did you see down there that you know -- out of your Company?
4 A I saw --
5
6 Q Luther Larkin?
7 A I don't remember. If you don't mind, sir, I will try to think.
8 I saw Frank Hughes.
9
10 Q What was Frank Hughes doing?
11 A He was trying to get in the door.
12
13 Q What for?
14 A This boy that got hit since then, I learned it was Snow, we was
15 all trying to go in there to see if he was hit and what it was all about.
16 I saw Frank Hughes.
17
18 Q Was Frank saying anything when you saw him?
19 A No, he wasn't saying anything. I think Booker Thornton.
20
21 Q What was Booker Thornton doing?
22 A He was trying to get in the door.
23
24 Q You saw Addison George at the door?
25 A I am not for sure.
26
27 Q If you saw him, what was he doing?
28 A All the boys was at the door and all trying to get in. When
29 you are doing something like that, I didn't think to pick out --
30
31 Q You couldn't get in the door because it was so crowded you
32 people couldn't get in?
33 A That is right.
34
35 Q Now, what else happened there?
36 A Some MP's came up and asked about the First Sergeant.
37
38 Q Now, wait. Before the MP's came up there was something else
39 that happened in front of that building wasn't there. Wasn't there a
40 bunch of fellows leaving the building and going down the Italian Area?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Hadn't some of them tore the fence or were they tearing it down?
44 A I don't remember the fence.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

1334

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You remember seeing them tear it down don't you?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Well, you got there while all that crowd was around 700 and that
5 is when the fence was being torn down?
6 A I don't remember the fence.
7
8 Q Don't you remember the fence with the wire?
9 A Major, you want me to tell you the truth?
10
11 Q Yes.
12 A Well, that is what I am trying to do.
13
14 Q After they couldn't get in the building, what else did you see
15 out there?
16 A I didn't see anything. Would you rather ask me the questions
17 or would you rather me tell you what happened?
18
19 Q I will ask you the questions.
20 A All right.
21
22 Q How long did you stay out in front of the building?
23 A About three minutes.
24
25 Q And some MP's came up?
26 A Yes.
27
28 Q Did they come in the jeep?
29 A I don't think there was a jeep.
30
31 Q In a command car?
32 A Yes.
33
34 Q How many of them came in the command car; do you know?
35 A I don't remember.
36
37 Q Whqt did they do?
38 A Two of them came and asked for the First Sergeant.
39
40 Q Did they get a hold of the First Sergeant?
41 A When they asked for the First Sergeant, I went in to get him.
42
43 Q That's Sgt. Aubry?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q What was Sgt. Aubry doing and where was he?
2 A He was out; he was not there.
3
4 Q What did you do?
5 A I stayed in the barracks.
6
7 Q What did you do?
8 A I looked out the window.
9
10 Q What did you see going on?
11 A The only thing I saw was the jeeps and ambulances running up
12 and down the streets.
13
14 Q Didn't you see them running up and down?
15 A No, sir.
16
17 Q You saw them come in the building?
18 A In barracks 719?
19
20 Q In this barracks where you were?
21 A I didn't see anybody come in.
22
23 Q You mean you stayed there all that time after the fighting was
24 over, in the room where the Sgt. slept and still didn't see anyone come
25 in the barracks?
26 A Nobody but the Sgt. and I think Willie Prevost.
27
28 Q What did Willie say when he came in?
29 A He didn't say anything to me.
30
31 Q Did he say anything to the sergeant?
32 A He didn't say anything to the sergeant.
33
34 Q What was the sergeant talking about?
35 A He told me how bad the boys carried on.
36
37 Q What did you tell him?
38 A I didn't tell him anything. He told me they tore up the barracks
39 down there. He didn't say he had been down. He was just telling me
40 how they did.
41
42 Q Did he tell you who had gone down there?
43 A No, sir, he didn't.
44
45 Q Did he tell you what started the fight?

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q He didn't say they ran a jeep into one of the tents and tore
4 it down?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Did he tell you they threw rocks thru the windows?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Did he tell you they hung a boy?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Did he know whether they hung a man or not?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Did you know at that time?
17 A No, sir, I didn't know until we was fixing to go down here.
18
19 Q Who told you?
20 A Pinkney was telling me.
21
22 Q Didn't Pinkney tell you who he saw down in the fight?
23 A No, sir.
24
25 Q After the fight, did you talk to anyone about it?
26 A The only time I talked to anybody about the fight was here
27 about 3 weeks ago over here in this little stockade.
28
29 Q Who did you talk to then?
30 A Willie Ellis. He said he was down there and saw all that went on.
31
32 Q Who did he tell you was down there at the time?
33 A He told me Wallace Wooden and Sgt. Hurks, Sgt. Gresham, Luther
34 Larkin, Booker Thornton -- I am not sure about that.
35
36 Q Did he tell you what they did?
37 A No, sir, he didn't tell me. He said one thing that Hurks seemed
38 to be engineering the fight.
39
40 Q Hurks kind of led them down there?
41 A He didn't say "led them down there." He said he kind of
42 engineered it. He didn't say who led them down there or anything like
43 that. Here's one thing he said. He said those MP's called a bunch of the
44 boys over to the car and Hurks stood up in the door and the MP's told Hurks
45 that the boys there did a damn nice job.

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 11 Q Did he tell you who those MP's were?
12 A No, sir.
13
- 14 Q Did you see the MP's when Hurks went and sat on the side of the
15 car and talked to them?
16 A No, sir, I couldn't see that. I wasn't there.
17
- 18 Q You didn't see Hurks go over there?
19 A No, sir, I couldn't swear. I am only telling you what I heard.
20
- 21 Q Hurks no doubt talked to the MP's in front of Building 719.
22 A I don't know anything about that.
23
- 24 Q Ellis told you that the MP's did say that they had done a damn
25 good job.
26 A Yes, Ellis told me and told quite a few of us over here in
27 the stockade.
28
- 29 Q What did Ellis say he did?
30 A He didn't say he did anything.
31
- 32 Q Did he say Roy Montgomery was down there?
33 A No, sir.
34
- 35 Q Does Wallace live down there with you?
36 A No, sir.
37
- 38 Q During the fight, did you see Wallace Wooden anywhere?
39 A No, sir, I was in the barracks.
40
- 41 Q Wasn't Wallace supposed to be in that dice game?
42 A Which dice game.
43
- 44 Q That was going on in Building 719?
45 A That was early evening. You see, they have lots of dice games
up around there.
- Q Now, after the fight was over, the boys began to come back to
the barracks and you were still in the barracks and you heard the sergeant
talking to Willie Prevost.
A I didn't hear him talking.
- Q Prevost came in where you were.
A I lived in the back of the barracks and Prevost lived in the
front of the barracks.

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did he go to bed?
2 A I don't remember, sir, whether he did or not.
3
4 Q You didn't hear him say anything about the fight?
5 A The only time I heard him say anything about the fight was
6 when we was over here. He said he was down there and had a stick, but
7 he wasn't in it.
8
9 Q Willie told you that?
10 A Yes. I asked him what he was doing with the stick and he
11 said he went down there and saw them fighting and he wanted some protection.
12
13 Q Did he say he hit anyone?
14 A He said he did not, sir.
15
16 Q Who else did you talk to about it?
17 A About the fight?
18
19 Q Yes.
20 A I talked to Addison George and he said he was down there, but he
21 said when he got there it was all over.
22
23 Q Who else did you talk to?
24 A I haven't talked to anybody else. They didn't like to talk
25 very much about it.
26
27 Q Did you ever talk to anybody about the hanging?
28 A No, sir, I ain't talked to anybody about that at all. The only
29 time I heard anybody say anything about that was Pinkney when we were
30 in formation and I had heard a couple of the officers and they told me about
31 that and I read it in the paper.
32
33 Q You never heard any of the boys talking that they were in on
34 the hanging?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Do you have any idea who did it?
38 A No, sir. I would have better sense to go down there and fight because
39 I was always taught better to **stay** out of places like that. Those boys
40 don't talk very much about it over there.
41
42 Q Were you with King that night?
43 A No, sir.
44
45 Q Did you see King that night?

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A I seen him the early part of the night.
2
3 Q You didn't see him during the fight?
4 A No, sir.
5
6 Q Did you see Sgt. Palmer?
7 A No, Palmer and I had been talking in the barracks before the fight.
8
9 Q And after the fight you didn't see Palmer?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q Now, after this conversation which you heard the First Sergeant
13 having in Barracks 719, after the fight, what did you do?
14 A Oh, I was in bed, sir. I was already in bed, sir. I was in
15 bed when the Sergeant came in.
16
17 Q And you stayed in bed?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Did any of the other boys come in and go to bed after you were
21 in bed?
22 A I don't remember any of the boys coming in. Most of the boys in
23 that barracks were in bed already.
24
25 Q Did you ever talk to Wallace Wooden about the fight?
26 A No, sir, I didn't because I haven't been close to Wallace
27 since the fight.
28
29 Q And these that you have named are the only ones that you
30 talked to about it?
31 A That is right. Oh, I have asked lots of boys if they know
32 anything about it.
33
34 Q Did any of them ever tell you about it other than those you
35 have given us?
36 A They don't know anything.
37
38 Q Was there any discussion in your barracks the morning following
39 the riot about the man that was hanged?
40 A No, sir, not as I know of because the next morning we was up
41 early and pretty much on the move.
42
43 Q When you were notified about the hanging, they surely discussed
44 it some didn't they?
45 A The first thing I heard anything about it was when we was down

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS)

43

CONFIDENTIAL

1 here at the staging area.
2
3 Q Is that when Pinkney told you?
4 A He was talking.
5
6 Q Did anybody ask Pinkney any questions about it?
7 A Yes, King. King asked Pinkney was the man's hands tied when he
8 was hung.
9
10 Q Did anyone else ask Pinkney anything about it besides King?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Did Pinkney tell him whether his hands were tied or not?
14 A Pinkney said he didn't know.
15
16 Q I wonder why King asked him that?
17 A I don't know, sir.
18
19 Q Did King elucidate on why he asked it that way?
20 A No, sir, not to me, sir.
21
22 Q Is there anything else you want to tell us about it?
23 A No, sir.
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SANDERS) (END)

1341

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A There is a road goes down in the Italian Area down here.
2
3 Q That would be on the road?
4 A It branches off this main street. It looked like they was
5 standing at the fork of that road.
6
7 Q They was standing at the fork of Virginia Avenue and Lawton
8 Road?
9 A That is right.
10
11 Q What were they doing?
12 A I don't know, sir.
13
14 Q Weren't they hollering?
15 A No, everything was quiet.
16
17 Q Was there a whistle being blown?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q Did you hear a whistle being blown down in the area of which
21 you speak?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q What did you do after you looked out of the window?
25 A I looked about two minutes and went on back and finished my pack.
26
27 Q Did you see some of this crowd start down the Italian Area?
28 A I couldn't say, sir.
29
30 Q Did you see them all standing around?
31 A Well, sir, it looked like somebody was questioning them.
32
33 Q After you went back and started rolling your pack, what happened?
34 A I rolled my pack, fixed my duffle bag and got into bed.
35
36 Q Now, before you got in bed, was there any of the boys in your
37 barracks that left the barracks and went down toward the area?
38 A Before I got in bed?
39
40 Q Yes, after you heard about the fight?
41 A I didn't pay that much attention.
42
43 Q Did any of them leave the barracks?
44 A They could have. I didn't pay that much attention to them.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(REDLEY)

1343

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You didn't see anyone go down there?
2 A No, sir, I didn't.
3
4 Q After you got in bed, did you see any of them coming back from
5 the area?
6 A No, sir, I got in bed and the only thing I remember was the
7 Major -- some Major and one or two MP's came in there and he said "put out
8 all these lights." "When he said that I looked out from under my blanket
9 to see if there was anybody to put the lights out. Somebody put the
10 lights out. I don't know who it was.
11
12 Q You didn't see anyone come back from the Area?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q Before you went to bed, did you see anyone come back from
16 that Area?
17 A I don't know, sir. You see, sir, we was all fixing the clothes
18 and I wasn't paying no attention.
19
20 Q Didn't you hear some discussion of the fight that night?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q The next morning did you hear some of them discussing the
24 fight?
25 A No, sir. I didn't know what happened. When I knew that the
26 Italians and colored boys had a fight they called me up that morning and
27 questioned me.
28
29 Q Who is the first person that you talked to about it that the
30 about the fight?
31 A I didn't talk to no one that knew about it.
32
33 Q Well, later you did, didn't you?
34 A Let me see, sir. Sir, I have to explain to you. The next
35 morning, after the fight, the Company went to the consolidated mess hall
36 to eat and I didn't go. You see, I worked late that night and I ate something
37 before I left the mess hall and I was going to get as much sleep as I could.
38 When they came back I was up getting my stuff ready and an order came
39 through to fall out and all I could do was get ready to move out. Well,
40 the Captain told the cooks a truck was coming to get us and take us to
41 the inner bay to fix the kitchen car for the Company. Well, they made
42 us leave our bags there and we got on the truck and had to go get the
43 field equipment out in the kitchen. Well, we went and got some GI cans
44 and went down to the inner bay and prepared the kitchen car. We fixed
45 the car and got chow ready for the Company. Where the Company was then

CONFIDENTIAL

(REDLEY)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 I don't know. They switched us around and we got down on the dock and an
2 order came to stop -- we got to go back -- we had put on nothing but
3 fatigues. We had to take all that off and then switched the car up and
4 down the track and it seemed to me it was around five o'clock when I got
5 back up here to camp from down there fooling with that car and when we
6 got back the Company was in the stockade.

7
8 Q You went in the stockade with them?

9 A No, sir, they was already in there.

10
11 Q When you first got back in the stockade what was the first
12 conversation you had with anybody concerning the fight?

13 A The first thing I was to do was find out where I was living.
14 I went to a tent and I found the cooks.

15
16 Q Who were those people?

17 A I was staying in the tent with the Mess Sergeant.

18
19 Q What is his name?

20 A Ernest Graham and T/5 Robert Boyd. There was one or two more
21 staying in there.

22
23 Q What conversation did you have with the cooks and the Mess
24 Sergeant about the fight?

25 A I wanted to know why they were putting us in the stockade and
26 he figured they was holding us on account of the fight.

27
28 Q Who said that?

29 A We were all just talking. I said, "Why are they going to
30 hold all of us?" He said we have to wait to find that out.

31
32 Q Who else did you have conversation with about the fight.

33 A Nobody, sir.

34
35 Q How about since that time. Haven't you heard anyone talking
36 about the fight?

37 A Well, I heard -- a boy said he was down there.

38
39 Q Who was that?

40 A A boy in our Company. They call him "Slick".

41
42 Q Willie Curry?

43 A Yes.

44
45 Q What did he say he did down there?

CONFIDENTIAL

(REDLEY)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A He said he went down there. He hit a fellow and he drove a
2 jeep down there.
3
- 4 Q Who else did he say was down there?
5 A He didn't say. He was telling it and everybody was laughing
6 about it.
7
- 8 Q Who else mentioned it since that time?
9 A He and Robert Montgomery.
10
- 11 Q Did Robert say he had been down there?
12 A He said he had told a Major --
13
- 14 Q Who else was talking about it and said he was there?
15 A They was telling Ellery Mitchell and Joe Scott.
16
- 17 Q Did Joe Scott say he was down there?
18 A No, sir.
19
- 20 Q Did Mitchell say he was down there?
21 A No, sir.
22
- 23 Q Who else was in the crowd and said they were down there?
24 A That's all.
25
- 26 Q Since that time whom have you heard talking about it?
27 A Nobody.
28
- 29 Q Now, how about the hanging? Who said they were in that?
30 A I ain't heard nothing.
31
- 32 Q You mean you haven't heard anything about the hanging?
33 A No, sir, and the first time I heard about it was when they
34 questioned me.
35
- 36 Q You haven't heard a single soul tell about the hanging and
37 who did it?
38 A No, sir.
39
- 40 Q Didn't Wallace Wooden say he was down there?
41 A I don't know him.
42
- 43 Q How about Herman Johnson?
44 A No, sir, I haven't heard him say a thing.
45
- Q Didn't he say he had been down to the hanging?

CONFIDENTIAL

(REDLEY)

49

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q How about Willie Basden?
4 A Who is that, sir?
5
6 Q Henry Jupiter say anything about being in the hanging?
7 A No, sir.
8
9 Q You haven't heard anyone say anything about the hanging?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q Didn't anyone talk about who did it?
13 A No, sir, they don't tell us. If you could go down there
14 you would see their attitude.
15
16 Q They just don't talk about it.
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q Do you have any idea who did the hanging?
20 A No, sir, I don't, sir.
21
22 Q You must have some idea about it?
23 A Sir, I will tell you the truth, sir. I was working that night
24 in the mess hall and since then, sir, they treated me in a way I was in
25 no position to know nothing. I wasn't fooling around with the boys and
26 a lot of those boys I don't know them. A lot of them I met since I came
27 back. I came back to the Company from Cooks School somewhere around
28 the 21st of June and stayed with them about a week and went on furlough
29 on 14 July.
30
31 Q Is there anything else, whether I asked you or not, that you
32 want to tell me about this case?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q Are you known by your organization as "Corporal RED."
36 A No, sir, that's a Sergeant Cravy. He's about the only fellow
37 that calls me "Red." They all call me Redley. A lot of them don't know
38 my first name.
39
40 Q You know that Roy Montgomery has testified that you were down
41 in the area don't you?
42 A Said I was down there?
43
44 Q Yes.
45 A No, sir, and if he did say so he told a story, sir. That's not true.

CONFIDENTIAL

1347

(REDLEY) (END)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. Herman L. Gentry, taken
2 at Seattle, Washington, on 2 October 1944, by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

4 The witness was sworn.

5
6
7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization and
8 station.

9 A Herman L. Gentry, Pvt., 36897238, 650th Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.

11
12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the 24th
13 Article of War?

14 A Yes, sir.

15
16 Q Herman, on the 14 of August 1944, were you out at Fort Lawton
17 when the colored soldiers attacked the Italians?

18 A No, sir.

19
20 Q Where were you?

21 A Down town. I was up there with a girl friend.

22
23 Q What was her name?

24 A Edna Gentry.

25
26 Q Where does she live?

27 A 613 $\frac{1}{2}$ Jackson.

28
29 Q Do you remember the phone number?

30 A SE 1657, I think it is.

31
32 Q What time did you leave the camp to go down to town?

33 A Well, it was around eleven or a little after eleven. I don't
34 know exactly. There was two ladies out there to visit me.

35
36 Q Were these same two out visiting you that you went down to see?

37 A No, I brought them to the bus stop and I left the bus stop and
38 went on to town.

39
40 Q Well, they got on the bus then?

41 A Yes, sir.

42
43 Q How did you get out the gate?

44 A I didn't get out the gate. I went under the fence.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(GENTRY)

1348

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q You crawled under the fence?
2 A Yes.
3
4 Q Where did you crawl under the fence?
5 A It was on the far side of the fence over by the prison.
6
7 Q And then how did you travel from there to town?
8 A Well, when I come under the fence, I went around through a
9 street -- I don't know what it was -- and came around to where the bus comes.
10
11 Q Did you get on the same bus that the girls were on?
12 A No, they went out this gate on this side and I went on the
13 other side.
14
15 Q You went out on the east gate and they came out on the south
16 gate?
17 A I don't know, but those are the ones.
18
19 Q How did you get to town after getting out?
20 A On the bus.
21
22 Q Did you have anyone with me?
23 A I had another friend with me, Thomas Pridgeon.
24
25 Q And you and Thomas crawled out from under the fence at the same
26 time and both went to town together?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q When you came out did you get on a bus?
30 A Yes, we came out and came to a bus stop and after a while a
31 bus came and picked us up.
32
33 Q You paid your fare on the bus?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q Where did you get off?
37 A We transferred and went right to Jackson Street.
38
39 Q And that's where she lives?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q When you got out to Jackson Street what time was it?
43 A As close as I could get it was around twelve.
44
45 Q And you left the area with your girl friend around eleven?

CONFIDENTIAL

(GENTRY)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Around eleven or a little after because we were standing out
2 in the area with the girls and the MP came up in some jeep and said it was
3 time out for those girls and we had to get them off the post. We come
4 on down to catch the bus and while on our way back to the bus, the MP
5 stopped us again and said, "You all better hurry up." We got down to
6 the bus stop and this MP was at the bus stop and said time was out for
7 those ladies and said they should have been gone a good while ago and he
8 said those passes had to go before the Colonel and he tore those passes
9 up and put the pieces where they put cigarettes. The bus stayed there about
10 two or three minutes and when the bus pulled off Thomas and myself went
11 by the Service Club and went out through by the gate.

12
13 Q Didn't you know you shouldn't leave the camp after eleven?

14 A Yes, sir.

15

16 Q Your Company was getting ready to leave the next day, wasn't it,
17 and you were confined to the camp?

18 A Yes, sir.

19

20 Q And you violated all orders going to town?

21 A Yes, sir.

22

23 Q And you knew that at the time you violated it?

24 A Yes, sir.

25

26 Q How long did you stay down town?

27 A I came back on the first bus.

28

29 Q What time did you get back?

30 A I don't know what time, but I was back in time for reveille.

31

32 Q Did you stay in your girl friend's house?

33 A Yes, sir.

34

35 Q What did you all do?

36 A Well, we went to bed.

37

38 Q Stayed in bed all night?

39 A Yes. When I got to town, Thomas, he didn't get off the bus
40 and I went to this hotel on Jackson Street.

41

42 Q Oh, you stayed in a hotel?

43 A Yes, sir.

44

45 Q You didn't see Thomas any more that night?

CONFIDENTIAL

(GENTRY)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, he came back.
2
3 Q Came back to the hotel?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q You didn't all four stay in the same room?
7 A No, sir.
8
9 Q Just you and this girl stayed in this room?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q And he came back and got you in the morning and you came back
13 to camp together on the bus?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q How did you get in?
17 A We came back the same way we left.
18
19 Q Got out and crawled under the fence?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q It was day light when you crawled under the fence gate wasn't it?
23 A No, sir, it wasn't.
24
25 Q Now, you were down in the 700 area about eleven o'clock with
26 the girls?
27 A Well, I would say it was around eleven because the MP's said
28 it was time out.
29
30 Q Where were you while you were down there?
31 A We was standing out in front of building 578.
32
33 Q What was going on?
34 A We was standing out there talking.
35
36 Q Didn't someone get hurt while you were there?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q You saw the MP's come up in a jeep?
40 A Yes, they told us time was out for the girls and we had to
41 get them off the post.
42
43 Q And that was the last time you saw the MP's?
44 A Well, I just told you.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(GENTRY)

54

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q The last time you saw the MP's was in that vicinity?
2 A Yes.
3
4 Q You didn't see the MP's pick up a wounded man while in that
5 building did you?
6 A No, I didn't.
7
8 Q Are you married?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q Where is your wife?
12 A In Detroit.
13
14 Q Did you write her and tell her about this party you had?
15 A No, sir, I didn't. You see, this girl is from Detroit, too, and
16 my wife kind of thought I was going with her when she came out to see me.
17
18 Q The girl dropped by to see you?
19 A She came out from Detroit to see me.
20
21 Q Did she tell you why she was coming?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q Did she go back and tell your wife she was coming out?
25 A No, sir.
26
27 Q While you were down next to the mess hall, what was going on
28 inside the mess hall?
29 A Well, they had some beer in there.
30
31 Q And a guitar?
32 A Yes, electric guitar.
33
34 Q Dancing a little?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Did you have your girl in there?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q Who else had girls down there?
41 A A fellow by the name of Jesse Jackson. His girl was out there.
42
43 Q Did Sgt. Tanner have a girl out there?
44 A No, sir. He talked with this other girl that was with mine.
45 We was on the south side of the mess hall talking.

CONFIDENTIAL

(GENTRY)

1352

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q But he didn't have a date?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Did you see William G. Jones down there?
5 A Yes, he was down there.
6
7 Q Did you see Luther Larkin?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Roy Daymond?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q You know them?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Did you see Sgt. Bennett, the Mess Sergeant?
17 A I don't know him.
18
19 Q Did you see Cpl. McDaniels, one of the cooks?
20 A I don't know any of the fellows in the 578th at all.
21
22 Q When you left that area there hadn't there been any fighting
23 going on between the Italians and the colored soldiers?
24 A No, sir.
25
26 Q But it started after you left?
27 A I couldn't tell when it started because I didn't come back to
28 the area.
29
30 Q The next morning when you got back to the area, what was
31 happening when you joined the Company?
32 A Well, there wasn't anything happening. When I came back, I was
33 there I guess about ten or fifteen minutes before reveille.
34
35 Q When reveille blew, you all got in formation didn't you?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q And at reveille was there any discussion that was had concerning
39 the fight the night before?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q When was the first time you heard anything about the fight?
43 A The first time I knew anything about it was when we came back
44 I heard some of them talking about there was a fight that night.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(GENTRY)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Who was that?
2 A I couldn't recall.
3
4 Q What did they say?
5 A The only thing I heard about it was they had a fight and
6 Lieutenant Kapitz said more about it and I know what it was all about.
7
8 Q After Lieutenant Kapitz told you about the fight and you
9 learned about it, what discussion did you hear among the members of
10 the Company concerning it?
11 A Nothing, sir. I don't know nothing about it. I wasn't in the
12 camp and I don't know nothing about.
13
14 Q What have you heard about it since that time?
15 A I haven't heard nothing at all.
16
17 Q Do you know that you have been identified as being one of the
18 parties that participated in the fight?
19 A Yes, I have.
20
21 Q You heard that Italian soldier who said he saw you standing
22 in the area with a club?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q What do you have to say to that?
26 A Well, he was just wrong. I have no other statement to make
27 other than what I have already.
28
29 Q What discussion did you hear the soldiers make concerning
30 the hanging?
31 A I haven't heard anything at all.
32
33 Q You haven't heard a single individual talk about the hanging?
34 A No, sir, I haven't. I wouldn't tell you no lie, sir.
35
36 Q Do you know who was down there in the fight?
37 A No, sir, I don't, Colonel.
38
39 Q You know some of them, don't you?
40 A No, sir, I don't.
41
42 Q Now, this girl whom you have named, will she testify that
43 you stayed all night with her?
44 A I guess she will if you will see her, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(GENTRY)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Do you want me to call her?
2 A I would like for you to.
3
4 Q And have her testify that you stayed all night with her on the
5 night of the fight from the time you arrived down town until morning?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q What is her name?
9 A Edna Gentry. Her real name is Edna Connor, but she took my
10 name while she was out here.
11
12 Q Do you give her an allotment?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q Don't you have to pay her any money at all?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q When she was here didn't you have to give her a little money
19 to support her?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q Was she working?
23 A She was working at the hotel as a maid.
24
25 Q What is the name of the hotel?
26 A Annex Hotel, 613 $\frac{1}{2}$ Jackson.
27
28 Q When you were in the hotel did anybody else see you go in
29 that night?
30 A When she came to town she was at the cafe. When I got off the
31 bus I went upstairs and knocked on the door and when I was coming back
32 the landlady was coming out her door and asked me if she could open the
33 door and I said no and she told me Edna was downstairs.
34
35 Q Did the landlady think that you and Edna were married?
36 A Yes, sir, she did.
37
38 Q Did you make arrangements with Edna to meet her someplace when
39 you left her out at the post?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q You told her you would be right on down?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q And she waited downstairs for you?
46 A No, she told me she was going to stop and get something to eat.

CONFIDENTIAL

(GENTRY) (END)

1355

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

58

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. Jefferson D. Green,
2 taken at Seattle, Washington, on 2 October
3 1944, by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams,
4 IGD.

5
6 The witness was sworn.

7
8 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization,
9 and station.

10 A Jefferson D. Green, Pvt., 38252238, 650th Port Company, Fort
11 Lawton, Washington.

12
13 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
14 24th Article of War?

15 A Yes, sir.

16
17 Q Gentry, on the night of 14 August, when a fight occurred
18 between the Italian soldiers and the colored soldiers at Fort Lawton,
19 where were you?

20 A I was in the barracks, sir.

21
22 Q What is the number of your barracks?

23 A 719 upstairs.

24
25 Q Were you in the upstairs of barracks 719 when the fight
26 started?

27 A Yes, I was.

28
29 Q What were you doing?

30 A I was in bed.

31
32 Q Now, as you lay in bed, what was the first thought that you
33 had or what was the first warning that you had that there was a fight
34 going on outside?

35 A There was a lot of hollering and yelling and boys running up
36 and down the barracks and saying one of our boys was knocked in the head.

37
38 Q Who came in and said that?

39 A As I have told you before --

40
41 Q You never told me anything. This is the first time I have
42 ever talked to you.

43 A Pardon me. I was just transferred into this organization. I
44 don't know any of the boys. At that particular time I knew a very few
45 of them and I couldn't call anyone's name.

CONFIDENTIAL

(GREEN)

1356

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

59

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q But you recognized their faces didn't you?
2 A No, sir, I didn't recognize no one's face because where I'
3 was I couldn't even see them. I was in the rear upstairs on the left hand
4 side and from downstairs people in front there you can't see.
5
6 Q You were in bed then and you heard all this noise?
7 A Yes, sir.
8
9 Q What did you do?
10 A I didn't do anything at the particular time.
11
12 Q How long did you stay in bed before you got up?
13 A I can't give you time on that, sir, but when I did get up it
14 was all over.
15
16 Q Had the boys started coming back from the Italian Area?
17 A I don't know. There was a bunch of them outside and the First
18 Sergeant was telling all of the boys to come in, and the Lieutenant was
19 telling them to come in, too.
20
21 Q What Lieutenant was telling them to come in?
22 A I can't recall his name. Lieutenant Kapitz was out there.
23
24 Q Lieutenant Kapitz and the First Sergeant were out there?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q You are sure Lieutenant Kapitz and the First Sergeant were
28 there?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q What was Kapitz saying to them?
32 A He was telling them to go back to the barracks.
33
34 Q What did you do?
35 A I immediately went back in the barracks.
36
37 Q And went to bed?
38 A I went back and got to bed.
39
40 Q While you were in bed several of the boys came in?
41 A A lot came in back of me.
42
43
44 Q Did you recognize any of them?
45 A During the excitement you wouldn't take notice to any faces.

CONFIDENTIAL

((GREEN))

1357

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

60

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q While you were downstairs seeing Lieutenant Kapitz and the
2 Sergeant trying to get them back in the barracks, did you see anybody
3 that you recognized?
4 A I didn't recognize them.
5
6 Q Did you see anyone down there who, since the night of 14 August,
7 you have learned their name and can associate their name with the face
8 you saw down there?
9 A I couldn't very well do that, sir.
10
11 Q All you remember is a bunch of men down there?
12 A Just a bunch of men and the Lieutenant and First Sergeant
13 telling them to come in.
14
15 Q And you went upstairs and got your clothes off and went to bed?
16 A That's right.
17
18 Q And after you got in bed you didn't recognize any of them
19 that came in?
20 A They was walking in and talking about the incident.
21
22 Q Now, who did the talking?
23 A Well, the men. The men were doing the talking. Occasionally,
24 I would, in order to learn of the incident, I would ask and talk with them.
25
26 Q Do you know who talked to you?
27 A Just the men. I don't know their names.
28
29 Q Have you learned their names since that time?
30 A The men -- One thing about it, as I told you before, it was
31 during the excitement and I didn't pay any attention to who I was talking .
32 I was trying to learn of what it was all about and what happened.
33
34 Q Did you learn what the cause was?
35 A All I learned was that they was supposed to be going down there
36 to get the Italians for knocking out two of the boys. I never did see
37 the boys until the next morning. I didn't know anything about it.
38
39 Q But that's what you heard that night?
40 A That's right.
41
42 Q Who told you that?
43 A Well, the whole group.
44
45 Q The whole group?

CONFIDENTIAL

(GREEN)

1358

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

61

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q After you learned what the cause of the fight was, did you
4 learn who they were fighting that night?
5 A Well, all I know they were fighting the Italians.
6
7 Q Did you see any of the Italians fighting?
8 A I didn't see them fighting the Italians.
9
10 Q Did you see the Italians that hit Willie D. Montgomery?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Did you see any of the soldiers who had hit Willie Montgomery?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Did you see Willie Montgomery?
17 A I didn't see him until the next morning.
18
19 Q Where did you see him the next morning?
20 A When they brought him -- they brought three boys, Snow, Clark
21 and Montgomery in the ambulance to the Company.
22
23 Q From the hospital?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q And you talked to him then?
27 A I helped two of them get their clothes together.
28
29 Q Which ones did you help?
30 A Clark and Snow.
31
32 Q Did you talk to Clark and Snow about the fight at that time?
33 A I didn't ask them anything about it. We was in a hurry packing
34 and I was standing out there because I wasn't in line. I was helping
35 clean up the barracks and helping the men that didn't have their things
36 ready and so I just pitched in and helped them get their clothes together.
37
38 Q All the time you talked to them while helping them get their
39 clothes ready and everything you didn't mention anything about the fight?
40 A I wasn't talking about the incident whatsoever.
41
42 Q Now, have you, since the night of 14 August discussed the
43 fight with anyone?
44 A I have.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(GREEN)

1359

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

62

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who was that?
2 A I discussed it with the boys in the barracks with me.
3
4 Q Who were they?
5 A It was Alvin Clark and Walter Jackson -- not Walter Jackson --
6 George Jackson, and Willie Ellis.
7
8 Q Who else?
9 A And Small.
10
11 Q Which Small is that?
12 A It is Smallwood. All I know is Small -- not Smallwood.
13
14 Q Clarence Small?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q And you discussed the fight with Clarence Small, did you?
18 A Yes, it was just about this affair. It was fivemen of us
19 that stayed in that particular tent.
20
21 Q Which was the discussion that you five men had concerning
22 the fight?
23 A It wasn't concerning the fight, it was concerning who was
24 implicated in the fight and who they thought was implicated and who
25 they didn't think.
26
27 Q Did they say who they knew was implicated?
28 A It seemed like it was a majority of the group that was out there
29 wasn't implicated.
30
31 Q Was or wasn't?
32 A Wasn't.
33
34 Q Did they tell you about how many were implicated?
35 A No, they didn't say.
36
37 Q Did Ellis tell you that George Jackson was in the fight?
38 A No, he didn't.
39
40 Q Did he tell you that Jefferson Green was in it?
41 A That's me.
42
43 Q Yes.
44 A No, he didn't.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(GREEN)

1360

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

63

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did he say anything about Clarence Small being in it?
2 A No, he didn't.
3
4 Q At what gate were you and Alvin waiting?
5 A Where the MP's are stationed.
6
7 Q The MP's are stationed at both gates.
8 A If I am not mistaken, I think it is the east gate. The
9 furthest from the hospital.
10
11 Q What were you and Alvin doing there?
12 A We was waitinf for some girls.
13
14 Q Did the girls come?
15 A No, sir.
16
17 Q What did you do?
18 A We went to the hospital to make a phone call.
19
20 Q Did you make a phone call?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q Whom did you call?
24 A He called the girls.
25
26 Q Did you talk to them or did you hear him talking to them?
27 A I didn't talk to them.
28
29 Q Did you and Alvin go anywhere after getting through with the
30 telephone conversation?
31 A Well, I come back to the barracks and went to bed.
32
33 Q And after you went to bed this thing happened latter, didn't it?
34 A That's right.
35
36 Q And that is all you know about the case then is what you have
37 told me?
38 A That's about all I know.
39
40 Q Is there anything else, whether I have asked you or not, which
41 you want to tell me?
42 A I don't think there is, sir. I want to tell you the basic
43 facts and the facts of what I know. It is nothing that I am trying to
44 hide. It is simply because I don't know anything. I really didn't know
45 the men, as I told you, and I have heard a lot of men coming from the

CONFIDENTIAL

(GREEN)

1361

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

64

CONFIDENTIAL

1 fight -- I mean, after they had come from the fight -- discussing what
2 they had done. I couldn't no more point out those men to you as you can
3 and you wasn't there. Now, I know quite a few men that come upstairs and
4 what they did.

5
6 Q Who were those?

7 A That was what I am trying to tell you. I cannot tell you because
8 it was during the excitement, and I was trying to listen to everybody
9 and get some information myself. I didn't know who those people were.

10
11 Q And you since haven't learned who they were?

12 A No, sir, I haven't because the men that you have there now
13 I haven't learned to know their names. I will tell you what transpired
14 in this organization. I went on a furlough and I overstayed my time
15 on the furlough and I come back and I was doing time then for overstaying
16 the furlough. That's the reason.

17
18 Q How much time did you get for overstaying the furlough?

19 A 30 days.

20
21 Q Did you do all of it?

22 A I done everything of it inside camp.

23
24 Q How much trouble have you been in before you got in the Army?

25 A I have had trouble twice.

26
27 Q What were those two times?

28 A I would rather say that was personal, sir, because after all
29 it was a misunderstanding and it is all made up again.

30
31 Q Was it criminal trouble?

32 A Authorities could look up on it as such, but I wouldn't.

33
34 Q Were you in prison for it?

35 A I was a couple times.

36
37 Q In what jail?

38 A County jail in San Antonio, Texas. That was the first time
39 I have ever been in prison in my life.

40
41 Q What was the second occasion?

42 A It was the same thing. It was a woman. It was a woman --
43 the same thing.

44
45 Q And they both happened in San Antonio, Texas?

CONFIDENTIAL

(GREEN)

1362

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

65

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Yes, sir.
2
3 Q And how long did you stay in the second time?
4 A Just a couple days.
5
6 Q Were you sentenced?
7 A No, sir.
8
9 Q Just held for investigation?
10 A That is all. It was thrown out by the court.
11
12 Q It was thrown out by the court?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q Was it on a murder charge?
16 A No, I never did anything like that. It was some misunderstanding
17 between a woman and myself.
18
19 Q Did you cut her -- knife her?
20 A No, I didn't harm her. She said I threatened her. Well, the
21 lady she worked for was somewhat afraid and turned in a threat.
22
23 Q You mean threatened to rape her or threatened to assault her
24 or what?
25 A No, I threatened to hurt her.
26
27 Q Had she been a wife of yours?
28 A No, just a woman I went with. That was why I said it was
29 personal. It is all washed away and we didn't lose friendship about it.
30 It was thrown out of court.
31
32 Q And that's the only two times you have been in trouble?
33 A Yes, it was about the same thing.
34
35 Q Now, on the night that this thing happened, you state that you
36 remained up in your barracks and stayed there except when you went down
37 in front of the building.
38 A That is right, sir. I want to ask you a question. How could
39 that Italian point me out as being one man that would strike him?
40
41 Q Well, I can't answer that. I want to ask you a question.
42 A All right.
43
44 Q How could Battle point you out as being down there with a
45 club and knocking out the window panes and lights in the orderly room

CONFIDENTIAL

(GREEN)

1363

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

66

CONFIDENTIAL

1 of Building 713 -- a friend of yours who has known you a long time. How
2 can he point you out?

3 A Battle hasn't known me so long.

4
5 Q He saw you down there?

6 A He couldn't say that.

7
8 Q His testimony under oath is that you were down there. Tony
9 pointed you out, which is another man. Now, you come and say you weren't
10 down there; that you were in your bed. Now, we are going to court on
11 this and you are going to get up in the court and testify to these facts
12 and not only are you going to testify to these facts, you are going to
13 testify that you weren't down there. As a result, 12 men are going to
14 sit and hear your testimony and judge whether you were down there or not.
15 If you were down there you better tell me. If you weren't, you better
16 stick with the story you got. Now, the evidence is that you were down
17 there and Thomas Battle, a friend of yours, saw you down there and saw
18 what you did.

19 A Colonel, sir, I understand that you are apt to do these things,
20 but your way of doing things -- you want the facts.

21
22 Q That is exactly what I am asking for.

23 A You don't have to try to trick me into the facts because I am
24 giving them to you.

25
26 Q Do you want to hear Thomas Battle's testimony?

27 A I want to hear Thomas Battle tell me that. What Company is
28 Thomas Battle in or was he in?

29
30 Q He's in the Company that was right next to yours.

31 A It is perfectly all right. I don't believe he said it though.

32
33 Q We will bring him back. I want you to see him yourself and
34 I want to let you hear what he said.
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(GREEN) (END)

1364

67

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pfc. Walter Ruffen, taken
2 at Fort Lawton, Washington, On 3 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

4 The witness was sworn.

5
6
7 Q Please state your full name, grade, serial number, organization
8 and station.

9 A Walter Ruffen, Pfc., 36891023, 650th Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.

11
12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
13 24th Article of War?

14 A Well, not so familiar with it, but I heard it.

15
16 Q I will explain them to you, Walter. (The 24th Article of
17 War was read to the witness) Do you understand that?

18 A Yes, sir.

19
20 Q On the night of 14 August, were you down in this area here when
21 the colored soldiers attacked the Italians?

22 A I was living in the first barracks right there, sir.

23
24 Q Barracks 719?

25 A Yes, sir.

26
27 Q What was the first thing that you heard, Walter, concerning
28 the fight?

29 A Well, during the fight I was in bed asleep.

30
31 Q But you heard about it? You heard what was going on outside?

32 A No, sir, I didn't hear anything about it.

33
34 Q Didn't you wake up when all the noise was going on?

35 A When I woke up the Major and MP came in.

36
37 Q What time did you go to bed that night?

38 A I guess about 9:30.

39
40 Q What had you done before you went to bed?

41 A Before I went to bed I finished lettering my clothes.

42
43 Q Had you been down to the Px that night?

44 A No, sir.

45

CONFIDENTIAL

1365

(RUFFEN)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Had you been over to the party that was going on over in the
2 mess hall?
3 A Well, I went down to the hospital the first part of the night.
4
5 Q Who were you staying with down there?
6 A Christopher Columbus Pendelton.
7
8 Q And you left there about what time?
9 A Just about eight o'clock. The ward boy came and told me to
10 leave.
11
12 Q And you walked back?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q Where did you come when you came back?
16 A To the barracks.
17
18 Q And when you came back what was happening around the barracks?
19 A Nothing.
20
21 Q And you went in?
22 A Yes, I finished stenciling my clothes and finished this cap
23 and my fatigues.
24
25 Q After you got to bed, how long was it until you went to
26 sleep?
27 A I couldn't tell you directly.
28
29 Q Well, you must have known how long it took you to go to sleep
30 that night?
31 A I couldn't tell directly. We was laying up in bed talking.
32
33 Q Who were you talking to?
34 A Kurtzberg, Oscar Bolton, Australia Boatland --
35
36 Q Australia Boatland slept in the same barracks with you?
37 A Yes, and Kurtzburg slept in front of me.
38
39 Q Who woke you up?
40 A I woke up myself. The Major and MP came in by that time.
41
42 Q What did they say?
43 A Well, I don't know directly what they said but I know he told me
44 to put out the lights and cut out the noise.
45
46 Q Who was making the noise?

CONFIDENTIAL

1366

(RUFFEN)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Some of the other boys.
2
3 Q Who was doing the talking that the Major was making the
4 complaint about?
5 A I don't know.
6
7 Q Were there some colored boys in the barracks?
8 A It was full of colored boys.
9
10 Q You don't know who was talking?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Were the lights on?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q You heard the talking and noise?
17 A I was in the bed at the time and after I woke up I was sleepy
18 and I didn't recognize any of them.
19
20 Q You didn't recognize any of them?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q When they said "turn out the lights" what did they do?
24 A I stayed in bed.
25
26 Q Did you get up and turn the lights off?
27 A I don't know who turned the lights out.
28
29 Q Did someone turn them out while you were still awake?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q And you went back to sleep?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q The next morning when you woke up, did you stand reveille?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q And at reveille didn't someone tell you about the fight that
39 had gone on?
40 A When we got up to stand reveille, Lieutenant Kapitz and the
41 Captain came around.
42
43 Q What did they say about the fight at that time?
44 A They asked if anyone knew who was down in the fight.
45
46 Q Did anyone say they did?

CONFIDENTIAL

(RUFFEN)

1367

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q Did you talk to anyone about the fight that morning?
4 A No, sir, I was getting ready for the ride.
5
6 Q When you were getting ready for the ride, didn't someone
7 talk to you about the fight?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Since that time what have you heard about the fight?
11 A Nothing, sir.
12
13 Q Is there anything else or any other information which you
14 want to give me in this case?
15 A No, sir, not anything I can give you, sir.
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(RUFFEN) (END)

1368

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Further testimony of Pfc Willie Scott,
2 taken at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October
3 1944, by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was reminded that he was still
6 under oath and of his rights as a witness.
7

8 Q Who, since 14 August, have you heard discussing the fight?
9 A Well, one boy was Prevost. He said he went down there.
10

11 Q Willie Prevost?
12 A Right.
13

14 Q What did Willie say he did down there?
15 A I didn't hear him say what he done down there. He said he was
16 down there.
17

18 Q Who else?
19 A A boy named Ceaser.
20

21 Q Johnnie Ceaser?
22 A Right.
23

24 Q What did he say?
25 A He said he helped an American fellow get away down there.
26

27 Q He said he was down there?
28 A Yes.
29

30 Q And who else?
31 A That is just about all.
32

33 Q Did Roy Montgomery say something about it?
34 A No, sir.
35

36 Q How about Wallace Wooden?
37 A I have never been with him, sir.
38

39 Q Have you heard Herman Johnson, a great big colored boy, say
40 he was down there?
41 A He's not in my Company. I don't know him.
42

43 Q Who else in your Company, Willie?
44 A That is just about all.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SCOTT)

1369

72

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q How about John Hamilton?
2 A I don't know much about John Hamilton. I haven't been with
3 him very much.
4
5 Q Willie Basden?
6 A I never heard him say anything. He's pretty quiet.
7
8 Q Have any of those boys that have gone overseas, have you heard
9 any of them talking before they left?
10 A No, sir, I didn't.
11
12 Q Now, the night of the fight when you went back in your barracks
13 wasn't there some men that came in there and talked what they did?
14 A I didn't hear that.
15
16 Q You didn't hear anyone in the barracks?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q Did you hear any of the men from the other barracks talking
20 about the fight?
21 A No, sir, I lives on the hill.
22
23 Q Were you up there on the hill around the time the whistle
24 was blown?
25 A No, sir, it must have been right here in this barracks.
26
27 Q There were two whistles blown weren't there?
28 A I never did hear any whistle.
29
30 Q Is there anything else, Willie, that you would like to tell
31 me about this case?
32 A Only thing I would like to know, sir, is what if a man did
33 not go down there why should he be punished?
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SCOTT) (END)

1370

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A I got up and put on my clothes and went down there.
2
3 Q Down around the mess hall, did you?
4 A Right down in front of the barracks, and the First Sergeant
5 was hollering.
6
7 Q Who was the First Sergeant?
8 A Sgt. Aubry.
9
10 Q Sgt. Aubry was yelling to his men to get back in the barracks?
11 A Yes, so I came back in the barracks. I pulled off my clothes
12 and put a raincoat over my window because the light was shining in my
13 window from the other barracks. I put a raincoat over the window to
14 keep the light from shining and I covered my head up and went to sleep.
15
16 Q You heard a lot of noise down there didn't you?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q They kept making a lot of noise after you went back to bed?
20 A I don't know. I went to sleep.
21
22 Q But there was some fighting going on down there?
23 A That is something don't interest me.
24
25 Q A fight doesn't interest you?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q A fight that friends in your Company are engaged in with
29 Italians didn't interest you?
30 A They didn't do nothing to me.
31
32 Q They did something to the Company didn't they?
33 A I don't know.
34
35 Q What do you think all the boys turned out for?
36 A I really don't know.
37
38 Q Over half of the 650th and 651st were down in the fight.
39 A I wasn't down there. I don't know.
40
41 Q Well, you went back in your barracks and then laid down and
42 went back to sleep?
43 A Yes.
44
45 Q When you first got up and went outside of the building you saw

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 a bunch of boys running?

2 A I didn't see anybody. The Sgt. was hollering "get back in
3 the barracks."

4
5 Q And wasn't a whistle blowing when you got up?

6 A I didn't hear no whistle. I was asleep. They made a lot of
7 racked.

8
9 Q After you got up and went outside you saw all these people
10 gathered around the mess hall. Did you see anybody going down there you
11 knew?

12 A No, sir.

13
14 Q Did you recognize anybody from where you stood?

15 A No, sir.

16
17 Q And you didn't go down there?

18 A No, sir.

19
20 Q Who do you know that knows that you didn't go down there?

21 A I didn't pay no attention to see who seen me or nothing. I
22 didn't pay any attention. I just come on back and got in bed.

23
24 Q Did Sgt. Aubry see you come back and go to bed?

25 A I don't know. He was hollering to all the men. He said,
26 "get back in the barracks."

27
28 Q They all didn't go back though.

29 A I really don't know. I come back in.

30
31 Q Did you stand out there a while?

32 A No, I come right back on in.

33
34 Q After you went back in and laid down, how long do you estimate
35 that this loud noise kept up down there?

36 A I don't know. I went to sleep.

37
38 Q The noise woke you up didn't it?

39 A Yes, sir.

40
41 Q Didn't the noise grow louder and louder after you awakened?

42 A The First Sergeant quieted them down.

43
44 Q They didn't quiet that bunch around Building 700?

45 A I lived in 600.

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q I know you did but it is only a jump and a holler from Building
2 700 isn't it?
- 3 A It is right across the street.
- 4
- 5 Q Not over 50 yards?
- 6 A It is not that far from the mess hall. The First Sergeant
7 was hollering to his men to get back in the barracks.
- 8
- 9 Q That was around your barracks and there was a lot of yelling
10 and hollering around 700 wasn't there?
- 11 A No, sir.
- 12
- 13 Q Well, what woke you up -- some noise out there?
- 14 A It was out in front of our barracks. The Sgt. was hollering,
15 "get back in the barracks, get back in the barracks."
- 16
- 17 Q You just went back in and went to sleep?
- 18 A Sure.
- 19
- 20 Q You never had any trouble going to sleep?
- 21 A No. I stayed up Sunday night and I was tired.
- 22
- 23 Q Late?
- 24 A Well, about ten o'clock, I guess.
- 25
- 26 Q What time do you usually go to bed?
- 27 A I don't know, I generally go pretty early.
- 28
- 29 Q About what time?
- 30 A Well, I wouldn't know. We had been busy all week stamping clothes.
- 31
- 32 Q Do you know what time all this noise was going on down there?
- 33 A No.
- 34
- 35 Q Do you think it was after ten o'clock?
- 36 A I wouldn't know. I didn't have no watch.
- 37
- 38 Q You know that you had been asleep?
- 39 A Yes.
- 40
- 41 Q And the noise out in front of the barracks and the noise
42 around 700 woke you up?
- 43 A Yes.
- 44
- 45 Q You got up and dressed?

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Wait, let me straighten the noise. The noise that woke me
2 up was out in front of my barracks.

3
4 Q And you got up, dressed and started toward building 700?

5 A I got out in the street to see what it was all about and the
6 Sgt. was hollering "get back in the barracks."

7
8 Q But you intended to go down and see what the noise was about?

9 A No.

10
11 Q Why did you dress?

12 A To see what it was about.

13
14 Q You could have stuck your head out the window and seen what
15 was going on outside the barracks?

16 A I was on that side (indicating) and couldn't see what was
17 going on.

18
19 Q The noise was in front of your barracks and all you would have
20 had to do was step out and determine what the noise was there, so why
21 did you dress?

22 A I put on my clothes to see what it was all about.

23
24 Q You put on your clothes to walk to the front of the building
25 and see what it was all about?

26 A No, sir.

27
28 Q You didn't put on your clothes to go down to that Italian Area?

29 A Those Italians didn't do nothing to me. Something my mother
30 always told me to stay out of bad company and mind your own business and
31 you get along.

32
33 Q That's the reason you didn't go down there?

34 A Yes. I appreciate what she told me.

35
36 Q Didn't you realize when you were out in front of that building
37 that there was a great bit of noise going on around building 700. Didn't
38 you hear that?

39 A Nope. The noise I heard was out in front of our barracks.

40
41 Q Didn't you hear some boys breaking down a fence around 700?

42 A Nope.

43
44 Q Didn't you hear them talking loud and hollering and saying
45 "beat the hell out of those Italians"?

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir. I was sleeping.

2
3 Q Ehen you got up and went outside they were already fighting
4 down in the Italian Area.

5 A I don't know. I didn't go down there.

6
7 Q Well, did you hear a lot of noise in this area here?

8 A No, sir.

9
10 Q Couldn't you hear the windows and lights being broken?

11 A Nope.

12
13 Q Couldn't you hear people screaming and hollering down there?

14 A Nope.

15
16 Q And you never heard any screaming and hollering all night long?

17 A Nope.

18
19 Q Now, after the fight was over, was there anyone that came back
20 into your barracks?

21 A I don't know. I was sleeping. The Sgt. was hollering "get
22 back in the barracks" and I come back in and went to sleep.

23
24 Q You don't remember when the fight was over then?

25 A I don't remember when the fight was over. I came back and
26 went to sleep.

27
28 Q Now, after the fight was over and you woke up the next morning,
29 who did you hear talking about the fight?

30 A I heard them talking about it, but I didn't pay no attention.

31
32 Q Who did you hear talking about it?

33 A I didn't hear no one. Just a bunch of them talking. We had
34 to pack up our bags and get ready to go.

35
36 Q After you got packed you found out you weren't going?

37 A Nope. We had reveille that morning and come on back and cleaned
38 up the barracks and went over and took a short arm inspection and we
39 thought we were still going.

40
41 Q After that you learned you weren't going?

42 A I thought we were still going.

43
44 Q And after you were in the stockade, you learned that you
45 weren't going?

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS)

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.

2

3 Q And about that time the boys began to talk about why they
4 weren't going and why you were being held here, didn't you?

5 A Yes, on account of the fight. I didn't know it was that bad
6 myself.

7

8 Q Who did you hear talking about the fight?

9

A I never heard anyone.

10

11 Q You mean you hadn't heard anyone talking about the fight?

12

A I didn't pay any attention. I was tending to my own business
13 and I didn't pay any attention to that.

14

15

16

17

18

19

20

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30

31

32

33

34

35

36

37

38

39

40

41

42

43

44

45

CONFIDENTIAL

(THOMAS) (END)

1377

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

80

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Testimony of Pvt. John R. Brown, taken
at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witness was sworn.

Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
and station.

A John R. Brown, Pvt., 42107886, 651st Port Company, Fort
Lawton, Washington.

Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
24th Article of War?

A Yes, sir.

Q Where did you sleep the night of the fight?

A I slept in town at the hotel.

Q You were down town?

A Yes, sir.

Q You weren't here when the fight went on?

A No, sir.

Q How did you happen to get out of camp?

A I borrowed a pass from a sergeant in the staging area.

Q You borrowed one?

A Yes, I used his pass, but he went out without a pass.

Q What was his name?

A Sgt. Herbert E. Evans.

Q How did you get out?

A I went out and got on the bus with his pass. The MP only
looked at the date on the pass. I went on his pass and he came and
got on the bus. I didn't know whether he had another pass or not, but I
know he used his.

Q Where did you go after you left the post?

A Sir, we went down there to where the #19 bus makes the stop.
We caught the #7 bus and went to Jackson.

Q What time did you leave the post?

A It was before chow. It could have been around 3:30 or 4 o'clock

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHN R. BROWN)

1378

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

81

CONFIDENTIAL

1 in the afternoon.
2
3 Q What time did you get back that night?
4 A I didn't come back until the next morning. I wasn't even here
5 for reveille.
6
7 Q Weren't you afraid that the Company Commander would miss you
8 in making the check of men who were supposed to be in camp?
9 A I know they missed me because I wasn't there for reveille.
10
11 Q Was it your intent to miss the boat and not go?
12 A No, sir, I didn't have any intentions of missing the boat.
13 I knew what time the Company Commander said we would be pulling out.
14
15 Q There were orders there that no one would leave the post
16 weren't there?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q And you knew you were violating those orders didn't you?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q And you knew if you got caught you would be punished for it?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q But you went anyway?
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q And you stayed all night?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q What was the girl's name that you had?
32 A I don't know her name.
33
34 Q Where had you met her?
35 A I seen her walking up the street.
36
37 Q Had you had several dates with her previous to this night?
38 A No, sir, I walked by her house with her.
39
40 Q How did you know where to find her when you got down town?
41 A That night I walked by her house and I was supposed to meet her
42 at the Anderson Hotel.
43
44 Q What time did you meet her there?
45 A Sir, I met her -- when I first got there she wasn't there. I

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHN R. BROWN)

1375

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

82

CONFIDENTIAL

1 stood there and waited and I went to the theater. She was in the theater.
2
3 Q And you met her in the theater?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q How did you find her?
7 A Well, sir, it might have been a coincidence, but she was coming
8 from the ladies room when I was coming in from the street.
9
10 Q And then you went in and sat down with her?
11 A Yes, I sat down. I brought some candy first and sat down.
12
13 Q Had she already paid for her ticket?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q And that was Sgt. Evans?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Where is he now?
20 A I don't know, sir. I haven't seen him.
21
22 Q What is the number of his Company?
23 A He's in the Staging Area. The guys in different Companies
24 come from overseas and expect to go back.
25
26 Q Do you know his first name?
27 A Herbert Evans.
28
29 Q Now, after you took the girl in the theater, did you stay
30 in there until the show was over?
31 A No, sir, we went out. We didn't stay until the finish.
32
33 Q You left before it was over?
34 A Yes, something happened to the girl and we had to take her out.
35
36 Q Where did you take her?
37 A We put her in a taxi and went to the Coast Hotel.
38
39 Q What did you do there?
40 A It was kind of hard for me to get a room and I gave the girl
41 three dollars and she went in and got the room.
42
43 Q And you stayed together?
44 A Yes, me and her and the sergeant stayed together.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHN R. BROWN.)

1380

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

83

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Which one slept with her?
2 A We both slept with her.
3
4 Q You don't know her name?
5 A No, sir, I don't, but I know her.
6
7 Q Do you know the number of the room that you and the sergeant
8 and the girl stayed in?
9 A I am not sure, but it was five.
10
11 Q Room five in the Coast Hotel?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Did you register in or did the girl register in?
15 A She did.
16
17 Q Did she register all three of you?
18 A No, sir, I don't think so.
19
20 Q Did you see the landlady that night?
21 A No, sir, I didn't see the landlady, but I saw the cousin of
22 the landlady.
23
24 Q Does she run the house?
25 A Yes, she rents the rooms.
26
27 Q Were there several other girls there?
28 A Not as I know of, sir.
29
30 Q Have you seen this girl since that night of the 14th?
31 A No, sir, I haven't got a chance to see her. I have been in the
32 stockade and the hospital.
33
34 Q Now, after you stayed all night there, did you and the sergeant
35 come back the next morning together?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q Did you come back on the bus?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q Did you enter in the normal way as the bus entered the gate?
42 A I was up in front of the bus and he sat in the back so when
43 the MP checked he checked my pass and the sergeant came in because they
44 didn't take him off the bus.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHN R. BROWN)

1381

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

84

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q You mean you sat up in front of the bus and they checked your pass
2 while you were on the bus and the sergeant was outside?
3 A No, the sergeant was on the bus sitting in the back.
4
- 5 Q Didn't they check his pass?
6 A That is what gets me. I don't know how he got back.
7
- 8 Q What did the Company Commander say to you when you got back?
9 A He didn't say anything to me, sir.
10
- 11 Q Did the First Sergeant say anything to you?
12 A The First Sergeant knows I was absent for reveille, but I
13 didn't have a chance to see him.
14
- 15 Q Did he ever say anything to you after that?
16 A My sergeant asked me wasn't I out for reveille and I told him
17 I had been in town and he told me I had to get the rest of my equipment --
18 he told me where I was going I would have to draw my equipment.
19
- 20 Q Later then did you draw your equipment?
21 A No, sir.
22
- 23 Q They sent you to the stockade before you drew it?
24 A No, they had me on detail helping to load the trucks and after
25 that I went to the stockade.
26
- 27 Q What was the first incident that you heard which informed you
28 that there had been a fight the night before?
29 A When I came back with Sgt. Harding, I looked down and saw the
30 windows had been broken and I asked him what happened and he said they
31 had a fight down there. "They had a fight" I said, and he said "yes."
32 He said, "You are lucky you haven't been here." I told him I was glad I
33 wasn't.
34
- 35 Q What was the next thing you heard about the fight?
36 A Well, after that, sir, like you hear a lot of boys talking
37 that they had a fight down there.
38
- 39 Q Did Sgt. Harding say he had been in the fight?
40 A No, sir.
41
- 42 Q Who was the first man that you heard say he had been in the fight?
43 A I didn't even hear anybody say it.
44
- 45 Q I don't mean that morning, I mean later.

CONFIDENTIAL

1382

(JOHN R. BROWN)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

85

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A I haven't heard anybody say it. That's the truth.
2
3 Q Do you know Thomas Battle?
4 A Yes, I know him.
5
6 Q Did you see him that night?
7 A I don't get along with him.
8
9 Q Why?
10 A I never had anything to do with him. I just never did like him.
11
12 Q Have you ever been around Thomas much?
13 A No, sir, I never have.
14
15 Q You and Thomas ever had any fights?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q Did you see Thomas that night?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q When was the last time you saw Thomas before the fight?
22 A The last time was about a couple days before.
23
24 Q Do you know whether he was in or not?
25 A No, sir, I don't.
26
27 Q Well, I might inform you that Thomas Battle has put you in
28 the fight.
29 A Well, sir, if he put me in it is all right with me, but I know
30 for a fact I wasn't there. I think if I could get to town I could prove
31 it to you or anybody else.
32
33 Q Well, we will work on that side of it for you. But, as it is
34 now, you are going to have to be tried, John, for participating in the
35 riot on the night of August 14th against the Italian Quartermaster Company
36 because you have been identified by Thomas Battle as being down there.
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q Now, if you were down there, why, I would like to know it
40 because we might be able to get some information about what you saw
41 the people doing.
42 A No, sir, I told the Major over here that I wasn't down there.
43 If you prove me guilty, I will be proven guilty for something I didn't do,
44 which is all right with me because I am not in a position to prove that
45 I am innocent.

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHN R. BROWN)

1383

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
 By SJA NARA Date 06/12/02

86

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Well, it is as much our duty as it is anyone else's.

2 A Well, a man has got to be proven guilty before he is guilty.

3
 4 Q It is our duty, however, to find out if you are innocent just
 5 as much as it is our duty to find out if you are guilty. We will make
 6 just a strenuous effort to find out you are innocent as to prove that
 7 you are guilty.

8 A Yes, I understand that.

9
 10 Q Is there any further information that you want to give us
 11 in this case?

12 A No, the only thing is when I first came in the Army I came in
 13 to fight for what I thought was right.

14
 15
 16
 17
 18 (Records show Sgt. Herbert E. Evans, 37607558, arrived
 19 on this post (Fort Lawton) 23 May as a casual, left for furlough
 20 31 May, arrived back from furlough 24 June. Transferred to
 21 San Francisco 30 August.)

22
 23 (Present address: Herbert E. Evans, Sgt., 37607558,
 24 APO 4189, c/o Postmaster,
 25 San Francisco, California.)
 26
 27
 28
 29
 30
 31
 32
 33
 34
 35
 36
 37
 38
 39
 40
 41
 42
 43
 44
 45

CONFIDENTIAL

(JOHN R. BROWN) (EM)

1384

DECLASSIFIEDAuthority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

87

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Further testimony of Pvt. Wallace A.
2 Wooden, taken at Fort Lawton, Washington, on
3 3 October 1944, by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L.
4 Williams, IGD.
5

6 The witness was reminded that he was still
7 under oath and of his rights as a witness.
8

9 Q Wallace, since the last time we talked with you, we have had
10 several witnesses that have identified you as being down in the fight
11 and the part that you played in it. You heard Prevost and what he said
12 about you did you not?
13

14 A Yes, sir.

15 Q Battle has testified what you were doing. Now, is there any
16 part of your testimony that you would like to change?
17

18 A I still hold my same statement.

19 Q You want to leave it as it was?
20

21 A Yes, sir.

22 Q All right. That's all.
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1385

(WOODEN) (END)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

89

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who else slept near you?
2 A Harold Banks, George Jackson, Joe Martin.
3
4 Q Who else slept on that floor that you know?
5 A I couldn't call the names.
6
7 Q Of those whom you named, did you see any of them that night
8 after you went to bed?
9 A After I went to bed I saw them. After I went to sleep I
10 don't know whether they got up or not.
11
12 Q You don't know whether they got up or stayed there?
13 A I don't know whether they got up or stayed there.
14
15 Q The next morning you heard them talking about the fight?
16 A I was in bed and I heard the Lieutenant and Captain talking
17 about the fight.
18
19 Q Lieutenant Capitz came in the room?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Were you still in bed?
23 A Yes, sir.
24
25 Q Didn't you make reveille?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q Why didn't you?
29 A I worked at night.
30
31 Q And Lieutenant Kapitz was talking to the boys about it?
32 A Yes, sir.
33
34 Q And after reveille was over the boys came back inside?
35 A No, sir, they came back inside and went to chow.
36
37 Q And there was some talk about it?
38 A I couldn't definitely tell what it was.
39
40 Q You heard some talk about it?
41 A I heard some talk about it.
42
43 Q Who was that that was talking?
44 A I don't know, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(COLLINS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

90

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Now, after they talked a while, they went out to the mess?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q Then, later on weren't you put in the stockade with them?
5 A Right, sir.
6
7 Q Since you have been in the stockade you have heard considerable
8 talk about it?
9 A No, sir, they just forgot about the stuff.
10
11 Q You mean they just forgot about it?
12 A Nobody even mentions it.
13
14 Q Didn't you hear people talking about it when they came back
15 from talking down here?
16 A Just what you ask them and how you accuse them of things.
17
18 Q They never tell you that they tell us what they say?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q Do you know Wallace Wooden?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q Did he ever tell you what he said?
25 A No, sir.
26
27 Q But you can identify Wallace Wooden?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q Now, since you have been in the guardhouse, you have heard
31 no conversation about this?
32 A Not at all, sir.
33
34 Q And that is all you know about the fight?
35 A That's all I know about the fight.
36
37 Q All right. That is all.
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(COLLINS) (END)

1388

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

91

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Sgt. Fletcher Carter, taken
2 at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

4
5 The witness was sworn.

6
7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
8 and station.

9 A Fletcher Carter, Sgt., 36897767, 650th Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.

11
12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
13 24th Article of War?

14 A Yes, sir.

15
16 Q On the night of 14 August 1944, you were in your area when there
17 was a fight between your Company and the 28th Italian Company, weren't
18 you?

19 A No, sir.

20
21 Q Where were you?

22 A I was in town, sir.

23
24 Q You had gone to town?

25 A Yes, sir.

26
27 Q Wasn't there a rule against going to town on the night before
28 you departed for overseas?

29 A Well, everyone was supposed to have been restricted.

30
31 Q Did you have a pass?

32 A No, I didn't have a pass.

33
34 Q How did you go to town?

35 A I just went AWOL.

36
37 Q You are a sergeant, aren't you?

38 A Yes, sir.

39
40 Q Did you stay all night there?

41 A Yes, I did.

42
43 Q What time did you leave?

44 A Leave where, sir?

45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CARTER)

1389

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SPNARA Date 06/12/02

92

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q The post?
2 A I left the post about twenty minutes after nine, I guess.
3
4 Q What time did you return to the post?
5 A Five o'clock in the morning.
6
7 Q Did you go to town by bus?
8 A Yes, I did.
9
10 Q Where did you get your pass to get out of the gate?
11 A I didn't have a pass.
12
13 Q How did you get out?
14 A Through the fence.
15
16 Q You crawled through the fence?
17 A Yes, sir.
18
19 Q Where did you go after you got out?
20 A Got a bus.
21
22 Q Where did you catch the bus?
23 A Outside the post gate.
24
25 Q Where did you get off?
26 A I got off the bus in town.
27
28 Q Transferred to another bus?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q And where did you go?
32 A I went to town on Jackson Street.
33
34 Q And you got off the bus at Jackson Street?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q Did you meet someone there?
38 A No, not when I got there I didn't.
39
40 Q Later, did you meet someone?
41 A Yes, sir, I did.
42
43 Q Who?
44 A I met a friend's wife and his sister.
45

CONFIDENTIAL
1390

(CARTER)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
 By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

93

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What were their names?
 2 A Millie Mae Murphy.
 3
 4 Q Does she live in Seattle?
 5 A She and his wife live in Seattle.
 6
 7 Q What is his wife's name?
 8 A Mrs. Murphy. I can't give you her first name.
 9
 10 Q What is his name?
 11 A Woodrow Murphy.
 12
 13 Q Does he live in Seattle?
 14 A He's in the hospital. He's a soldier, too.
 15
 16 Q In the hospital here at the post?
 17 A Yes, at Station #2.
 18
 19 Q He's in there now?
 20 A Yes, sir, he is.
 21
 22 Q He was with you that night?
 23 A No, I had been to the hospital to visit him.
 24
 25 Q And you went down and met those two girls there?
 26 A Yes, sir.
 27
 28 Q Why did you go down there?
 29 A Well, to meet them.
 30
 31 Q After you met them, what did you do?
 32 A I escorted them home.
 33
 34 Q What else?
 35 A I sit there and talked for a while until about one o'clock.
 36
 37 Q Where did you go then?
 38 A Then I got me a room at the hotel.
 39
 40 Q Who stayed with you?
 41 A I stayed by myself.
 42
 43 Q This Murphy girl didn't stay with you?
 44 A No, sir.
 45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CARTER)

1391

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

94

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q At what hotel did you stay?
2 A I don't know the name, but it is on South Washington.
3
4 Q Is it the Coast Hotel?
5 A I don't know whether it is the Coast or not, sir.
6
7 Q Do you know what number room you stayed in?
8 A No, I don't recall the number of the room.
9
10 Q You stayed there until the next morning?
11 A I did.
12
13 Q You left the hotel at about what time?
14 A Oh, about 4:40.
15
16 Q You didn't stay in the hotel very long, did you?
17 A Well, until I could get a bus the next morning.
18
19 Q And no woman stayed in the room that you had in the hotel?
20 A I stayed by myself.
21
22 Q And you got up about four o'clock and started back to the
23 post?
24 A It was a little later. I got up about 4:20 and I left there
25 about 4:40.
26
27 Q You got out here about five o'clock?
28 A It was a little after five.
29
30 Q Did you come in on the bus?
31 A No, I didn't come in the post on the bus.
32
33 Q Did you crawl under the fence again the same as you did
34 going out?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q And you reported back to your Company?
38 A Yes, sir.
39
40 Q Did your First Sergeant know you were absent?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Did anyone else know that you were absent?
44 A No, sir, I don't think so.
45
Q Did you report back to the Company before reveille?

CONFIDENTIAL

(CARTER)

1392

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

95

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A I did.
2
3 Q Did you stand reveille?
4 A I did.
5
6 Q At reveille did you learn about this fight?
7 A No, I didn't learn about the fight until later.
8
9 Q Who first told you about the fight?
10 A No one in particular. I heard the Captaintalking and he was
11 talking to the group. That's when I learned about it.
12
13 Q After the Captain talked to the group, wasn't there some
14 discussion of it as to who was in it?
15 A They didn't discuss it with me.
16
17 Q Since that time have you talked to any of the Sergeants of the
18 Company?
19 A Well, before we were brought in here I asked the sergeant
20 what happened and they didn't seem to know, so there wasn't any heads or
21 tails to it.
22
23 Q Have you since been in the guardhouse and talked to any of
24 the men about being in the fight?
25 A I have asked several fellows did they know what happened and nobody
26 seems to know what happened.
27
28 Q No one told you they were in the fight?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q Have you talked to Wallace Wooden?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q Have you heard Wallace discussing it?
35 A No, sir.
36
37 Q Wallace didn't tell you that he was down there and what he did?
38 A No, sir.
39
40 Q He didn't tell you that he told us that you were down there
41 in the fight?
42 A Well, I am afraid that nobody can truthfully say I was there
43 because I wasn't. I can't be in two places at one time.
44
45 Q So, if Wallace said you were there, he doesn't know what he's

CONFIDENTIAL

(CARTER)

1393

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

96

CONFIDENTIAL

1 doesn't know what he's talking about.

2 A Not only Wallace, but anyone else that is saying anything about it.
3 In the first place, I don't see how a man can be brought into something
4 and brought into all this stuff and not know anything about it.

5
6 Q The two girls whom you have testified that you met on the night
7 of 14 August 1944, the two Murphy girls, they both work at the Richmond
8 Laundry?

9 A New Richmond Laundry. That's right, sir.

10
11 Q Is there anything else that you want to tell us about this case?

12 A Well, there is nothing else I want to say.

13
14 Q Did you have some particular purpose in mind in meeting these
15 girls that night. Had you planned in advance to meet them?

16 A Well, no, I hadn't planned in advance.

17
18 Q You had no date with either of them?

19 A No, sir.

20
21 Q What did you have in mind when you went to town?

22 A When I went to the hospital, Mrs. Murphy's husband said that
23 she had gotten a letter and wondered if I could get it to him and I said
24 I could. He gave me the letter and I told him I could deliver it for
25 him.

26
27 Q Had you told him before he delivered the letter to you that
28 you had in mind going to town?

29 A Well, not exactly.

30
31 Q Well, how do you know you were going to town?

32 A He and I were talking and he mentioned "I got a letter belongs
33 to my wife and I opened it by mistake and I would like to get it to her."
34 I said, "I will see if I can get it to her."

35
36 Q Then you didn't have in mind going to town until he gave you
37 the letter?

38 A No, sir; I didn't.

39
40 Q Then, it was the letter that caused you to go to town?

41 A Well --

42
43 Q You knew this Murphy girl didn't you?

44 A Yes, I knew the family before.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CARTER)

1334

DECLASSIFIEDAuthority 735033
By SJA NARA Date 06/12/02

97

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Didn't you want to meet her and have a date with her?
2 A Not that night anyway.
3
4 Q Didn't you think when you went to town you were going to meet
5 her and see her?
6 A I went to see them; yes, sir, of course.
7
8 Q She did go up to the room with you?
9 A Well, no, sir. I say "no, sir" she did not. Well, after all,
10 sir, that's rather personal. That's a personal matter.
11
12 Q She did go up with you didn't she?
13 A I wouldn't say she did.
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CARTER) (END)

1395

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

3 98

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Testimony of Sgt. Theodore T. Davis,
taken at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October
1944, by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witness was sworn.

Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
and station.

A Theodore T. Davis, Sgt., 38561336, 650th Port Company, Fort
Lawton, Washington.

Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
24th Article of War?

A No, sir.

Q I will explain them to you? (The 24th Article of War was
read and explained to the witness) Do you understand that?

A Yes, sir.

Q Now, Sergeant, on the night of 14 August 1944 were you in
Fort Lawton when there was a fight between the colored soldiers and the
Italians?

A I was, sir.

Q What barracks do you sleep in?

A It is 667.

Q What was the first incident that called your attention to the
fight on the night of the 14th?

A I had no intentions whatever. I was in the barracks.

Q What was the first thing that you heard about it?

A It was a scrap between the Italians and the white and colored
men.

Q Who told you?

A Some of the boys came in the barracks.

Q Who were those people?

A I don't know, I was in bed. I just heard the rumor among
the boys gathered in the barracks.

Q And a lot of noise going on outside?

A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

((DAVIS)

1396

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SPNARA Date 06/12/02

99

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Did you get up?
2 A No, sir, I didn't.
3
4 Q You remained in bed all during the fight?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Did the First Sergeant come in?
8 A The First Sergeant came in after everything had quieted down
9 and ordered the men to put out the lights.
10
11 Q Is that Sgt. Cabral?
12 A Yes, sir.
13
14 Q Were the lights turned out?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q Before the lights were turned out, weren't there several of
18 the men of the 651st that came to the barracks who had been in the fight?
19 A All of them returned, I imagine, but I didn't pay any attention.
20
21 Q You are the sergeant of the platoon, and when they came in and
22 started talking you surely knew who was talking.
23 A I will tell you, Major, I didn't pay any attention to them
24 because the fact is I thought the men was out there having a little scrap
25 between themselves.
26
27 Q You heard all this noise though.
28 A Well, I didn't pay any attention to it because I was tired out
29 helping the men and showing the men in my section how to pack their
30 duffle bags and getting ready to move out of the section the next day.
31
32 Q Well, since the night of the fight, you have no doubt heard
33 quite a bit of conversation about the fight. Who have you heard
34 discussing it?
35 A Well, since I have been with the boys in the stockade, perhaps
36 all of them discussed it.
37
38 Q particularly, what conversations have you heard?
39 A Well, just discussing the fight and saying that some of the
40 people down here seem to want to say that they was causing this man
41 being hung which they knew nothing of it and, of course, some boys threw
42 some bricks through the windows.
43
44 Q Who was that?
45 A I couldn't recall any names. Some of them seem to think that

CONFIDENTIAL

(DAVIS)

1397

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

100

CONFIDENTIAL

1 some of the boys have gone with the Company and they kept some of the
2 innocent men back here.

3

4 Q They didn't call any names?
5 A I haven't heard any names.

6

7 Q You haven't heard a man admit he was down there?
8 A They just say some of the men whom they think was down there
9 that night has gone with the Company. Some of the boys that they might
10 have thought was involved in it.

11

12 Q Didn't they name any?
13 A I haven't heard any.

14

15 Q Who were the people that you heard talking?
16 A Practically all the men discuss it.

17

18 Q Name some of them that you heard discussing it.
19 A I think practically all of them.

20

21 Q Practically all that's in the guardhouse.
22 A They seem to think that it was something unjustly down toward
23 them.

24

25 Q Well, I suppose if they come down here and give me the names
26 of these people we can certainly clear this matter up.
27 A I suppose so.

28

29 Q I hope I have made clear to you that if you could give me some
30 names of those who were down there, or thenames of those who were not
31 down there, why, I could certainly go further into that and determine
32 whether to release them or hold them for further investigation.

33 A Colonel, to tell you the truth, the matter hasn't involved me
34 to pay that much attention to it.

35

36 Q Well, you certainly have been in the guardhouse now about four
37 or five weeks. You are quite involved in that way, aren't you?
38 A I am quite involved in that way. I feel that I had nothing to
39 do with it, si I really don't bother to go to any trouble to try and
40 find out. As far as my part of it, I had nothing to do with it. The
41 night of the fight I was at my barracks and the next day I went to the
42 hospital for treatments and I think I made that statement before down at --
43

44 Q What was the matter?
45 A I had gonorrhoea.

CONFIDENTIAL

(DAVIS)

1398

DECLASSIFIED
Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

101

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Q Where did you get it -- down town?

A No, it was an old case.

Q Is there anything else, whether I have asked you or not, that you want to tell us?

A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(DAVIS) (END)

1399

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJA NARA Date 06/12/02

102

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. J. D. Horton, taken
2 at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
8 and station.

9 A J. D. Horton, Pvt., 36897368, 650th Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.
11

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
13 24th Article of War?

14 A Yes, sir.
15

16 Q Were you present here on the post the night the colored soldiers
17 attacked the Italians?

18 A Yes, sir, I was.
19

20 Q Where were you when you first heard of the fight?

21 A Inbed.
22

23 Q In what barracks do you sleep?

24 A In 719.
25

26 Q And who sleeps next to you?

27 A John Young.
28

29 Q And who above you?

30 A To tell you the truth, I don't know the fellows so much. I
31 always had a bad headache and suffered with my head and I never did take
32 up much time. I have always been sick and I have a pretty bad remembrance
33 for the last three or four years to tell you the truth, Major.
34

35 Q On the night of the fight, what was the first thing you heard?

36 A I was awakened by some noise. You know, it looked like it
37 was making a lot of noise.
38

39 Q And you went outside to see what it was?

40 A No, sir, I sure didn't.
41

42 Q What did you do?

43 A I turned over and asked John Young and he said, "Well, some of
44 the boys and the Italians are out there fighting." I said, "Well, that
45 don't concern me", and I turned over and I guess I laid there about five

CONFIDENTIAL

(HORTON)

1400

DECLASSIFIED
Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

or ten minutes and I went back to sleep.

Q What was the next thing that you heard about it?

A Well, I didn't hear anything until sometime later when I heard Lieutenant Kapitz speak about it.

Q What did he say about it?

A He said you guys are satisfied or something because some men got hurt and cut up.

Q Did he say one of them was hung?

A He did say something about some kind of hanging or something.

Q What was said there in the Company about it?

A Well, I didn't hear anything in the Company about it.

Q Didn't any of the boys discuss it?

A I didn't hear them. I can't hear so good.

Q After the fight was over they discussed it didn't they?

A I didn't hear anything about it.

Q You mean up in the barracks you didn't hear anything about it?

A That is right.

Q Didn't Young discuss it with you that night?

A Young sure didn't.

Q Well, after you were put in the stockade, did they discuss it there?

A No, sir.

Q Haven't you heard anything about it since?

A I sure haven't; no, sir.

Q Nobody ever said anything about it?

A In fact, I mostly stay in bed all the time. I suffer all the time. I can't hear so good. In fact, I am hardly ever around in the barracks. Any of the boys will tell you that.

Q You didn't go down that night?

A No, sir.

Q Approximately how many boys went down there?

A I don't know, sir, I didn't go.

CONFIDENTIAL

(HORTON)

1401

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

104

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q But you saw a bunch of them going didn't you?
2 A No, sir, I didn't.
3
4 Q Didn't you look out the window?
5 A I just turned over and asked the fellow what was the matter. I
6 was sick at the time.
7
8 Q Hadn't a bunch of them gathered outside of building 719?
9 A I don't know, sir.
10
11 Q Couldn't you see that mess hall over in front of the building?
12 A I didn't look up. I didn't get out of my bed.
13
14 Q You heard them knocking the boards off the fence.
15 A I didn't know any boards were knocked off.
16
17 Q You knew Willie Montgomery got hit didn't you?
18 A The next day, yes, sir.
19
20 Q You didn't know it that night?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q How old are you?
24 A 36. I was 36 on the 15th of last month.
25
26 Q Is there anything else, whether I have asked you or not, that
27 you want to tell me about this case?
28 A No, sir; I don't. I don't know anything about it.
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(HORTON) (END)

1402

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

106

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q As you played, did you see any of the boys leave the barracks
4 and go down to the area?
5 A I wasn't paying any attention at all. They were running through
6 the barracks and hollering.
7
8 Q What were they hollering about?
9 A They said they was fighting down there.
10
11 Q Did you see any of them that said fighting was going on?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q During the fight you heard all of the noise, the breaking
15 of windows?
16 A No, sir, I didn't hear anything. The boys were talking about
17 the fighting.
18
19 Q And whistles being blown?
20 A No, sir, I didn't hear no whistles.
21
22 Q The men that went down into the area, they came back after
23 the fight was over?
24 A Well, I didn't pay no attention to it, sir.
25
26 Q Didn't you see any of those who came back?
27 A I don't know, sir.
28
29 Q Did you hear a bunch of them discussing the fight after it
30 was over?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q Now, the next day, during the time you were being put in the
34 guardhouse, there was some discussing of it?
35 A I was sick and they sent me back to the hospital.
36
37 Q How long did you stay there?
38 A About eight days, sir.
39
40 Q While in the hospital, did any of them come to see you?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q After you got out of the hospital, you returned to the
44 guardhouse?
45 A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(MITCHELL)

1404

DECLASSIFIED
Authority 735033
By SJD NARA Date 06/12/02

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Have you heard anyone discussing it since then?
2 A One fellow.
3
4 Q Who was that?
5 A They call him "Slick."
6
7 Q Cpl. Curry?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q What did he say about it?
11 A He took a jeep and run a tent down.
12
13 Q He said he knocked a tent down with a jeep?
14 A He said he run into the tent.
15
16 Q Did he say what else he did?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q Have you heard any of the others explain it?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q Do you know Herman Redley?
23 A Yes, he's a cook in our Company.
24
25 Q I suppose you know that Redley testified that he saw you and
26 Joseph Scott down in the area?
27 A I don't know, sir.
28
29 Q Do you know Roy Montgomery?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q Did you see him the night of the 14th?
33 A I don't remember, sir.
34
35 Q Who else in the stockade have you heard discussing it beside
36 Slick?
37 A I haven't heard anyone, sir. I heard Joe Trice talking down
38 there, but he didn't say that he was down in the area. He said they was
39 trying to pin it on him.
40
41 Q Did you hear Wallace Wooden talking about it?
42 A No, sir. I don't know him.
43
44 Q You know the boy out there in the blue coveralls?
45 A No, sir, I just know him by sight. I don't know him by name.

CONFIDENTIAL

(MITCHELL)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

108

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q That is all the conversation you heard, Curry discussing the
2 part he played in the riot?
3 A That's right, sir.
4
5 Q You never heard Roy Montgomery discussing it?
6 A No, sir.
7
8 Q You never heard anything about the hanging?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q Were you mixed up in the hanging?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Is there anything, whether I have asked you or not, that you
15 want to tell me about the case?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q That is all.
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(MITCHELL) (END)

1406

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

109

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Testimony of Cpl. L. C. Clark, taken
at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witness was sworn.

Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
and station.

A L. C. Clark, Cpl., 38545845, 650th Port Company, Fort
Lawton, Washington.

Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
24th Article of War?

A Yes, sir.

Q On the night of 14 August 1944, where were you when the
fight started between the Italians and the colored soldiers?

A I was in my barracks, sir.

Q What was the number of your barracks?

A 667.

Q What was the first thing that called your attention to the
fight?

A I didn't know anything about it until the next morning.
My Company Commander told us about it. You see, he had us packing up and
stamping our clothes. We got new clothes to be transferred to California
and go overseas. I packed mine up and went to bed about ten o'clock. ←

Q You went to sleep then?

A Yes, sir.

Q What was the first thing that awakened you?

A I don't know -- my First Sergeant woke me up about eleven o'clock.

Q About eleven o'clock you did wake up?

A Yes, sir.

Q Who was the sergeant?

A Sgt. Horton.

Q Did he take your clothes off then?

A Yes, sir.

Q What noises did you hear about eleven o'clock when you were

CONFIDENTIAL

(CLARK)

1407

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

110

CONFIDENTIAL

1 awakened?
2 A The boys was gambling in the barracks.
3
4 Q Who was gambling?
5 A Arthur Ross, George Mann -- a bunch of them from the other
6 barracks.
7
8 Q This big fellow who just went out, Ellery Mitchell, was he
9 gambling?
10 A He wasn't in our barracks. He was in his barracks.
11
12 Q Did you see Wallace Wooden up there anywhere?
13 A I don't know him, sir.
14
15 Q And you went to sleep then?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q The first thing you knew about it was the next morning?
19 A Yes, sir.
20
21 Q And you heard some discussion after the Company Commander told
22 you about it didn't you?
23 A No, sir I didn't hear anything said. We was so busy packing
24 up, they didn't mention any fight around there.
25
26 Q I mean after you found out you weren't going overseas and
27 were put in the guardhouse you heard some discussion about it?
28 A No, sir, none of the boys said anything.
29
30 Q Well, you heard discussion since the fight up until now
31 haven't you?
32 A No, sir, I ain't heard nothing about it. They didn't say
33 anything around me about it, sir.
34
35 Q Do you mean you have been up in the guardhouse five weeks
36 now and you haven't heard anybody discussing that fight?
37 A No, sir. The boys would be gambling and pitching horseshoes.
38 The only thing they say is "What they got me in here for, I wasn't down
39 there", and all such things.
40
41 Q Do you know Slick Curry?
42 A Yes, I know him.
43
44 Q Have you heard him talking about it?
45 A I never heard him say he was down there.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CLARK)

1408

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

111

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you hear him say he drove the jeep into the tent?
2 A No, sir, he never did say anything about it.
3
4 Q Have you heard B. F. Foster talking about it?
5 A I don't know him.
6
7 Q Is Ellery Mitchell in your Company?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Haven't you heard him talking about it?
11 A No, sir, I haven't heard any of them talking about it. I am
12 going to tell you the facts.
13
14 Q All you know now is what you heard the Company Commander say
15 about it and what little talk you heard since that time?
16 A That is all.
17
18 Q And those people you heard talking about it, who were they?
19 A I ain't heard nobody making any discussion about the fight.
20 That boy, Slick, is the only one said anything about it.
21
22 Q Slick didn't say he was down there, did he?
23 A He didn't say he was down there, but that he talked about it.
24
25 Q Didn't you ever hear anyone say they were down there?
26 A Some of them wish they were down there.
27
28 Q Who is that?
29 A Slick. Slick said he wished he would have been down there. He
30 said they got him in the stockade for something he didn't do.
31
32 Q Is there anything else, whether I have asked you or not, that
33 you want to tell me about this case?
34 A That is all I know, sir.
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CLARK) (END)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

112

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Testimony of Cpl. Emmett Lillard, taken
at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witness was sworn.

Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
and station.

A Emmett Lillard, Cpl., 36788537, 651st Port Company, Fort
Lawton, Washington.

Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
24th Article of War?

A Well, no, sir; not exactly.

Q I will explain them to you. (The 24th Article of War was
read and explained to the witness). Do you understand that?

A Yes, sir.

Q On the night of 14 August 1944, were you in Fort Lawton when
the colored soldiers attacked the Italians?

A Yes, sir.

Q Where were you sleeping that night?

A I was in barracks 750, I think.

Q What was the first thing that you heard, Corporal, that led
you to believe there was a fight going on?

A Oh, someone outside was hollering and there's a fight doing
in the Italian area.

Q Who was hollering?

A I couldn't tell you that, sir. I don't know just who it was.

Q Did you go outside?

A Yes, sir; I did.

Q What did you see when you got on the outside?

A Just a lot of soldiers coming out of the barracks and going
in the barracks and a bunch of them wanted to get together.

Q Were some of them getting clubs?

A No.

Q A bunch of them got together did they?

CONFIDENTIAL

(LILLARD)

1410

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

113

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Yes, sir.
- 2
- 3 Q Did they go down there?
- 4 A No, sir.
- 5
- 6 Q Where did they go?
- 7 A We was standing at the barracks, just as you go down the hill?
- 8
- 9 Q 672?
- 10 A The latrine and we was all standing there and the First
- 11 Sergeant came out there.
- 12
- 13 Q Sgt. Cabral?
- 14 A Yes, sir. He said, "Don't go down there." He said, "I am giving
- 15 orders for you not to go down there." "He said, "I am going in and call
- 16 the MP's." He went back and called the MP's and I was standing there.
- 17 Hewent back and called the MP's and he came back there and he stood up there
- 18 with a whole bunch of us watching the rocks and things hitting the walls.
- 19
- 20 Q And you heard the windows and lights being broken?
- 21 A Yes, sir.
- 22
- 23 Q Heard yelling and screaming?
- 24 A That is right, sir.
- 25
- 26 Q As this was going on, did you see anymen either from your
- 27 Company or from the other Company on the other side of the road going
- 28 down that way?
- 29 A No, sir, I did not.
- 30
- 31 Q You could have seen them.
- 32 A If I had been looking, and saw someone going, I could have
- 33 seen them.
- 34
- 35
- 36 Q Did you see these people running up and down this road over
- 37 here by this mess hall going down toward the Italian Area?
- 38 A I couldn't see that because this barracks was shedding it from us.
- 39 We was between two barracks.
- 40
- 41 How long did you stand there?
- 42 A We stayed there quite a while.
- 43
- 44 Q 15 or 20 minutes?
- 45 A Yes, sir; somewhere around there. We went back right behind the

CONFIDENTIAL

(LILLARD)

1411

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

114

CONFIDENTIAL

1 latrine and stood up there and looked at the ambulance hauling them away.

2
3 Q Did you see the MP's arrive?

4 A I heard the MP's and things down there. I guess there was an
5 MP hollering "get back." It was dark down there. We couldn't see no
6 more than when a jeep or ambulance run up and we could see that.

7
8 Q When the lights shined on the area, you could see a bunch
9 of people?

10 A Yes, we did see them loading those Italians up.

11
12 Q After the fight was over, did you see some of your boys come
13 back to the barracks there who had been away?

14 A I don't know about that, sir.

15
16 Q Do you know Herman Johnson?

17 A Yes, sir.

18
19 Q Was he down there?

20 A I don't know. He didn't stay in the barracks I stayed in.

21
22 Q You didn't see him around that area while you were there?

23 A No, sir.

24
25 Q Who else from your outfit was down there?

26 A I couldn't tell you that, sir.

27
28 Q Well, you heard them talking since that time haven't you?

29 A This boy Slick said he was down there.

30
31 Q What did Slick say?

32 A He said he drove a jeep and he hit one of the Italians.

33
34 Q Who else have you heard talking about it?

35 A I think this boy Montgomery.

36
37 Q What did he say?

38 A He didn't say he was down there.

39
40 Q Did he say he hit a man?

41 A A I don't know that he said that. He said he was there.

42
43 Q Who else?

44 A That's all. If anybody did anything they ain't going around
45 telling it.

CONFIDENTIAL

(LILLARD)

1412

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

115

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Who did you hear say was in on the hanging?
2 A I haven't heard anything about that.
3
4 Q Have you heard anyone discussing it at all?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q When you were told by your company officers that there was one
8 of the Italians hanged, what was said by the Company?
9 A There wasn't anything said. They just said a man was hanged
10 down there.
11
12 Q Well, there must have been some discussion when they said a man
13 was hanged?
14 A It was a surprise to the Company to know that someone was hanged.
15
16 Q The boys don't talk much about the hanging. They discuss the
17 fight but not the hanging?
18 A That's right, sir.
19
20 Q When you went back to your barracks, did you go to bed?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q Was there any discussion in the barracks when you got back inside?
24 A No, there was gambling going on. In fact, I went right on and
25 went to sleep. I didn't know they turned the lights out even.
26
27 Q Did many of them come in there while you were getting ready
28 to go to bed?
29 A No, sir, quite a bunch was in there.
30
31 Q Did the MP's come in?
32 A I don't know because I went to sleep. They didn't come in.
33
34 Q Did you ever see this mess hall while you were over in the
35 barracks?
36 A I think there was a light on in the mess hall.
37
38 Q Were there a bunch of people gathered around the mess hall?
39 A I couldn't see. I know there was a little in the mess hall.
40 You could see through the windows. I couldn't tell you that. It was dark.
41
42 Q Were there any whistles blown in the area?
43 A Not as I know, sir.
44
45 Q Did you hear any whistles that night?
A I didn't hear any, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(LILLARD) (END)

1413

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

116

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of T/5 Harvey Banks, taken at
2 Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number , organization
8 and station.

9 A Harvey Banks, T/5, 36897134, 650th Port Company, Fort Lawton,
10 Washington.
11

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
13 24th Article of War?

14 A Yes, sir.
15

16 Q On the night of 14 August 1944, were you in Fort Lawton when
17 the colored soldiers attacked the Italians?

18 A Yes, sir; I was in camp.
19

20 Q What barracks were you in?

21 A 719.
22

23 Q What were you doing when you first heard about the fight?

24 A I was in bed.
25

26 Q Were you asleep?

27 A No, sir; I wasn't asleep.
28

29 Q Just lying in bed?

30 A Yes, sir.
31

32 Q What was the first thing that called your attention to the
33 noise outside the building?

34 A It was the whistle.
35

36 Q Who blew the whistle?

37 A I don't know, sir.
38

39 Q Hadn't someone come in and asked for the whistle?

40 A It was outside when I first heard it.
41

42 Q Just before the whistle was blown, didn't someone come into
43 the barracks inquiring for a whistle?

44 A No, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(BANKS)

1414

DECLASSIFIEDAuthority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

117

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Didn't someone come in and tell you there was a fight outside?
2 A Someone come in and hollered to come out.
3
4 Q Who was that?
5 A I don't know.
6
7 Q Was it Addison George?
8 A No, sir; I couldn't recall the boys.
9
10 Q Do you know whether it was Luther Larkin?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Did you see Luther Larkin and Addison George that night in
14 the barracks?
15 A No; sir.
16
17 Q After the whistle blew outside, which called your attention to
18 the fight, what did you do?
19 A Well, after the whistle blew I looked out through the window.
20 My bunk was in the window where we make a formation.
21
22 Q What did you see going on?
23 A I didn't see anything.
24
25 Q Didn't you see the man that was blowing the whistle?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q Wasn't there a bunch of people gathered around the mess hall?
29 A No, sir.
30
31 Q Didn't you look out that way?
32 A I didn't get out of bed.
33
34 Q You looked out of the window?
35 A My bunk is right at the window.
36
37 Q Well, you could look and see what was going on?
38 A The mess hall is down that way.
39
40 Q Did you then get up?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q What did you do?
44 A I just stayed in bed.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(BANKS)

1415

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

118

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q While you were in bed there, was there a bunch of boys running
2 up and down the stairway coming in and out of the building?
- 3 A Yes, sir, I could hear them.
4
- 5 Q What were they doing?
6 A They were going outside.
7
- 8 Q What were they saying?
9 A I heard them saying that all you yellow rats that stay in
10 bed is yellow. ←
- 11
12 Q And this went on outside the building?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
- 15 Q How long was it after the whistle blew that you heard the
16 fighting in the Italian area?
17 A I didn't hear the fight.
18
- 19 Q Didn't you hear the rocks and hollering?
20 A No, sir, I could hear voices, but I couldn't hear any sounds.
21
- 22 Q How long did that noise in the Italian area last before it
23 was over?
24 A Well, I couldn't recall that, sir.
25
- 26 Q Afte r the fight was over, undoubtedly the boys began to come
27 back to the barracks?
28 A Well, I don't remember them coming back in. When I woke up
29 they was in.
30
- 31 Q What was happening when you woke up the next time?
32 A There was an MP standing up there. I would say about four
33 paces from the door, just inside as there was a little drinking fountain
34 there and he was talking to them.
35
- 36 Q What was he saying?
37 A I couldn't get all he said. The only thing I got is "that they
38 made a pretty good job of it."
39
- 40 Q He told the boys that they had done a pretty good job on
41 the Italians?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
- 44 Q Did he say it saved the white MP's from doing it?
45 A Well, I couldn't recall. All of them was trying to talk.

CONFIDENTIAL

(BANKS)

1416

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

119

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you see this MP that did the talking?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Were the lights out in the barracks?
5 A Yes, sir. There was one burning about the 2d light from the
6 door.
7
8 Q This man who was doing the talking to the boys, what kind of
9 a fellow was he?
10 A I couldn't see him.
11
12 Q You could hear his voice?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q What kind of a voice was it -- a rather strong voice?
16 A I couldn't recognize it because it was mixed in with the
17 other voices.
18
19 Q A bunch of the other boys were talking to him?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q Who was talking to him?
23 A I couldn't say, sir.
24
25 Q Well, you know some of them?
26 A I didn't hear -- I don't know.
27
28 Q You heard the voices.
29 A It was so mingled up I couldn't call the one man.
30
31 Q Did you have any discussion with any of the boys that night after
32 the fight was over?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q Didn't you hear them discussing it with the others?
36 A The only thing I heard was you were all just yellow.
37
38 Q Who was that?
39 A That was Alston.
40
41 Q And Alston then told you that you guys that didn't go down
42 there were just yellow?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q Did he say anything further about it?

CONFIDENTIAL
1417

(BANKS)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

120

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.

2
3 Q Was there any argument between him and someone else about not
4 going down there?

5 A No, sir.

6
7 Q We have testimony that two of the boys in barracks 719 got
8 in an argument, one of them called the others yellow for not going
9 down there and one who didn't go thought it was unfair to be called yellow
10 so he entered into an argument with the man who called him yellow. So,
11 I ask you that question to see if you know who the other man was that
12 argued with Alston?

13 A No, sir; it wasn't downstairs.

14
15 Q What other conversation did you hear and who made it,
16 concerning the fight that night?

17 A Well, I never heard no more conversation because after that
18 I heard some of them say there was a major or a lieutenant was in the
19 building and he ordered them all to get to bed.

20
21 Q And they went to bed?

22 A Yes, sir.

23
24 Q The next day you were all moved over to the guardhouse weren't you?

25 A Yes, sir.

26
27 Q And before you went to the guardhouse and around the Company
28 whom did you hear discussing the fight?

29 A We didn't have much time.

30
31 Q After you got in the guardhouse whom did you hear discussing
32 the fight?

33 A Well, we didn't hear no one over there making no discussion.
34 The ones over there had the same complaint that I had.

35
36 Q What was that?

37 A Wanted to know why was we in here when we weren't in on the fight.

38
39 Q Well, all the people that are in the guardhouse aren't in
40 on the fight.

41 A Well, as far as I know they are. The ones that were
42 in the bed the same as I was.

43
44 Q Who was that?

45 A Briscoe, Robert Frazier, Rice, George Jackson, Willie Collins,

CONFIDENTIAL

(BANKS)

1418

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

121

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Walter Ruffen and Moses Patterson. I know those were because they
2 slept in the back and I was getting my haircut around nine o'clock.

3
4 Q Well, you didn't see them during the fight did you?
5 A No, but they was in bed while I was getting my haircut.

6
7 Q Well, they could have gotten out of bed when the fight started,
8 as many of them did, couldn't they?
9 A I don't know about that.

10
11 Q You can't testify that all those people you named were in
12 bed?

13 A Well, I can testify that all those were in bed when I was
14 getting my haircut. All the boys was over to the Px and the Rec Hall.
15 They was dancing.

16
17
18 Q But your hair was being cut around nine o'clock and you went
19 to sleep then and you couldn't testify those people that you have named
20 were in the barracks around 11:15, could you?

21 A No, sir; I wouldn't swear by that.

22
23 Q Who cut your hair?

24 A Willie C. Collins.

25
26 Q Is he a barber?

27 A He's a barber, not by license, but by being in the Company.

28
29 Q You stated that while you were in the guardhouse you heard
30 little talk about it?

31 A Yes, sir.

32
33 Q Do you know Willie Curry?

34 A Yes.

35
36 Q Roy Montgomery?

37 A Yes, sir.

38
39 Q Have you heard Roy talking about the fight?

40 A No, sir.

41
42 Q Have you heard Willie Basden talking about the fight?

43 A No, sir.

44
45 Q Have you heard Wallace Wooden talking about it?

CONFIDENTIAL

(BANKS)

1419

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

122

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A I haven't been around Wallace Wooden.
2
3 Q You know Wallace don't you?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q You know him when yousee him?
7 A Yes, sir.
8
9 Q Well, Wallace has said he was in the fight hasn't he?
10 A I haven't heard him saying it.
11
12 Q You didn't get up, then, when the fight started and go outside
13 and see what was going on?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q Did youhear them breaking down that board fence?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q Did you hear the whistle blowing over there and any discussion
20 as to what they would do?
21 A No, sir, as the whistle was blowing they just was yelling and
22 hollering and talking -- just trying to raise their voices over each other.
23
24 Q Did Luther Larkin blow the whistle?
25 A No, I don't know, sir.'
26
27 Q Do youknow Sgt. Hurks?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q Did you talk to Sgt. Hurks about the fight?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q Did you hear him discuss it with anyone?
34 A No, sir.
35
36 Q Did you see him that night?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q Did you hear Sgt. Hurks out in front of building 719 when he
40 was edging the boys on?
41 A No, sir.
42
43 Q Is there anything else, whether I have asked you or not, that
44 you want to tell me about this case?
45 A I don't know anything, sir. Now, the next morning, after the

CONFIDENTIAL

(BANKS)

1420

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

123

CONFIDENTIAL

1 formation, when Lieutenant Kapitiz was telling them about how they had
2 mess up their record, about how good a record that we had made and how
3 they messed it up in just a few minutes, there was a few making the
4 discussions. That was Sgt. Greshum and Nelson Alston and Luther Larkin
5 and Frank Hughes. Those are the ones that I heard discuss it.
6

7 Q What were those four saying about it?

8 A They was in it. I didn't hesitate. I was rushing.
9

10 Q They were saying that they were all in it?

11 A Yes, sir.
12

13 Q Did they say what they had done?

14 A No, sir.
15

16 Q Did Greshum tell the boys there that they were all yellow for
17 not going down there?

18 A No, sir.
19

20 Q That was Alston that said that?

21 A Yes, sir.
22

23 Q And that was the time that Alston made that remark?

24 A Yes, sir. That night after they came back.
25

26 Q But out there, Greshum, Hughes, Larkin and Alston, all those
27 four, were talking and they all said they were down there?

28 A Yes, sir.
29

30 Q But they didn't say what they done?

31 A That's right.
32

33 Q Is there anything else that you want to tell me?

34 A No, sir; that's all I know.
35

36 Q In what way did they say they were down there?

37 A The way the statement came about, Lieutenant Kapitiz was telling
38 them how yellow and how cowardly they was to go down there in such a
39 large number to overpower a few men and he said he knew practically everyone
40 that was down there and after they broke formation they was pretty much
41 all together and he said, "You was down there, you was one of those yellow
42 rats." That's the only part I could hear.
43

44 Q These four that you named, then, were telling each other that
45 they were one of those yellow rats because they were down there?

CONFIDENTIAL

(BANKS)

1421

DECLASSIFIED
Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

124

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

A Yes, because they were in such large numbers to overpower those Italians. They said that was a job for the MP's and Officer of the Day to straighten out such things and not for them.

Q That's all.

CONFIDENTIAL

(BANKS) (END)

1422

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

126

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A I had those ropes.
2
3 Q You tied the door with that rope?
4 A I tied that and tucked the clothes rack in there.
5
6 Q Now, after you wired the door and tied it closed with your
7 tent rope, what did you do?
8 A I let the shade down.
9
10 Q Why did you let the shade down?
11 A I was just nervous.
12
13 Q Well, after you left the shade down, what did you do?
14 A I got back in bed.
15
16 Q Did you go to sleep?
17 A I was asleep, sure.
18
19 Q Well, you heard a lot of noise still going on outside?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q You could hear the Italians screaming down there, couldn't you?
23 A I didn't know.
24
25 Q Did you look out of the window?
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q Did you see some of the boys running up and down the stairs?
29 A I was up there sleeping.
30
31 Q Well, you heard this man come in and holler "everybody out"
32 didn't you?
33 A I might have been asleep when he hollered that.
34
35 Q You heard it though?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q Everybody else in the barracks heard it?
39 A I didn't hear it.
40
41 Q You mean you didn't hear that?
42 A I heard somebody hollering and they said somebody was hurt. I
43 didn't understand who they said he was. They gave him artificial
44 perspiration and tried to revive him.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(BRISCOE)

1424

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

127

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did you see who went down to give him "artificial perspiration"?
2 A No, sir; I was in bed.
3
4 Q You heard a whistle blow didn't you?
5 A I heard a whistle blow.
6
7 Q It was on the outside of the building?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q Just before the whistle blew, you heard somebody come in
11 and ask for a whistle didn't you?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Didn't you see Luther Larkin come in and ask for a whistle?
15 A No, sir.
16
17 Q Didn't you see Larkin or George come in and tell everybody
18 to go out there was a fight going on?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q Now, when the whistle blew outside, a lot of people went out
22 didn't they?
23 A A bunch of boys could have been already out.
24
25 Q But you saw some more going, too, didn't you?
26 A No, sir; I didn't.
27
28 Q After the whistle blew, the noise increased, didn't it?
29 A Well, I don't remember. I couldn't swear to that.
30
31 Q Well, you know whether the noise got louder or whether it didn't.
32 A Well, I made -- so much noise through the back I didn't hear
33 too much.
34
35 Q But the noise in the barracks wasn't one-tenth as loud as
36 the noise outside was.
37 A I don't know.
38
39 Q Did you ever look out?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q You didn't look out at all?
43 A No, sir; I didn't want to look out.
44
45 Q After you heard the noise on the outside, didn't it sound like

CONFIDENTIAL

(BRISCOE)

1425

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

128

CONFIDENTIAL

1 it was going on around the Italian area?
2 A I don't know.
3
4 Q You heard a lot of noise down near the Italian area.
5 A I heard noise, but I don't know where it was.
6
7 Q After the noise ceased, didn't some of the boys start coming
8 back in the barracks?
9 A Well, the First Sergeant come in after it got quiet. He
10 must have stopped them. The MP's or something, I guess.
11
12 Q And everybody went to bed?
13 A I guess so. I guess they did. I didn't pay much attention.
14 I covered my head.
15
16 Q Covered your head?
17 A When they cut the lights off.
18
19 Q Why did you cover your head?
20 A I was nervous and couldn't stand nothing like that. I ain't
21 used to nothing like that. I know what it is when a man fools with
22 white folks.
23
24 Q Where did you see it?
25 A Home.
26
27 Q Where?
28 A Cameron, Texas.
29
30 Q What happened down there?
31 A I saw a man get in a fight and about 400 of them drug him.
32
33 Q Drug the colored man?
34 A Yes, sir.
35
36 Q Kill him?
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q Did he hurt the white man?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q Now, after this fighting was over, wasn't there a bunch of
43 boys that came back to the barracks to go to bed?
44 A I slept in the back and didn't pay any attention to them.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(BRISCOE)

1426

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

129

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You didn't see a single man that came in that barracks?
2 A I didn't pay no attentio^N to them.
3
4 Q You heard them come in?
5 A I heard the boys, but the sergeant was up in there hollering.
6
7 Q You could hear them discussing it, too?
8 A I didn't hear them.
9
10 Q After the fight was over you didn't hear anyone discuss it
11 that night?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q The next morning when you were lined up in a formation over
15 there, reveille, Lieutenant Kapitz told you there had been a fight,
16 didn't he?
17 A Lieutenant Kapitz told us we were going over to the stockade.
18
19 Q Now, when he was telling you about the fight, he told you
20 you kind of messed yourselves up, didn't he?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q He said you had a good record up until that time, but now
24 you were in bad?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q And there was a bunch of boys that stood around talking about
28 the part they played in the fight?
29 A I didn't hear it.
30
31 Q Didn't you hear Luther Larkin?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q And Hughes and all those people discussing what parts they
35 played in the fight?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q Who all have you heard discussing the fight since that time?
39 A Nobody.
40
41 Q Is there anything else that you want to tell me about the
42 fight?
43 A I don't know anything else. If I knew it I would really tell
44 you.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

1427

(BRISCOE) (END)

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

130

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Testimony of Pvt. Robert Frazier, taken
at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witness was sworn.

Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
and station.

A Robert Frazier, Pvt., 37631129, 650th Port Company, Fort
Lawton, Washington.

Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
24th Article of War?

A Yes, sir.

Q Were you present on the night of 14 August 1944 when the
colored soldiers attacked the Italians?

A Yes, sir.

Q In what barracks were you?

A 719.

Q Were you present in the barracks when the fight started?

A Yes, sir.

Q What were you doing?

A I was in bed.

Q Had you been asleep?

A No, sir.

Q What was the first thing that called your attention to the
fight?

A Well, they brought this boy Snow in.

Q What did they do with him?

A They laid him on a cot and so many ganged around him and they
said we can't keep him here and they carried him right back out.

Q Did you see Snow yourself?

A Well, I was at least 40 Or 45 feet from him.

Q You were in the barracks though?

A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(FRAZIER)

1428

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

131

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Who was helping Snow?
 2 A There was so many ganged around.
 3
 4 Q Didn't you recognize any of them?
 5 A No, sir; I didn't. They brought him in and everybody ganged
 6 around him.
 7
 8 Q What did they say when they brought him in?
 9 A Somebody said one of the boys got knocked out.
 10
 11 Q Did they say who knocked him out?
 12 A Well, no, they didn't. The way I understood no one knew.
 13
 14 Q Did they say they were going down there and clean those
 15 Italians up?
 16 A Well, shortly after they cleared him out the whistle blew.
 17
 18 Q Did they go out?
 19 A I never did see nobody go out, but they was already ganged
 20 around.
 21
 22 Q And they left?
 23 A I don't know about that.
 24
 25 Q Was Snow then put in an ambulance and taken away?
 26 A Some of them said they put him in an ambulance, but I never
 27 did get up.
 28
 29 Q Who were those you saw leave the barracks at the time he
 30 was taken out?
 31 A I didn't pay any attention because I had to look at some of
 32 the other guys that was sitting there.
 33
 34 Q Who was one of them?
 35 A I couldn't tell you to save my life.
 36
 37 Q After they took Snow outside of the building, what happened
 38 inside the building?
 39 A Well, there were several of us in there.
 40
 41 Q Who was in the building at the time Snow had been taken out?
 42 A Well, there were several boys that had been in the Company
 43 that I didn't know.
 44
 45 Q Well, of those you knew?

CONFIDENTIAL

(FRAZIER)

1429

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

132

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Some of the boys in the Company that was gone and some of them
2 that are in the stockade.
- 3
- 4 Q Name some of them.
- 5 A Well, George Jackson, Elmer Briscoe, Edward Sanders, Harvey
6 Banks and seven or eight more that have gone with the Company.
- 7
- 8 Q None of them ever got up?
- 9 A No, sir.
- 10
- 11 Q You didn't see Willie Basden up there at the time?
- 12 A Well, he didn't stay in at my barracks. He stayed in the
13 barracks -- I believe he was in the 2d platoon.
- 14
- 15 Q What ones in your barracks were missing that you know the
16 night Snow had been carried out?
- 17 A Well, sir, I couldn't say because the biggest bunch -- I was in
18 the further end of the barracks.
- 19
- 20 Q Well, you named four or five that were there, now name four
21 or five that were missing?
- 22 A I didn't pay any attention.
- 23
- 24 Q Was Frank Hughes over there with you?
- 25 A I don't know. He might have stayed upstairs.
- 26
- 27 Q Does Greshum stay up there with you?
- 28 A He was my platoon sergeant.
- 29
- 30 Q Where did he stay?
- 31 A He was upstairs.
- 32
- 33 Q You didn't see him up there, did you?
- 34 A I didn't go upstairs.
- 35
- 36 Q Now, after the fighting was over, you saw some of the boys
37 coming back in the barracks just before the lights were turned out?
- 38 A Well, I dozed off to sleep, I was sick that night and I had been
39 on KP and I got a bath and got right into bed.
- 40
- 41 Q But you were awake when SNOW was carried out weren't you?
- 42 A Yes, sir; I was awake.
- 43
- 44 Q And you were awake after he was carried out?
- 45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(FRAZIER)

1430

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

133

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And it wasn't long after Snow was carried out that the boys
2 began to come back in.

3 A Well, it was a good while as far as I remember.

4

5 Q How long would you say?

6 A Well, I don't remember because when I dozed off and went
7 to sleep the MP was in there telling them to turn the lights out.

8

9 Q Before the MP's came in to turn the lights out, who came back
10 to the barracks?

11 A I don't remember.

12

13 Q Name four or five of them.

14 A I don't think I can recall any.

15

16 Q Surely you can recall four or five just before the MP's
17 arrived?

18 A No, sir, I couldn't.

19

20 Q Who did you hear discussing the fight before the MP's arrived?

21 A That's what I say, and when I waked up the MP was telling the
22 boys to put the lights out.

23

24 Q Before you went to sleep, didn't you hear anyone discussing
25 the fight in the barracks?

26 A No, sir.

27

28 Q After the MP's arrived and told you to put the lights out,
29 did they put the lights out and tell you to go to bed?

30 A Yes, sir.

31

32 Q Is that all you remember?

33 A I was very sick that night and I waked up maybe four or five times
34 during the night.

35

36 Q During the night, did you hear any of the boys talking?

37 A No, sir; I didn't.

38

39 Q The next morning, then, Lieutenant Kapitz assembled you all
40 over in the vicinity of the stockade and told you that you boys certainly
41 got yourselves in a mess.

42 A Well, something like that.

43

44 Q And didn't he say that all the people that went down there
45 were yellow, or something like that?

CONFIDENTIAL

(FRAZIER)

1431

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

134

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Yes, sir.,
2
3 Q While you were up there in the building, did you hear the
4 MP's talking to some of the men in the barracks?
5 A He waked me up telling the boys to put the lights out, and
6 he had his foot sitting on the bed. Some of the boys got up and ready
7 to turn the lights out and he went.
8
9 Q Didn't he say that you boys did a fine job down there?
10 A I didn't hear him say that.
11
12 Q Let's get back to the time Lieutenant Kapitz was talking to
13 you. When the formation broke up, wasn't there some conversation between
14 Hughes and Alston and that group about who had been down there?
15 A No, sir; I didn't hear them.
16
17 Q Didn't you hear anybody discussing the fact that they were
18 down there during the fight after Lieutenant Kapitz had gotten through
19 talking to them?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q Since that time, name the five or six people that you heard
23 talking concerning the fight and the part they played in it?
24 A Well, the boys are coming down here and saying, "Well, they are
25 trying to get me; I wasn't in it and I was in bed asleep", and all
26 like that.
27
28 Q Well, you heard someone say they admitted they were down here
29 talking about it, because undoubtedly we have at least 20 people who have
30 come down here and told us the whole story. Didn't you hear Curry tell
31 you what he said down there about driving the jeep in the tent?
32 A I don't know him.
33
34 Q Didn't you hear Willie Mathis telling about chopping the door
35 down?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q Didn't you hear Wallace Wooden talk about what he did in the
39 fight?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q Did you hear Herman Johnson talking about what he did down
43 there in building 780 when he hit those Italians over the head?
44 A No, sir. I don't know him.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(FRAZIER)

1432

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

135

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Haven't you heard him talking about it?
2 A Oh, he's the big tall fellow -- No, sir, I haven't.
3
4 Q Have you heard anyone else talking about it?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Did you ever hear anyone mention anything about the hanging
8 and who did that?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q Do you know who did it?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Do you have any idea?
15 A The FB I man said that four colored boys did it.
16
17 Q Did he say who they were?
18 A No, sir, he didn't call no names
19
20 Q Did he say who it was?
21 A I don't know if he said who it was, but he said four of them.
22
23 Q Is there anything else, whether I mentioned it or not, that
24 you want to tell me about it?
25 A Well, I am afraid I couldn't help you on anything. I was
26 really sick. Me and this fellow Briscoe slept together. He was afraid
27 and he fastened the door.
28
29 Q What did he fasten the door with?
30 A A piece of wire.
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(FRAZIER) (END)

1433

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

136

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Testimony of Pvt. Ernest Martin, taken
at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witness was sworn.

Q State your fullname, grade, serial number, organization and
station.

A Ernest Martin, Pvt., 38559902, 650th Port Company, Fort
Lawton, Washington.

Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
24th Article of War?

A Yes, sir.

Q On the night of 14 August 1944, when the colored soldiers
attacked the Italians, where were you?

A In bed sleeping.

Q In what barracks?

A 719.

Q Were you asleep when the fight started?

A Yes, sir.

Q What awakened you?

A Freddie, next to me, shook me. I didn't know whether the
fight was over or anything. He said, "Martin, our boys had a fight
with the Italians." I never did get up out of bed.

Q Did Freddie ever discuss with you what part he played in it?

A No, sir.

Q You knew he had been down there?

A No, sir.

Q Did he sleep right next to you?

A Yes, sir.

Q Did you wake up at any time while the fight was going on
and see whether Freddie was in bed?

A No, sir.

Q Did you discuss with Freddie, later, what part he played in
the fight?

CONFIDENTIAL

(MARTIN)

1434

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

137

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.

2
3 Q Weren't you awakened by all this noise on the outside of the
4 building?

5 A No, sir.

6
7 Q Have you discussed or heard discussed the part that anyone
8 has played in the fight?

9 A No, sir, I haven't heard anything.

10
11 Q You mean to tell me that all the time since this fight happened
12 you haven't heard anything?

13 A I want to be frank with you. I remember hearing more about
14 that when Lieutenant Kapitz took us up in the other area. I didn't think
15 much about it. He took us up to the other area and he had some of us
16 go upstairs and some downstairs. He said, "Well, some of you boys that
17 was supposed to go out of here was a damn good outfit but now it is the
18 worst outfit." He said, "You boys has went down there last night and hung
19 an Italian." He said, "I am not speaking of those that weren't in on
20 the fight." He said, "You all know who I mean." That's all I knew about it.
21 When the Italians came down to Camp Jordan to pick us out, I felt good.
22 I knew I didn't know nothing about it. Pfc. Montgomery sleeps up above
23 me and I slept down the bottom. When we went thru this area, I felt glad
24 about that because I knew I hadn't did anything and when they picked me
25 out I still hadn't found out why I was picked out in that bunch.

26
27 Q One of the Italians picked you out?

28 A That's what I believe. I didn't know who did.

29
30 Q What did he say?

31 A He hasn't said. Somebody picked me out of that bunch. I don't
32 know how I happened to be in that bunch because on the 14th was my birthday.
33 I was 30 years old on the 14 th of August. At 6:30 I was restricted. I
34 stayed in town with my mother and dad. I called my mother and told her
35 I would be restricted and she said all right. We were stenciling our
36 clothes. I put my stuff away and they told us to get our stuff away because
37 we would get an early start the next morning. I didn't know what all
38 happened. I didn't pay much attention to it. I still hadn't took it
39 serious until we got in the compound and he said, "I suppose you have
40 heard over the radio what happened." I said it must be serious for it to
41 be over the radio, but I still didn't pay much attention to it.

42
43 Q After you were put in the compound, you heard a bunch of boys
44 talking about it; didn't it?

45 A No, sir; they didn't say anything.

CONFIDENTIAL

(MARTIN)

1435

DECLASSIFIED
Authority 735033
By SJP/NARA Date 06/12/02

138

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Q Even up until now you haven't heard anything?
A Absolutely nothing, sir.

Q Is there anything else you want to tell me?
A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(MARTIN) (END)

1436

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

140

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Yes, sir.

2
3 Q What were they doing?

4 A Just talking. I asked them what happened and they said an
5 Italian knocked him out.

6
7 Q What did you do?

8 A We was talking with the guys that just moved in and this
9 First Sergeant come from somewhere and he come running down and he said
10 to all the boys "don't go down there because there would be some trouble."
11 By that time our First Sergeant run up and he said no more of his boys
12 go down. I remember before the show they come back and made an announcement.
13 They said to make our pack for the next morning because we was leaving.
14 I had it packed the way they wanted it. About that time I think this
15 OD or lieutenant who used to be in our Company, Lieutenant Sestrom, and
16 another officer came up and talked to Luther Larkin and told all of us
17 to put the lights out and go to bed.

18
19 Q What was Luther doing that they talked to him?

20 A He was upstairs when the officer came up.

21
22 Q He just got back from the fight?

23 A I don't know where he came from.

24
25 Q He had been outside?

26 A Yes, sir, he was outside.

27
28 Q What did he say about the fight?

29 A He came up and by the time he got up, he stayed in one of those
30 private rooms and Lieutenant Sestrom and another, I don't know the other
31 officer, but I think it was Lieutenant Sestrom which used to be in our
32 Company.

33
34 Q Well, when you got back from the show, why, the fight was
35 just starting, wasn't it?

36 A I asked one of the boys that was knocked out.

37
38 Q While you were out there, there was a whistle being blown.

39 A I remember Luther Larkin asking for a whistle.

40
41 Q He ran in and asked for a whistle?

42 A Yes, sir.

43
44 Q Did you see him come back with the whistle?

45 A He came and asked for the whistle.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM)

1438

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

1411

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q Who hollered "everybody out, there is a fight going on"?
2 A I don't remember him hollering.
3
4 Q Then you heard a whistle blown later on?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q And it was blown up around that mess hall?
8 A I don't know where it was blown but I heard one blown.
9
10 Q Weren't you outside when one was blown?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Where were you?
14 A I was in the barracks.
15
16 Q And it was a short time after Luther had asked for the whistle
17 that you heard one blown?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q Now, while you were outside and while Montgomery was lying
21 out there on the ground, you heard some conversation among the boys about
22 how he got hurt, didn't you?
23 A They said the Italian hit him.
24
25 Q Who said that?
26 A I don't know; it was dark out there, sir, and just a bunch of
27 boys standing out there and they was talking out of the group and they
28 said the Italian himmm.
29
30 Q About that time didn't you notice the soldiers tearing down
31 the fence in front of building 700?
32 A When I was upstairs and come down, the First Sergeant was out
33 there talking and the fence was down.
34
35 Q They had already torn it down?
36 A Yes, the fence was moved.
37
38 Q Did you see them tear it down?
39 A I heard them, but I didn't see them.
40
41 Q Then you saw a bunch of them running down toward the Italian
42 area?
43 A When I saw them, I saw them bringing Snow.
44
45 Q Where were you when they brought him back?

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM)

1411

DECLASSIFIED

Authority 735033
By SJP NARA Date 06/12/02

142

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 A Standing there.
- 2
- 3 Q What did they do with him?
- 4 A Brought him back and laid him on a cot. The beds run this way
5 and they laid him in the aisle on the cot.
- 6
- 7 Q How long did they leave him there?
- 8 A I couldn't tell you exactly how long.
- 9
- 10 Q They didn't leave him there all the time?
- 11 A No, when the ambulance came and got him.
- 12
- 13 Q Did they take him out of the barracks or was he outside when
14 they came and got him?
- 15 A I think he was still in the bed, I am not sure.
- 16
- 17 Q Who brought Snow back out?
- 18 A A guy they called by the name -- Robert Sanders.
- 19
- 20 Q He brought Snow back?
- 21 A Yes, I saw Robert Sanders carry him out.
- 22
- 23 Q Who else was with him?
- 24 A When I saw him they was coming across the street with him.
- 25
- 26 Q Where had Snow been hit?
- 27 A I don't know, sir, I saw some blood runing over him and they
28 laid him down and wiped the blood off. They wouldn't let a lot of people
29 around him.
- 30
- 31 Q Were the boys pretty mad about Snow getting hit?
- 32 A I couldn't tell you, sir.
- 33
- 34 Q Did you hear them talking about it?
- 35 A They wasn't talking, they just said that the guy got knocked out.
- 36
- 37 Q Did they bring Clark up about that time, too?
- 38 A I don't know, sir, about Clark. I heard them talking and Clark
39 said, "I got hit on the top of the head."
- 40
- 41 Q He wasn't knocked out though?
- 42 A When I saw him he wasn't knocked out. When the First Sergeant
43 was talking to the boys he was talking to them.
- 44
- 45 Q Did he have a pretty good knot on his head?

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM)

1440

143

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A It was just a split.
2
3 Q Was it bloody?
4 A They had washed it off. It was just cut a little.
5
6 Q Who else was around when Clark came up?
7 A I don't know whether somebody brought him out or he walked up.
8
9 Q Did you see any of the boys walking back up with Clark?
10 A When I saw him the First Sergeant was talking and he put his
11 head down and it showed where he got hit.
12
13 Q He showed the MP's where he got hit?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Were the MP's talking to the boys there?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q But the MP's were sitting there in the car?
20 A Well, the MP's came in a car and I think they left and got
21 in another car. I recognized two cars, a car and an ambulance.
22
23 Q Each one brought MP's in it?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q Did you see an MP who was stationed right behind mess hall 700?
27 A No, sir, I didn't see no MP. What do you mean?
28
29 Q Right behind building 700 -- that mess hall. Did you see an MP there?
30 A No, sir; I sure didn't, sir.
31
32 Q While you were out there, did you see an Italian run up by the
33 side of the mess hall, by an MP, and a colored soldier run down Virginia
34 Avenue and back into the Italian area?
35 A No, sir; I didn't.
36
37 Q You heard about it though?
38 A No, I never heard about it before.
39
40 Q While you were outside, all that you saw was Montgomery lying
41 on the walk?
42 A And they brought Snow.
43
44 Q In the meantime, you had seen this group gathered around 700
45 and heard the fence torn down and saw those people moving down toward

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM)

144

CONFIDENTIAL

1 the Italian area and then you saw Snow being carried back up by Robert
2 Sanders?

3 A Yes, sir.

4
5 Q What did Robert do when he turned Snow loose?

6 A He just stayed in there, I think. He's the one that cleaned
7 his face up.

8
9 Q Didn't he go back down to the area?

10 A I don't know, sir. While a car came up I don't know whether
11 he went back or not.

12
13 Q What did Robert Sanders say?

14 A He just said -- He laid him on the cot and that's all I seen
15 him do.

16
17 Q Was Snow doing any talking?

18 A No, I never heard him say nothing while I was in there.

19
20 Q Now, after you stayed outside and observed all that you have
21 told us, what did you do?

22 A Well, our First Sergeant came up and said for no more of the
23 boys to go down there. Well, I went and finished -- we had been stamping
24 our clothes, so after we stamped the clothes they told us to roll our
25 packs. Well, I had rolled my pack and the First Sergeant came down and
26 said, "Go finish your pack." I went to fix my pack. That's when I
27 heard Lieutenant Sestrom talking to the boys.

28
29 Q While you were outside, will you name the 12 or 15 men that you
30 saw go down toward the Italian area?

31 A I couldn't name any of the men that was going down there because
32 it was a group. It was pretty dark and I was just coming out from the show.

33
34 Q You must have seen some of them?

35 A The only guy I saw out there, and I didn't see him go to the
36 area, was Luther Larkin. He was holding this boy that got out.

37
38 Q Luther Larkin?

39 A Yes, sir.

40
41 Q When you first saw him on the night of the 14th he was holding
42 Montgomery's hands to see if his pulse was still good?

43 A Yes, before I went to the show I saw him upstairs.

44
45 Q But after you came back from the show you saw Luther testing

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM)

145

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Montgomery's pulse?

2 A Yes, sir.

3
4 Q When did you next see him, when he was running down in the
5 area?

6 A I didn't see him in the area.

7
8 Q You saw him looking for the whistle?

9 A Yes, I saw him looking for the whistle.

10
11 Q Did you see him any more that night?

12 A I saw him when the officer talked to him upstairs.

13
14 Q What was the officer saying to Larkin?

15 A He was asking how did this Montgomery get hit.

16
17 Q Did you hear the boys up in the barracks, after the fighting
18 was over, discussing this thing?

19 A No, sir; I never heard none of it discussed.

20
21 Q Didn't you hear them talking about it?

22 A I heard one of them say that one guy -- everybody that didn't
23 go down in the area was a coward.

24
25 Q Wasn't that Alston?

26 A I don't know who, sir, who it was. Alston stayed downstairs
27 and I stayed upstairs.

28
29 Q Wasn't Alston the one that said that everybody that didn't go
30 down there was yellow?

31 A Sir, I couldn't tell you who it was. I don't want to tell no
32 story on nobody which I wouldn't them to tell on me.

33
34 Q After you heard that remark you heard some other talk about
35 it, didn't you?

36 A I rolled my pack and went to bed. They cut the lights out.

37
38 Q But while you were rolling your pack wasn't there a bunch of
39 conversation?

40 A No, they were all outdoors.

41
42 Q Who all was out doors?

43 A The first sergeant was out there and talking to them.

44
45 Q What was he talking about?

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM)

146

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A He said not to go down in that area because there was going to
2 be a lot of trouble.

3
4 Q Well, after the night of the 14th and then again on the morning
5 of the 15th, you heard some talking about this. Who did you hear
6 discussing it on the morning of the 15th?

7 A I didn't hear anyone discuss it. All I heard, the morning when
8 our Lieutenant Kapitz came down, before we ate chow, had a formation and
9 he talked to the boys about them going down in the area.

10
11 Q While you were in the formation?

12 A Yes, sir.

13
14 Q After the formation broke up, you heard Hughes and Mathis and
15 that group discussing it, didn't you?

16 A No, sir; they stayed across over yonder in the new barracks.

17
18 Q Who did you hear discussing it after Lieutenant Kapitz
19 mentioned it to you?

20 A I heard some boys talking about it.

21
22 Q Who was that?

23 A Just a bunch of boys, me for one of them.

24
25 Q You were one of them?

26 A Yes, sir.

27
28 Q On the morning of the 15th you were all sent up the guardhouse?

29 A Yes, sir.

30
31 Q After you got to the guardhouse, who have you heard discussing
32 it?

33 A I didn't hear anyone talking about it. I heard them talking
34 about they weren't in on the fight.

35
36 Q But there are a bunch of them you knew were down there, didn't you?

37 A I didn't know who was down there. I came from the show and
38 that's where I saw the guy knocked out on the couch.

39
40 Q Then over around mess hall 700, while you were in front of
41 719, you saw a great number of soldiers assembled over there?

42 A 700 -- I saw all of them boys over there.

43
44 Q Across the street from you?

45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM)

147

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q How many would you estimate were over there at the time
2 you saw them?

3 A I couldn't say.

4
5 Q Would you say 150?

6 A I don't know. I am afraid to say.

7
8 Q Well, it was over 50 wasn't it?

9 A I imagine.

10
11 Q And that's when you heard the fence being town down, when you
12 saw that group over there?

13 A The fence was torn down when this boy Montgomery was knocked out.
14 That's when the fence was torn down.

15
16 Q Now, after you saw this group over there and observed that
17 the fence was down, you saw some of them moving down toward the Italian area?

18 A Yes, sir.

19
20 Q Did you ever go across the road?

21 A No, sir; I never did go no further than where I saw the guy
22 knocked out.

23
24 Q You stayed in front of building 719?

25 A That is as far as I got, sir.

26
27 Q While you were out in front of building 719, couldn't you hear
28 this noise that was going on?

29 A I heard all this noise by the mess hall, there were lots of
30 boys in the mess hall.

31
32 Q There were a lot of window panes being broken in the Italian
33 area wasn't there?

34 A I don't know, sir.

35
36 Q You heard people screaming and doors being hit with rocks
37 or something?

38 A I never did. I couldn't hear what was going on way down under
39 the hill. I heard lots of voices down there, but I don't know what they
40 were doing.

41
42 Q It sounded like a lot of noise over in that Italian area?

43 A Yes, just like you put a bunch of men together and talking
44 and something like that. I didn't hear them breaking no window panes. I
45 don't believe you could hear window panes breaking down there.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM)

148

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Now, when the boys began to come back from the Italian area,
2 back to the barracks, how many of them did you see as they approached
3 building 719?

4 A Well, there was just a big group of them.

5
6 Q All came back together?

7 A Yes, that's when the First Sergeant was talking to them.

8
9 Q How many out of that group did you recognize?

10 A I was interested in what the First Sergeant was talking about.

11
12 Q You saw these people come back.

13 A I saw them when he was telling them to go in the barracks.

14
15 Q Who did you see going in the barracks that came from the area?

16 A I didn't see any of them that came from the area. I saw some
17 of them come by the car and come in the barracks. Addison George was
18 out there and he told all us to go back in the barracks and go to bed.

19
20 Q Addison George had just come up from the Italian area?

21 A He was standing out there. I don't know where he came from.

22
23 Q What did he have in his hands?

24 A I didn't see him with nothing, sir.

25
26 Q Who else did you see?

27 A I don't know, sir. I didn't recognize any of the boys. I was
28 listening to what the First Sergeant said.

29
30 Q But you saw them.

31 A Yes, sir.

32
33 Q When you see people you know you recognize them, don't you?

34 A (No audible answer)

35
36 Q Now, just name some of the others?

37 A I couldn't name no person. I couldn't name people that I saw
38 going in the barracks because lots of them was even in the bed and they
39 didn't know nothing about the racket.

40
41 Q But there were lots of them that were coming in that had
42 been in the racket?

43 A Well, I don't know where they were.

44
45 Q Who, besides Willie Curry, has told you that he was down there

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM)

149

CONFIDENTIAL

1 in the fight?

2 A Well, Curry hasn't even told me.

3
4 Q Who was it told you that he was down there?

5 A I haven't heard anyone say he was down there. I think when we
6 was up here in this large stockade I heard somebody say that Willie Curry
7 told the people down at the dock that he was down there.

8
9 Q Haven't you heard Wallace Wooden say he was down there?

10 A No, sir, I didn't even see Wallace Wooden.

11
12 Q Don't you know Wallace?

13 A Yes, sir.

14
15 Q Didn't someone say that Wallace was down there?

16 A I didn't hear no one say that he was down there. Like the other
17 day I heard Prevoise come back and they said Prevoise was down in the area.

18
19 Q Yes, Prevoise did say that.

20 A Wallace Wooden stayed in the barracks over there, too, but I
21 didn't see him that night at all. I couldn't say he was in the area
22 or where he was. I didn't see him after we ate chow that evening.

23
24 Q Is there anything else that you want to tell me?

25 A That's about all. I wasn't in the fight and I told you what
26 I saw of it. That's all I know of it.

27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CUNNINGHAM) (END)

151

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You were told in the beginning that there was a fight going
2 on in the area and then after that you heard a lot of noise around this
3 mess hall, didn't you?

4 A You see, I was at the mess hall myself working that night when
5 it all happened.

6
7 Q You mean this mess hall across the street?

8 A No, sir; our mess hall up there.

9
10 Q Then you were working where?

11 A 680.

12
13 Q How long did you work at building 680?

14 A It was past eleven o'clock. I heard taps blow before I left
15 the mess hall.

16
17 Q After taps blew, you worked there a while longer?

18 A Yes, sir.

19
20 Q How much longer would you estimate?

21 A I wouldn't know, sir. It has been a good while ago.

22
23 Q Then you came back to your barracks, 670?

24 A Yes, sir.

25
26 Q And when you got back there someone told you there was a fight
27 going on or a fight had gone on?

28 A That a fight had been going on between the 650th boys.

29
30 Q Were the lights out when you arrived from the mess hall to
31 your barracks?

32 A No, sir.

33
34 Q How long was it after you got in the barracks that the MP's
35 came in and told you to turn out the lights?

36 A About 15 minutes.

37
38 Q At the time you arrived at your barracks, did you hear any noise
39 going on down the Italian area?

40 A I heard the whistle blowing.

41
42 Q You mean whistles were being blown down in the Italian area
43 or over close to this mess hall?

44 A I don't know where it was, but I heard whistles blowing; the
45 sirens rather.

CONFIDENTIAL

(ROBBINS)

152

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q The sirens on the car?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q That was about the time you arrived at your barracks?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q Now, how long after the sirens blew did you see the cars
8 coming out of that area?
9 A I didn't see the cars.
10
11 Q How long after the sirens blew that the boys in your barracks
12 began to arrive into the barracks?
13 A I don't know, sir, I was packing my duffle bag.
14
15 Q Well, you surely saw people coming in and out of the building?
16 A Well, I was up at the front end. If they was coming in or out
17 they was coming in and out of the front door.
18
19 Q And you didn't see anybody?
20 A The First Sergeant came in and told us to go to bed.
21
22 Q Did you go to bed?
23 A Well, no, sir; they didn't go to bed then because I was packing
24 my duffle bag and I continued on to pack it. Our Captain told us we had
25 to have our duffle bags packed before morning so we could leave and so I
26 told him what the officer said. You see, I was working at the mess hall
27 and didn't have a chance to pack my bag.
28
29 Q While you were packing your bag, there were many of the boys
30 came in and started talking with you, weren't there?
31 A I don't know, sir.
32
33 Q Didn't you hear some of them talking about the fight, other
34 than the boy who told you there was a fight going on?
35 A No one told me personally there was a fight going on.
36
37 Q Who did you hear talking about it?
38 A I don't know who he was.
39
40 Q What did they say about it?
41 A They just said there was a fight going on at the PX.
42
43 Q Now, the following day did you hear them talking about the
44 fight?
45 A No, sir; because they called us out in formation that morning

CONFIDENTIAL

(ROBBINS)

1450

153

CONFIDENTIAL

1 to move out. We was supposed to move out.

2
3 Q You then went to the guardhouse later that day, didn't you?
4 A No, sir; they took us over here at some white barracks.

5
6 Q Area #1?
7 A I don't know, sir.

8
9 Q Over by the Service Club?
10 A Yes, sir; over by the #2 theater.

11
12 Q AND they put you in those barracks?
13 A Yes, sir.

14
15 Q How long did they leave you in there?
16 A I don't know, sir, how long it was.

17
18 Q What did they do with you then?
19 A They brought us back to this stockade.

20
21 Q When you were in the white barracks you hears some men talking
22 about the fight; didn't you?

23 A No, sir. Well, my opinion about it was that the reason they
24 had us in there they was going to carry us overseas and didn't want us to
25 run off.

26
27 Q Well, after you went to the guardhouse, you knew what you were
28 in the guardhouse for, didn't you?

29 A Our Company Commander told us.

30
31 Q After he told you, had you heard many of the boys talking about
32 the fight?

33 A No, sir; I didn't.

34
35 Q Do you mean you have not heard of anyone talking about that
36 fight?

37 A No, sir.

38
39 Q No one has told you who was in the fight?

40 A No, sir; they didn't.

41
42 Q Did you ever talk to Willie Curry?

43 A No, sir.

44
45 Q How about Wallace Wooden?

CONFIDENTIAL

(ROBBINS)

1451

154

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, I don't know him.
2
3 Q Do you know Henry Jupiter?
4 A I seen him up there.
5
6 Q Did you hear him talking about it?
7 A No, sir.
8
9 Q Then you know nothing more about it than what you have told me?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q You don't know any boys that were in the fight?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q And you weren't in it yourself?
16 A No, sir; I was working.
17
18 Q That's all.
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(ROBBINS) (END)

1452

155

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. Arthaniel Warren, taken
2 at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

4
5 The witness was sworn.

6
7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
8 and station.

9 A Arthaniel Warren, Pvt., 34958996, 650th Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.

11
12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
13 24th Article of War?

14 A I have heard it read.

15
16 Q Do you want me to read it again?

17 A I think I am familiar with it.

18
19 Q On the night of 14 August, were you here in Fort Lawton when
20 they had this fight between the colored soldiers and the Italians?

21 A Yes, sir.

22
23 Q What barracks were you in when you first heard of the fight?

24 A 719.

25
26 Q Were you inside the barracks?

27 A Yes, sir.

28
29 Q What were you doing?

30 A I was in bed.

31
32 Q What caused you to know that the fight was going on outside?

33 A I don't know that the fight was going on.

34
35 Q When did you first learn about it?

36 A The next morning.

37
38 Q You didn't know anything about it at all?

39 A I slept upstairs.

40
41 Q Wasn't there a lot of noise?

42 A There was a lot of noise downstairs.

43
44 Q You heard that?

45 A I heard that, but didn't know it was a fight.

CONFIDENTIAL

(WARREN)

1453

156

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Didn't you hear the boys talking?
2 A I heard a lot of noise.
3
4 Q Did you hear one of the boys come in and ask for a whistle?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Did you hear one of the boys come in and say "everybody out"?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q Did you hear them tearing down the fence across the street
11 from barracks 719?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Now, since the night of the fight, have you heard any of the
15 boys talking about who was in it?
16 A No, sir; I haven't heard anything about it.
17
18 Q You never heard a soul talk about this fight?
19 A I heard them talking about the fight.
20
21 Q Who did you hear talking about it?
22 A I don't know none of the boys.
23
24 Q Where did you come from here?
25 A New Orleans.
26
27 Q You were just recently transferred here?
28 A I was transferred seven days ago.
29
30 Q Are you crippled?
31 A Yes, sir.
32
33 Q What is your trouble?
34 A I have trouble before I came in the Army.
35
36 Q Didn't it affect you?
37 A It bothered me when I was taking my training.
38
39 Q Did it cripple your leg?
40 A Paralyzed my leg.
41
42 Q Have you ever asked for a discharge?
43 A No, sir; I have not.
44
45 Q And you didn't go down to the fight that night?

CONFIDENTIAL

(WARREN)

157

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q Were you crippled that night?
4 A I was crippled before I came here.
5
6 Q You can't walk any better now than you could then?
7 A No, sir.
8
9 Q You didn't go down to the fight, however?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q You haven't heard anyone talking about the fight since then?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q You heard them but you don't know their names?
16 A I don't know their names. I know a few of the names of the
17 boys that have been in the stockade.
18
19 Q You have heard some of them talk about it since you have been
20 in the stockade?
21 A I heard some of them talking saying they weren't down there.
22
23 Q You heard some admit they were down there, haven't you?
24 A I haven't heard nobody say they were down there.
25
26 Q Did you know Willie Curry or Thomas Basden?
27 A I know them from being in the stockade.
28
29 Q Did you hear them say they weren't down there?
30 A They said they weren't down there.
31
32 Q What you have told me is all that you know about the case?
33 A I don't know anything about it.
34
35 Q All right.
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(WARREN) (END)

158

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pfc. Otis Baker, taken at
2 Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization and
8 station.

9 A Otis Baker, Pfc., 38302958, 651st Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.
11

12 Q Otis, are you familiar with your rights as a witness under
13 the 24th Article of War?

14 A Yes, sir.
15

16 Q Do you want me to explain it to you further?

17 A I like to.
18

19 Q All right. (The 24th Article of War was read and explained
20 to the witness). Do you understand that?

21 A Yes, sir.
22

23 Q Where were you when you first heard about the fight?

24 A When I first heard about it I was in bed.
25

26 Q In what barracks do you sleep?

27 A I think it is 667.
28

29 Q What was the first thing that called your attention to the
30 fight?

31 A When the boys come back in the barracks and said they had a fight
32 down there. Of course, I didn't pay any attention to that. I just thought
33 it was a light fight or something down there. I didn't know that they had
34 that kind of a fight down there with those Italians.
35

36 Q Was that after the fight was over when they told you about it?

37 A Yes, sir.
38

39 Q Before the fight started were you awake or asleep?

40 A Before it started I was awake because I was with my wife.
41

42 Q Where were you with her?

43 A Well, from six to seven I was up to the big service club and
44 then we left from there and come on down here to this small service club
45 over here and then I left her and drew some equipment that we had to draw.

CONFIDENTIAL

(BAKER)

159

CONFIDENTIAL

- 1 Q What time did you leave the little service club over here?
2 A I had a little kid and I let her walk and it took us about
3 something like 45 minutes to walk from the big service clug down here.
4 From about six to seven, and 45 minutes, was about eight. I went up and
5 drew someequipment and went back to the mess hall and drew some equipment,
6 and then I come on back to the service club and we stayed there about
7 three hours.
8
9 Q That would be along about eleven when you left there?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q Did you stay over in the service club until it closed?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q There were still people in there?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q When you left the service club did you go to the mess hall?
19 A When I left theservice club me and my wife left and two MP's
20 told us to hurry up that it was getting late. Me and my wife sat there
21 and two or three busses passed and she went on home, I suppose, and then
22 I come on back to my barracks and finished packing my pack and my duffle
23 bag and got into bed..
24
25 Q Did you notice what time your wife left the post?
26 A I couldn't tell youexactly what time she left.
27
28 Q Do you think it was after eleven o'clock?
29 A Yes, sir.
30
31 Q Because the M^P told you to hurry up?
32 A Yes, I am positive it was after eleven o'clock, sir.
33
34 Q Then youwalked from the bus stop, which is up there by the
35 guardhouse, clear back down here?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q When you were up around the bus stop, did you hear any jeeps
39 or sirens or anything blowing down in this direction?
40 A No, sir. I seen the ambulance come from down this way.
41
42 Q Where did you see the ambulance?
43 A On my way back.
44
45 Q Where did you meet them?

CONFIDENTIAL

(BAKER)

1457

160

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Between this mess hall and the motor pool.
2
3 Q You met the ambulance going the other way or going this way?
4 A Going the other way.
5
6 Q How many were there?
7 A One.
8
9 Q Did you see any jeeps along with them?
10 A Some jeep passed me before I turned off the road.
11
12 Q Who was in those?
13 A I don't know.
14
15 Q Did you see any wounded in them?
16 A No, sir.
17
18 Q You didn't know that there had been any trouble down there
19 did you?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q When you got back to barracks 667, that was when someone told
23 you there had been a fight?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q What was his name?
27 A Roy Montgomery and Willie Curry.
28
29 Q They were both in your barracks?
30 A Well, Roy Montgomery was in my barracks, but they both came
31 in the barracks.
32
33 Q What did they say?
34 A They said they had a fight and I know they had been down there
35 because they said they had a fight down there.
36
37 Q Did they say what they did?
38 A They didn't say what they did.
39
40 Q They just said they had a fight and had been down there?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q Who else come in?
44 A That's all.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(BAKER)

1458

161

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Now, did you talk to anyone else that night about the fight?

2 A No, sir. Well, they were telling me. They just come in the
3 barracks and were talking about it and I heard it.

4
5 Q But you heard them say they were down there?

6 A Yes, sir.

7
8 Q after you heard that conversation, you didn't think it was a
9 very big fight.

10 A No, sir; I didn't have the least idea.

11
12 Q You didn't think much of it?

13 A No, sir, because I had my mind on my wife on account of leaving
14 them here and I wasn't much interested.

15
16 Q After you heard them discussing the fight, you heard no more
17 of it until the next morning.

18 A I didn't hear anything else about it until we left -- they
19 took us up and ate dinner and the Company Commander was talking to us
20 about it and told us a fellow had been hung down there and said it was
21 a very serious case.

22
23 Q What conversation did you hear the boys carrying on after the
24 Company Commander made that remark?

25 A I didn't hear nothing.

26
27 Q Didn't you hear anyone discussing it since then?

28 A Oh, well, I have heard them talk about the fight, but just
29 for them sitting down and talking about what happened and all that.

30
31 Q Who have you heard say that he was down there besides Curry
32 and Montgomery?

33 A That's all, sir.

34
35 Q You haven't heard another soul in the guardhouse say they were
36 down there?

37 A No, sir.

38
39 Q Haven't you heard Wallace Wooden say anything about it?

40 A No, sir.

41
42 Q You know Wallace Wooden don't you?

43 A No, sir.

44
45 Q How about Herman Johnson, have you heard Herman talking about it?

CONFIDENTIAL

(BAKER)

2459

162

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

A No, sir.

Q Have you talked to Herman about it at all?

A No, sir.

Q How about Sims, have you talked to Sims about it?

A No, sir. In fact, you see, I don't know anything much about many of the men. Of course, I know Herman Johnson. Yousee, I was just transferred into this Company about four months before this stuff happened. I know some of the boys in my Company, but I don't know any of the boys in the 650th. When I leave here, I take a bath and get right out. I just stay long enough to take a bath and get out and go to town and come back in the morning and go right on detail. Part of the time I stayed up town.

Q All right.

CONFIDENTIAL

(BAKER) (END)

163

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pfc. Jack Chapman, taken at
2 Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October 1944,
3 by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization
8 and station.

9 A Jack Chapman, Pfc., 38557327, 651st Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.
11

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
13 24th Article of War?

14 A Yes, sir.
15

16 Q The night this fight happened, where were you when you first
17 heard about the fight?

18 A I was at my barracks.
19

20 Q That's 719, or were you up in this barracks?

21 A I was here in the first light barracks.
22

23 Q What number were you in?

24 A 667.
25

26 Q What was the first thing that you heard about the fight?

27 A The first thing I heard was the whistle blowing.
28

29 Q Right out in front of the barracks?

30 A I don't know what it was. It was down toward the mess hall.
31

32 Q Who blew the whistle?

33 A I don't know.
34

35 Q Then you came down?

36 A No, sir.
37

38 Q What did you do?

39 A I went to the front of the building.
40

41 Q What did you do there?

42 A When I got there I stood there a while and got off the steps
43 and the First Sergeant said if we didn't go back in he would call a
44 formation. I stood there listening what was going on and he said he would
45 call a formation and drill us.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHAPMAN)

1461

164

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What did you do?
2 A I went back on in. I went to the back door and some MP's came
3 in a jeep and told us all to go back.
4
5 Q That whistle blew early in the fight, didn't it?
6 A Yes, sir, I guess so.
7
8 Q When the fight first started?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q By the time you went to the back door, the MP's arrived, that
12 was some 45 minutes later?
13 A I had been standing on the front steps.
14
15 Q While you stood there in front, whom did you see down there
16 in this area?
17 A I didn't see anyone I knew. I couldn't make out anyone down
18 there.
19
20 Q Whom did you see come back in the building after you went back
21 in there?
22 A I didn't pay any attention to them.
23
24 Q Well, you knew some of them?
25 A Yes, but I didn't pay any attention.
26
27 Q When you went to the back door, you saw that it wasn't blocked,
28 there wasn't anyone there?
29 A Yes.
30
31 Q So you went down the Italian area?
32 A No, sir.
33
34 Q When did you go down there?
35 A I didn't go down there.
36
37 Q Is there anything else you want to add to the statements that
38 you have made?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q You told me the other day that after the fight was over you
42 heard William G. Jones and Ceaser and some of them talking up in the
43 barracks, didn't you?
44 A Yes, sir.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHAPMAN)

1192

L65

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What did you hear Jones say?
2 A Well, I told you that I heard Jones say that he had an axe.
3
4 Q That's William G. Jones?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q What did he say he did with the axe?
8 A He didn't say, sir.
9
10 Q You heard Ceaser talking with Jones in the barracks after
11 the fight, and what did Ceaser say?
12 A I heard him talking with him after the fight?
13
14 Q You heard him talking; yes. You heard Ceaser talking. You
15 heard him say something. What he did down there? What was that?
16 A You mean over in the tent area?
17
18 Q Yes.
19 A Well, I don't know just which one of them said that he stuck
20 his head out the window.
21
22 Q Who else did you hear talking about it?
23 A (No audible answer)
24
25 Q How about Herman Johnson?
26 A I heard Herman Johnson say he lost his shovel down there in the
27 Italian area.
28
29 Q Did he say he had taken it down there and left it or --
30 A I heard him say he lost it.
31
32 Q Who else did you hear talking about it?
33 A Hamilton said he lost his dog tag down in the area.
34
35 Q Now, that is all you heard anyone saying about the fight?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q Have you heard anyone else say they were down there except
39 these persons you have named?
40 A No, sir.
41
42 Q How about Willie Curry?
43 A Well, I told you about him that he drove the jeep.
44
45 Q Anyone else?

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHAPMAN)

1463

166

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q Frank Hughes? Do you know Frank?
4 A No.
5
6 Q How about Wallace Wooden?
7 A I don't know him.
8
9 Q You don't know Wallace?
10 A If that's him sitting out there, I didn't know who he was. You
11 asked me about Frank Hughes.
12
13 Q Did you talk to Frank about this?
14 A Is he here? I thought I left him in Texas.
15
16 Q No, he's overseas, but he's coming back. Did you know him?
17 A Yes, I met him in Texas.
18
19 Q Did you hear him talking about it?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q Who else did you hear talking about it?
23 A I never heard anyone else except what I told you, sir.
24
25 Q Now, when Johnson was telling about losing his shovel or spade --
26 A Just a minute, sir, they wasn't telling me, sir.
27
28 Q You heard him making the statement?
29 A Yes.
30
31 Q He had just come back upstairs.
32 A That was in the guardhouse afterwards.
33
34 Q Just what did Herman say about his spade?
35 A Just that he lost his spade down there. He said he lost his
36 trench shovel.
37
38 Q Did he say if he ever found it?
39 A I never remember him hearing him say it, sir.
40
41 Q That's all.
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CHAPMAN) (END)

1464

168

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q You went downstairs after you heard the whistle blowing?
2 A No, sir; we didn't quit shooting dice. I walked out in the
3 street and there was a guy drove up in a jeep and he stopped and they
4 was talking with him. Pinkney said, "Boys you all stand by and if you hear
5 me holler you be damn sure and come." They turned and went that way and
6 I went in the barracks and went in the latrine and I looked at this boy
7 Montgomery. He was laying up there and had a hole in his head. I didn't
8 see his head bleeding so I come up there by the bunk I sleep and got this
9 boy Suitliff and started shooting craps again.
10
11 Q Henry, when you first went outside and the MP's came up, didn't
12 they put Willie Montgomery in the jeep and take him away?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q Are you sure the man that was hurt, when you first went down-
16 stairs and observed him, was Willie Montgomery?
17 A Yes, sir; laying in his bunk.
18
19 Q Are you sure?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q It wasn't Snow?
23 A No, sir; I didn't know Snow was hurt until he come in from
24 the hospital.
25
26 Q When you first went downstairs, what was going on down there?
27 A Well, a lot of boys in 775 was standing out there and some
28 of them were standing there talking.
29
30 Q There was a bunch next to the mess hall?
31 A They said they had a party over in the mess hall.
32
33 Q Wasn't there a bunch of people gathered around there outside
34 of the mess hall?
35 A Yes, sir.
36
37 Q And they were tearing down that fence that was there, weren't
38 they?
39 A I don't know.
40
41 Q And after you saw that fence over there being torn down, did
42 you hear any of them talking?
43 A No, sir.
44
45 Q You didn't hear any talking at all around the time Willie was

CONFIDENTIAL

(JUPITER)

466

169

CONFIDENTIAL

1 carried up to the front of the building?

2 A He was in the barracks when I seen him. They had him in the
3 barracks laying on his bunk.

4
5 Q You didn't hear any talk about Willie being hurt?

6 A They said he was hit. I went to look at him myself. I just
7 turned around and came back to where I sleep.

8
9 Q After you and Suitliff got in the second game of dice, how
10 long did you remain in that game before it was broken up?

11 A We didn't shoot so long. I quit and went to bed.

12
13 Q Did you walk out of the game?

14 A It was right by where I slept. I backed up and put on my
15 clothes and went to sleep and the MP's came in and asked for the boy that
16 was hurt.

17
18 Q While you were lying in your bunk, or even shooting dice, wasn't
19 there a bunch of boys that came in from the fight?

20 A No, sir; I didn't see any.

21
22 Q After you got in your bunk, wasn't there some of them that
23 came in who had been down to the fight?

24 A I don't know that they had been down to the fight. A lieutenant
25 and a colonel came in and said "put out the lights."

26
27 Q Who did you talk to or who did you hear talking that night
28 in the barracks after the fight was over who definitely said they were
29 down in the fight?

30 A I didn't hear anyone.

31
32 Q You haven't heard a single soul?

33 A No, sir.

34
35 Q After the fight was over, and the following morning on the
36 15th, whom did you hear say had been down to the fight?

37 A I didn't hear no one say they had been down to the fight. I
38 didn't know anyone had been in it. This boy, Hamilton, we was all in
39 the stockade and when they drove up with him he told Captain Felin that
40 they had him and he said they didn't know what they would do with him. He
41 said he didn't care that he didn't have nothing to do with the other boys.
42 We was all in the compound over here.

43
44 Q He told them he was in the fight; didn't he?

45 A Sure, they got his dog tag from down there.

CONFIDENTIAL

(JUPITER)

1467

170

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Q And Clark said he was in the fight; didn't he?
2 A He said he went down and got hit.
3
4 Q Didn't Snow say he was in the fight?
5 A No, sir. I asked Snow where he got hit and he said he was
6 beat up on the street.
7
8 Q He was on the street but down in the Italian area, wasn't he?
9 A I don't know.
10
11 Q Now, who did you state that you have talked to since the night
12 of the fight that stated they were down in the area?
13 A There wasn't no boy that I heard say was down there but this
14 John D. Hamilton and Clark and this boy in the 651st, Roy Montgomery.
15
16 Q So, William G. Jones and Alvin Clark and Roy Montgomery all
17 have told you that they were down in the area? I mean, all have talked
18 about being down in the area.
19 A I haven't heard that William G. Jones was down there. He said
20 he was over there in the mess hall with a girl. He said they had a little
21 party over there in that mess hall. That's where he said he was with
22 a gir. This boy Clark said he went down there to see what was going on
23 and no sooner than he got down there he got knocked out. That Hamilton
24 boy never did say what he was doing.
25
26 Q How about Herman Johnson?
27 A I don't know nothing about those boys.
28
29 Q And Wallace Wooden?
30 A I haven't heard him say he was down there.
31
32 Q He's in your Company isn't he?
33 A Yes, sir. He said he was standing in 719, in the back, playing
34 poker.
35
36 Q But he wasn't, was he?
37 A I don't know. I went upstairs and King cut my hair and after
38 I got a haircut I come in the front of the barracks.
39
40 Q Who cut your hair?
41 A Roy King.
42
43 Q Cpl. King?
44 A Yes, sir; a T/5. He's an old fellow about my age. He cut my
45 hair. During the time this fight started, when the whistle blew, a fellow

CONFIDENTIAL

(JUPITER)

1468

171

CONFIDENTIAL

1 was cutting his hair. He done cut all our hair and I think a new guy, I
2 don't know his name, was cutting King's hair at the time. I can't tell
3 you his name. I was up there shooting crap.

4
5 Q During the fight, you were up there shooting crap with Richard
6 Suitliff.

7 A He said he didn't shoot no craps up there. I know he was up
8 there around the game.

9
10 Q Who were you shooting with while the fight was going on?

11 A Me and Jesse Sims, Stanley Bowden, Scott, and Addison George
12 and Walter Jackson.

13
14 Q All of you were shooting crap while the fighting was going on?

15 A Yes, sir.

16
17 Q Could you hear them fighting down in the area?

18 A When we quit and came down stairs, I walked out and looked down
19 there but I didn't heard nothing going on. I was standing out in the
20 street and the jeep stopped and Pinkney walked down and said, "If you
21 hear me holler you better damn soon come." The jeep left and I went back
22 in the barracks and saw Montgomery.

23
24 Q You know that Pinkney went down toward the Italian area
25 when this boy came up in the jeep?

26 A I wasn't out there when they came back.

27
28 Q I mean, when they left you saw them leave and go down toward
29 the Italian area?

30 A They took Pinkney and went back that way.

31
32 Q Didn't they turn down that road?

33 A I don't know. I went back to the barracks.

34
35 Q I guess you know, Henry, that Alvin Clark has identified you
36 as being in the Italian area on the night of 14 August in the vicinity
37 of building 780 with a club in your hands?

38 A No, sir; I do not. He couldn't identify me.

39
40 Q He did identify you though.

41 A I don't know, sir.

42
43 Q You also know that William Jones saw you standing in the Italian
44 area around building 713 with a club in your hands and also stated that
45 later you talked to him and told him that you wrapped several of the

CONFIDENTIAL

(JUPITER)

172

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Italians?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Did you tell him that?
5 A No, sir; I did not.
6
7 Q Did you go down in the vicinity of the orderly room with a
8 club in your hands?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q Did you go down in the vicinity of building 708 with a club in
12 your hands?
13 A No, sir.
14
15 Q I want to further tell you that Richard Suitliff has been
16 identified as being down in the Italian area by several persons on the
17 night of 14 August, 1944 during this fight?
18 A Yes.
19
20 Q And you now state that he was up there in the building when
21 you were up there shooting crap.
22 A He was up there to the game. He told the man he didn't shoot
23 no crap. He went up but came downstairs.
24
25 Q You don't know where Richard Suitliff was during the fight?
26 A I wasn't paying no attention. I was keeping count of my money.
27
28 Q You also know that Jesse Sims has confessed that he was down
29 in the Italian area and entered into the fight on the night of 14 August
30 1944, don't you?
31 A No, sir; I don't.
32
33 Q Well, if Jesse Sims told us or has testified that he was down
34 in the area on the night of 14 August 1944, and participated in the
35 fight, then what would you say about him being up in the dice game?
36 A I can't say nothing about that.
37
38 Q You are not sure that he was up there, are you?
39 A I am sure.
40
41 Q You are sure that Jesse Sims was up there all during the
42 fight shooting dice with you?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q Now you mentioned Walter Jackson. You know that Walter Jackson

CONFIDENTIAL

(JUPITER)

2470

173

CONFIDENTIAL

1 has been identified as being down in the fight on the night of 14 August
2 1944, don't you, Henry?

3 A No, sir.

4
5 Q You also know that some of the colored soldiers saw him down
6 there and have testified to what he was doing down there, don't you?

7 A No, sir; I don't.

8
9 Q If they testified to that, what would you say to him being
10 up there playing dice with you?

11 A All I can do is tell what we were doing.

12
13 Q You further testified that Addison George was playing with you?

14 A Yes, sir.

15
16 Q Do you know that Addison George has testified under oath that
17 he was ^{not} down in the Italian area, but back in building 700 watching the
18 fight going on on the night of 14 August?

19 A No, sir; I don't.

20
21 Q If he testified to that, what about your testimony of him
22 being in the dice game with you?

23 A That is all I can tell -- what we were doing.

24
25 Q Well, Henry, you know that none of these fellows about whom
26 you have testified were playing dice with you during the fight that went
27 on in the Italian area on the night of 14 August, don't you?

28 A Yes, sir; they really was. I wouldn't tell you a lie.'

29
30 Q They were playing with you before the fight, but they weren't
31 playing with you during the fight, were they?

32 A Yes, sir.

33
34 Q What are you going to do?

35 A There is nothing I can do but tell the truth about it.

36
37 Q You have been identified by Clark and Jones as being down in the
38 area and Jones saw you in the vicinity of the orderly room with a club
39 and you told Jones that you did hit some Italians.

40 A No, sir; I did not. I did not even go down there. I know
41 better and the Lord knows that. I did come out and stand out in that
42 street.

43
44 Q You weren't playing no poker?

45 A No, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(JUPITER)

1471

174

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Q ANd you weren't shooting dice?

A Yes, sir; I really was.

Q Is there anything else, whether I have asked you or not,
which you want to tell me about this case?

A No, sir; nothing I know about it.

Q All right.

CONFIDENTIAL

(JUPITER) (END)

176

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who was that?
2 A Robert Sparks.
3
4 Q What did he want to awaken you for?
5 A He had some money there in his hands and I remember turning
6 over and seeing money in his hands.
7
8 Q Was he offering you the money or something?
9 A He and I had been gambling together.
10
11 Q And he had been the biggest winner from the group you had
12 been gambling with?
13 A I suppose so. He and I, since we have been in the Army, we have
14 been gambling together and I got broke two or three days before then and
15 I had no money so there was nothing for me to do.
16
17 Q Did your friend give you a little of that money?
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q After he awakened you, you went back to sleep?
21 A He never woke me up. I remember turning over.
22
23 Q After he did arouse you then you went back to sleep?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q And you didn't wake up until the next morning?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q You heard about the fight didn't you?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q Did you hear talk going on about it?
33 A I just heard they had a fight.
34
35 Q Who told you?
36 A I just overheard a conversation.
37
38 Q Who did you hear talking about it?
39 A Sir, I couldn't give the men's names.
40
41 Q You know who it was, don't you?
42 A No, sir; I was in the latrine. I only heard they had a fight.
43
44 Q You don't know who the person was that was talking?
45 A No, sir; I couldn't be for sure.

CONFIDENTIAL

(SCOTT)

177

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who do you think it was?
2 A I have to tell the truth.
3
4 Q Well, you can tell the truth by saying who you thought it was
5 talking about the fight.
6 A But it was a group in there.
7
8 Q What were they saying about the fight?
9 A The only thing I heard them saying was they had a fight down
10 in the Italian area.
11
12 Q Did they say the colored soldiers beat up the Italians?
13 A No, sir; they didn't say it like that.
14
15 Q Later on you had a formation, didn't you?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q And after reveille, didn't one of the lieutenants tell you
19 that the Company got themselves in trouble?
20 A No, sir; not at reveille.
21
22 Q When was that that the lieutenant made that remark?
23 A He made that remark when we was up in the compound area up there.
24
25 Q After you heard the lieutenant tell your Company that you
26 certainly got yourselves in a lot of trouble, there was quite a bit of
27 talk about the fight, wasn't there?
28 A No, sir; there probably was but I didn't hear it.
29
30 Q Where were you?
31 A I was there.
32
33 Q You didn't hear it?
34 A No, sir; I didn't hear the talk what was done afterwards.
35
36 Q You said there probably was a lot of talk about it.
37 A Yes, sir.
38
39 Q How do you know that?
40 A I said I didn't hear it.
41
42 Q How do you know they did any talking at all?
43 A I don't know, I just made that remark.
44
45 Q You heard a lot of talking about it since that time, haven't you?

CONFIDENTIAL

(SCOTT)

1475

178

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir; I only heard two boys say they was down there.
2
3 Q Who was that?
4 A I heard Roy Montgomery and Willie Curry.
5
6 Q What did they say they did down there?
7 A Well, sir, I heard Willie Curry say he went down and he it
8 one man.
9
10 Q Did he say he drove the jeep into a tent?
11 A No, sir; I didn't hear him say that.
12
13 Q What did Roy say?
14 A He said he was down there and hit one man.
15
16 Q Did he say what he hit him with?
17 A I don't know what he said.
18
19 Q A two by four?
20 A No, sir; I don't know.
21
22 Q Who else?
23 A They are the only two boys that I can swear to.
24
25 Q But you think you heard some mone.
26 A No, sir.
27
28 Q Well, you heard quite a bit of talk about it, haven't you?
29 A No, sir, I haven't.
30
31 Q They even talk about it now don't they?
32 A I just came out of the hospital this morning.
33
34 Q Well, when we first started this investigation, you heard a
35 lot of boys talking about it and us bringing them down and questioning them.
36 A The only thing I knew was bringing them down here.
37
38 Q And they said they told us they were in the fight, didn't they?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q Did you ever hear Willie Basden say what he did in the fight?
42 A No, sir.
43
44 Q You heard Wallace Wooden tell about his part in the fight.
45 A No, sir. I don't know Wallace Wooden.

CONFIDENTIAL

(SCOTT)

1476

19 179

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q He's sitting right out there.
2 A I saw a fellow sitting out there.
3
4 Q Don't you know him as Wallace Wooden?
5 A No, sir; I don't.
6
7 Q Have you been in the guardhouse about five weeks and you have
8 been around Wallace some, haven't you?
9 A Not as I know him, sir.
10
11 Q Those are the only two persons whom you have heard making any
12 conversation concerning their part in the fight since the day that
13 it happened?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q Is there anything else, whether I have asked you or not, that
17 you would like to tell me concerning the fight?
18 A No, sir; there isn't.
19
20 Q All right.
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(SCOTT) (END)

1477

180

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Further testimony of Pvt. Robert Mathis,
2 taken at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 3 October
3 1944, by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was reminded that he was still
6 under oath and of his rights as a witness.
7

8 Q I just want to call you in again, Robert, and tell you that you
9 have been identified by three persons and those persons are Willie Curry,
10 Roy Montgomery and Willie Prevost. Willie Prevost identified you as
11 being the man with the axe chopping on the door. Roy Montgomery identified
12 you as being in the area with the club in your hand and Willie Curry
13 identified you as waiting at the door there to get in with the club in
14 your hand; that is, inside the building in that little room what we
15 call Room "R". Do you remember where that was?
16

17 A They ain't told you that, sir.

18 Q What?

19 A You can get out of that. They ain't nobody told you that.
20

21 Q Nobody told us?

22 A Nobody told you. They ain't told you that.
23

24 Q Nobody has told me that you were down there?

25 A That is right. They couldn't.
26

27 Q Willie Curry didn't tell me you were down there is that what
28 you are testifying?

29 A That is right.
30

31 Q Roy Montgomery said you weren't down in the area, is that
32 your belief?

33 A That is right.
34

35 Q How about Willie Prevost?

36 A I don't know him.
37

38 Q You think none of those people saw you down there?

39 A How could they see me down there?
40

41 Q I am just telling you that they saw you down in the area. You
42 just said a minute ago that they didn't tell me that. I am just making
43 that statement to you that they did tell me that. I wanted to ask you
44 what you thought of it.

45 A Why don't you bring them up here now?

CONFIDENTIAL

(MATHIS)

1478

181

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q We don't confront people with witnesses.

2 A No, sir?

3

4 Q Not until the trial. In the trial we will confront you
5 with them.

6 A Well, when the trial comes off they will be there and I will
7 be there, too.

8

9 Q You have nothing more to say?

10 A No, sir, I have nothing more to say.

11

12 Q That's all. I just wanted to tell you that so you would know
13 who would testify against you when the trial comes up.

14 A That tickles me.

15

16 Q Does it tickle you because I am telling you. Is that what
17 you are laughing about?

18 A Yes, sir.

19

20 Q All right. That's all.

21

22

23

24

25

26

27

28

29

30

31

32

33

34

35

36

37

38

39

40

41

42

43

44

45

CONFIDENTIAL

(MATHIS) (END)

1478

183

CONFIDENTIAL

1 stay in there. Nobody come out. He was making other boys come in.
2
3 Q Then you went on outside and talked to somebody?
4 A No, sir; I didn't go outside at all.
5
6 Q What did you do?
7 A I went to the barracks.
8
9 Q What did you do when you got to the barracks?
10 A I went back and fixed my bunk.
11
12 Q Who was shooting dice with you up there that you knew?
13 A Addison George and Willie Scott, them is the only two I
14 remember was there because I was right beside them.
15
16 Q And you went up and started fixing your bunk?
17 A I stayed downstairs but I was upstairs shooting dice.
18
19 Q What did you do downstairs while you were waiting down there?
20 A That's where I stayed -- downstairs. I went in and fixed
21 my bunk.
22
23 Q Did you go to bed?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q Wasn't this fighting going on all this time?
27 A No, sir; the fight was over.
28
29 Q Had the boys started coming back from the fight?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q How came in that had been in the fight?
33 A I don't know who they were.
34
35 Q Well, you heard them talking about it?
36 A Yes, I heard a bunch of them talking about it.
37
38 Q Who was talking about it?
39 A I don't know, sir; who they was.
40
41 Q You don't know who they were?
42 A I would know them if I was looking at them.
43
44 Q Well, after you got back in the barracks, didn't some of them
45 come back in the barracks?

CONFIDENTIAL

(JACKSON)

1481

184

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A From down there?
2
3 Q Yes.
4 A I know they come back in the barracks.
5
6 Q Who were they?
7 A I don't know, sir. I don't know who was down there.
8
9 Q Well, you heard them talking after you got in the barracks?
10 A No, sir.
11
12 Q Wasn't there any talk in the barracks?
13 A No, sir; if there was I didn't hear any.
14
15 Q Well, the next day, after the fight was over, you heard some
16 of them talking about the fight?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q And you haven't heard anyone talking about the fight since
20 that day?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q Whom did you hear discussing it in the stockade?
24 A Nobody is going to say they were down there.
25
26 Q You mean no one has told you they were down there?
27 A No, sir.
28
29 Q Were you down there?
30 A No, sir.
31
32 Q Did you ever talk to Edward Sanders on the night of the fight?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q Did you call Edward Sanders yellow for not going down there?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q Did you and Edward Sanders ever have any trouble?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q Do you know Willie Ellis?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q Do you know Jesse Sims?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

1482

(JACKSON)

185

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Do you know James Chandler?

2 A Yes, sir.

3
4 Q Do you know Willie Jones?

5 A Yes, sir.

6
7 Q Now, Walter, we have evidence from all of these people that
8 I have just mentioned that definitely places you down in the Italian area
9 on the night of August 14th.

10 A Well, they sure told you wrong, sir.

11
12 Q And not only places you down there but tells us what you did
13 while you were down there.

14 A They told you wrong, sir.

15
16 Q You, furthermore, have been identified by an Italian who was in
17 the Italian area and who saw you down there on the night of the 14th
18 of August and told what you were doing.

19 A No, sir; couldn't nobody tell you they saw me down there.

20
21 Q Willie G. Jones said he saw you throw rocks into the barracks
22 of the Italians while you were in the Italian area on the night in
23 question.

24 A He sure told you wrong, sir.

25
26 Q Chandler saw you in the area and identified you definitely as
27 being in the area.

28 A He told you wrong, sir.

29
30 Q Jesse Sims saw you in the area and said that you were with
31 the group that started in the fight first.

32 A No, sir.

33
34 Q That you went down into the area along with Luther Larkin,
35 Snow and other people who were in the first group that made the attack
36 on barracks 708 on the night of August 14, 1944.

37 A No, sir; couldn't nobody told you that.

38
39 Q Now, do you deny that those people whom I am telling you have
40 testified, said what they have said, or do you just deny that you were
41 not down there?

42 A If they told you they saw me down there they were wrong.

43
44 Q Willie Ellis saw you while you were in building 713, that's
45 the orderly room down there, and definitely places you there with a club

CONFIDENTIAL

(JACKSON)

1483

186

CONFIDENTIAL

1 in your hand and what you were doing inside the building.

2 A No, sir; if he did he sure told you wrong.

3
4 Q Edward Sanders testified that after the fight was over he came
5 back to the barracks, 719, and while in that barracks you came in and he
6 and you got into an argument and you called him a yellow dog and said
7 that all the other boys that didn't go down there that night were yellow
8 dogs for not going. Now, did you say that?

9 A Who said that?

10
11 Q Edward Sanders.

12 A He told you wrong. We ain't never had no argument.

13
14 Q Do you know where Addison George was while the fight was
15 going on?

16 A Yes, sir.

17
18 Q Where was he?

19 A Shooting dice.

20
21 Q And you and Addison George and Willie Scott were shooting dice
22 all during the fight, were you?

23 A Yes, sir.

24
25 Q Is there anything else or any further information that you
26 want to give in this case?

27 A That's all.

28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(JACKSON) (END)

188

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Well, previous to the time the Major came into the building
2 had you heard a lot of noise?

3 A No, sir.
4

5 Q Didn't a lot of boys come inside the building and talk about
6 the fight?

7 A No, sir.
8

9 Q Didn't you hear the whistle being blown?

10 A No, sir; I couldn't hear the whistle blowing when I was asleep.
11

12 Q After the fight was over, and after the Major came back to the
13 barracks, did you remain awake?

14 A No, sir; I didn't remain awake. I went to sleep right after --
15 it was about five minutes.
16

17 Q While you were awake, and while the Major was there, wasn't
18 there some discussion among the men in the barracks who had been down
19 there and what they done?

20 A The only thing I could hear was somebody was telling something
21 but who they were I don't know.
22

23 Q What were they talking about?

24 A I imagine they were trying to tell them something concerning
25 what started it.
26

27 Q Since the day following, while you have been in the guardhouse,
28 you have heard considerable talk about the fight, haven't you?

29 A No, sir; I haven't heard talking about it.
30

31 Q You heard talk about it?

32 A A little of it.
33

34 Q Who did you hear talking about it?

35 A I don't recall any particular names.
36

37 Q Well, surely you remember someone who mentioned being down
38 there?

39 A Well, the only ones mentioned it to me was the fellows that was
40 in my little tent.
41

42 Q Who was that?

43 A That was the fellows that was in my tent -- Well, the fellows
44 that was in my tent was Elmer Briscoe, Walter Ruffen and Edward Sanders.
45

46 Q What did you hear Edward Sanders say about it?

47 A He said he was up and they were discussing something.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CALVERT)

1456

189

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q He said he was down there, didn't he?
2 A No, sir; he wasn't concerned.
3
4 q Did he say who was down there?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Did Walter Ruffen say who was down there?
8 A No, sir; he said he knew who wasn't down there.
9
10 Q Did he say he was down there?
11 A No, sir.
12
13 Q Elmer Briscoe -- did you talk to him about it?
14 A We was just discussing that we hoped we wouldn't be incriminated
15 in there because we didn't do anything.
16
17 Q Elmer was down there though.
18 A No, sir.
19
20 Q Didn't he say he was down there?
21 A No, sir.
22
23 Q Who have you heard talking about the hanging?
24 A I haven't heard anyone say who did the hanging.
25
26 Q Don't you know Herman Johnson?
27 A No, sir; I don't.
28
29 Q You know Wallace Wooden, don't you?
30 A Yes, sir.
31
32 Q Didn't he tell you that he did the hanging?
33 A Well, I knew him in my Company.
34
35 Q Didn't he tell you, though, while you have been in the guardhouse?
36 A I haven't talked to him.
37
38 Q Do you know him?
39 A Yes, sir.
40
41 Q You can identify him when you see him?
42 A Yes, sir.
43
44 Q You weren't in the fight?
45 A No, sir; I was asleep in my barracks.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CALVERT)

1487

190

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Were you crippled on the night of the fight?
2 A Yes, sir.
3
4 Q How long have you been crippled?
5 A I imagine it must have been, as near as I can recall, eight
6 to ten days before the 1st of August.
7
8 Q What was wrong with you?
9 A Oh, I have been having trouble with my back and also my leg.
10
11 Q Have you had any examination made of it?
12 A Yes, I had an X-ray.
13
14 Q What did they say was wrong?
15 A They said they couldn't find any broken bones.
16
17 Q You know that you were identified by one Pisciotano, an Italian,
18 as being down in the Italian area on the night of 14 August.
19 A I was identified?
20
21 Q Yes.
22 A How many times was I identified?
23
24 Q One time. Do you remember the time that he identified you?
25 A Well, that must have been when he was brought to our Company.
26
27 Q When he looked at you soldiers in the line up weren't you
28 identified as being one of the soldiers that was down in the Italian area?
29 A I must have been. I don't know who all was identified.
30
31 Q Whom do you know that was down there in the area?
32 A I don't know anybody that was down there.
33
34 Q And you went to bed about nine o'clock and slept right straight
35 through until the MP's came in and woke you up?
36 A Yes, somebody woke me up.
37
38 Q After they woke you up, was there anyone came in the building
39 and talked about the fight?
40 A No, sir; the only noise I heard was the Major and Sergeant
41 came in right after me.
42
43 Q Did he take someone out of the building when he came in?
44 A No, sir; I don't think he did. I didn't get up to see. I could
45 tell the Sergeant by his voice.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CALVERT)

1488

191

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q The First Sergeant?

2 A Yes, sir.

3
4 Q Is there anything else, whether I asked you or not, that you
5 want to tell me about this case?

6 A No, sir; only that I know I am innocent. I don't know of
7 anyone being incriminated in it.
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(CALVER) (END)

1489

193

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q What did you do?
2 A I had my under clothes on and I went in and put my trousers
3 on and by that time the MP's were making them get back.
4
5 Q When you came outside of the building what was going on
6 down by the mess hall here?
7 A I didn't come down.
8
9 Q You could see, couldn't you?
10 A The streets were full of people.
11
12 Q At least you saw those people?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q And there was a lot of talking, wasn't there?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q And a whistle being blown?
19 A I didn't hear a whistle, sir.
20
21 Q Now, while you still stood out in front of the building, you
22 saw a bunch of people who had gathered around the mess hall start down
23 to the Italian area.
24 A No, sir; I didn't because the MP's were outside of the area at
25 that time when I came out of my barracks.
26
27 Q Had you been asleep?
28 A Yes, sir; I had.
29
30 Q How come you woke up?
31 A Well, I heard all the noise.
32
33 Q What noise did you hear that woke you up?
34 A Well, boys going out of the barracks and noise out on the street.
35
36 Q Who did you hear go out of the barracks?
37 A I never paid any attention.
38
39 Q Who did you see go out?
40 A No one.
41
42 Q Who did you see go outside besides Cunningham?
43 A One boy I recognized because the First Sergeant was talking
44 to him. I saw the majority of the boys out there, but I didn't pay any
45 attention to them.

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

1491

194

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who, besides Cunningham, went down to the mess hall?
2 A I don't want to say Cunningham went down there because he was
3 passing my barracks.
4
5 Q He was going down that way, wasn't he?
6 A I don't know where he was going.
7
8 Q After you went back to your barracks, did you hear a lot more
9 noise down in the Italian area?
10 A No, sir; only cars and MP's and the Major and things that was
11 outside.
12
13 Q Well, that was later on in the evening when you heard that?
14 A That is all I heard.
15
16 Q When you first got up all you heard was what was going on
17 out in the mess hall?
18 A Out in the street.
19
20 Q And they were talking?
21 A Yes, sir.
22
23 Q And hollering?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q And was that fence being torn down over there; could you hear
27 them tearing down a fence?
28 A I don't know anything about that.
29
30 Q You didn't go down there?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q You went back in your barracks?
34 A Yes, sir; I went back and went to sleep.
35
36 Q You didn't go right off to sleep, did you?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q While you lay there a bunch of the boys came in the building
40 didn't they?
41 A Well, the First Sergeant came in the building and an MP came
42 in the building and told them to put the lights out and that's about all.
43
44 Q That was after you got back in bed?
45 A Yes, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

1492

195

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q How long after you had been in bed did the MP's come in?
2 A 20 or 30 minutes.
3
4 Q Now, after you went back to bed, and after you waited about 20
5 minutes, the MP's came in and said "turn out the lights"?
6 A Yes, sir.
7
8 Q Did you turn out the lights?
9 A Yes, sir.
10
11 Q Who turned the lights out?
12 A I don't know, sir.
13
14 Q You didn't go to sleep right then?
15 A I would say; no, sir. I don't think I did.
16
17 Q You stayed awake a while longer?
18 A Yes, sir.
19
20 Q After you got in bed, yet you weren't asleep, many of the boys
21 came back into the barracks?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q Who were those came back?
25 A I don't know.
26
27 Q You heard some conversation concerning this fight while you
28 were in bed?
29 A The only thing I probably heard was what caused it.
30
31 Q Wasn't there a lot of them said they had been down there and
32 what they did while down there?
33 A I don't know.
34
35 Q Who sleeps in the barracks?
36 A Well, Sgt. Palmer, Frank Hughes, a lot of boys.
37
38 Q Did you hear Frank come back in?
39 A No, sir.
40
41 Q Did you hear Frank talk about this any time after the fight
42 or even during the fight?
43 A No, sir.
44
45 Q You didn't see Frank in the barracks during the fight, did you?

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

196

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Well, he was in there before the fight started.
2
3 Q But after the fight started he wasn't in there?
4 A No, sir.
5
6 Q Now, do you know he was in there before the fight started?
7 A Because they were playing some cards.
8
9 Q About what time?
10 A They was playing some "skin" and Sanders and I was playing --
11
12 Q Did you see Johnnie Sanders that night?
13 A No, sir; the early part of the evening I saw him in the mess
14 hall.
15 Q Now, you and Hughes then were playing a little game early
16 in the evening?
17 A No, sir; Johnnie Sanders and I.
18
19 Q Who was Hughes playing with?
20 A Joe DiMaggio and a couple other boys.
21
22 Q How long did they play?
23 A I don't know, sir, because I left them playing after I got broke
24 and I went to bed.
25
26 Q When you went to sleep were they still playing?
27 A Yes, sir.
28
29 Q And who all besides Hughes was playing?
30 A Hughes and Demartra and I didn't recognize all of them. I
31 wasn't paying any attention to them.
32
33 Q Was Greshum playing?
34 A No, sir.
35
36 Q Was Herman Gentry playing?
37 A No, sir, he wasn't playing.
38
39 Q Jefferson D. Green?
40 A No, sir, he wasn't playing.
41
42 Q You know Jefferson D. Green?
43 A Yes, sir.
44
45 Q Was Willie Basden up there?

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

197

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir.
2
3 Q Herman Johnson?
4 A He is in the 651st.
5
6 Q Was Arthur Williams?
7 A No, sir, he wasn't playing.
8
9 Q Where was he?
10 A I don't know where he was. I was in bed.
11
12 Q Did you get a haircut from Arthur that nigh?
13 A Not that night.
14
15 Q Had you gotten one previously?
16 A Well, I don't know when, but he cuts my hair all the time.
17
18 Q Now, after you were moved from the barracks were you put in
19 the stockade?
20 A Yes, we went up here.
21
22 Q First you were moved up here on the other side of the post
23 in the #1 area?
24 A Yes, sir.
25
26 Q While over there who did you hear talking about this fight?
27 A They wasn't discussing it.
28
29 Q You didn't hear anyone discuss that fight over there?
30 A No, sir.
31
32 Q Didn't you hear Willie Curry discuss it?
33 A I don't know Willie Curry.'
34
35 Q Did you hear Wallace Wooden discuss it?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q After you came back to the stockade who did you hear discuss it?
39 A I didn't hear anyone discuss it because only five of us live
40 in a tent and we are drilling the majority of the time.
41
42 Q At night who do you hear?
43 A Nobody.
44
45 Q You haven't heard anybody discuss it since the night of August 14?

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

198

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A No, sir; I haven't.
2
3 Q You stay up there in this barracks with five men?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q Who are those five men?
7 A Clark --
8
9 Q Alvin Clark?
10 A Yes, sir.
11
12 Q Who else?
13 A Wilbur Jenkins, Paul Ellis, Herman Dowell and myself.
14
15 Q Who was the 2d name you gave?
16 A Wilbur Jenkins.
17
18 Q You haven't heard any of them discuss it?
19 A No, sir.
20
21 Q You know who was down there, don't you?
22 A No, sir; I don't.
23
24 Q Do you know William G. Jones?
25 A Yes, sir.
26
27 Q Was he down there?
28 A I wouldn't say because I wasn't down there.
29
30 Q Well, William G. Jones said you were down there?
31 A William G. Jones told a story, I would say, sir.
32
33 Q During the night of August 14, 1944, did you say in the presence
34 of William G. Jones that you had hit a bunch of those Italians down
35 there that night?
36 A No, sir; I didn't.
37
38 Q Did you say in the presence of Jones that "Let's go down and
39 whip those damn 'Dagoes'?"
40 A No, sir; I didn't.
41
42 Q You didn't make those two statements?
43 A I didn't see him.
44
45 Q Did you make either of those two statements on the night of

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

1496

199

CONFIDENTIAL

1 August 14?
2 A No, sir.
3
4 Q Did you ever say it?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q Either in the presence of Jones or anyone else that you had
8 hit some of those Italians that night?
9 A No, sir.
10
11 Q Did you say in the presence of Jones or anyone else, during
12 the fight, "Let's go down and whip those 'Dagoes'"?
13 A No, sir; I didn't.
14
15 Q How do you account for the fact that he said both of those
16 things?
17 A He is telling a false, sir; that is all I can say. When I
18 came out of the barracks I didn't have any occasion to go down there.
19
20 Q But you went back and put your trousers on?
21 A That is all I had on when I came out in the street.
22
23 Q Wasn't that all you needed to go down there?
24 A I didn't have any clothes.
25
26 Q Why didn't you want to go down there?
27 A I didn't want to.
28
29 Q Why didn't you?
30 A I have something to live for, sir. I don't like to fight.
31
32 Q Haven't you ever been in a fight before?
33 A Only my wife, I slapped her once or twice.
34
35 Q Why did you slap her?
36 A Something she was doing wrong.
37
38 Q What was she doing wrong?
39 A Jealousy.
40
41 Q Didn't she have a right to be jealous?
42 A I slapped her.
43
44 Q That's the only fight you have ever been in?
45 A School fights when I was in school.

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS)

1437

200

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q But you did beat your wife?
2 A I slapped her, that's all.
3
4 Q Did you whip her?
5 A I slapped her.
6
7 Q Do you know Wallace Wooden?
8 A Yes, sir.
9
10 Q How long have you known him?
11 A Since I have been in the Company.
12
13 Q You didn't know him before that?
14 A No, sir.
15
16 Q But you did know him previous to the night of 14 August?
17 A I have been knowing him ever since I been in the 650th Port
18 Company.
19
20 Q Did you see him on that night?
21 A The early part of the night, sir.
22
23 Q Where did you see him?
24 A In the barracks.
25
26 Q What was he doing?
27 A I can't recall.
28
29 Q What barracks was he in?
30 A He lives in the same barracks I was.
31
32 Q You saw him that night?
33 A Yes, early in the evening.
34
35 Q But you didn't see him before the fight?
36 A No, sir.
37
38 Q Didn't he tell you where he went during the fight?
39 A I never talked with him, sir.
40
41 Q But you did see him during the night of 14 August?
42 A Yes, the early part of the night.
43
44 Q You saw him over there?
45 A In the barracks where we lived, sir.

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAMS) (END)

1498

@) 201

CONFIDENTIAL

Further testimony of Pvt. William G. Jones, taken at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 4 October 1944, by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witness was reminded that he was still under oath and of his rights as a witness.

- 1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9 Q Last time you were down, William, you told me that you saw
10 Levert Williams down in the area on the night of August 14th.
11 A I said I heard him talking about it.
12
13 Q And you heard him say he was down there and hit some Italians?
14 A Yes.
15
16 Q Where was he at the time he was talking?
17 A In the barracks.
18
19 Q In your barracks with you?
20 A In the hallway.
21
22 Q All of you were in the barracks at the time?
23 A Yes.
24
25 Q (Pvt. Levert Williams entered the room) Jones, do you know
26 this man?
27 A Yes.
28
29 Q What is his name?
30 A Levert Williams.
31
32 Q On the night of 14 August did you see Levert Williams?
33 A Yes, I saw him in the barracks.
34
35 Q What was he doing?
36 A Talking.
37
38 Q What was he saying when you heard him talking?
39 A Talking about the fight.
40
41 Q What did he say about the fight?
42 A He said he was down there.
43
44 Q Where did he say he did down there?
45 A He said he hit some of the Italians.

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAM G JONES)

202

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Did he say what he hit them with?
2 A His fists.
3
4 Q Did he say anything else he used on them?
5 A Nothing.
6
7 Q Did he say how many he hit?
8 A He didn't say.
9
10 Q Now, Levert, you heard the testimony of William G. Jones
11 concerning the night of 14 August. What do you say to that?
12 BY LEVERT WILLIAMS: I say he is lying, sir.
13
14 (PVT. Levert Williams was excused)
15
16 Q Did you hear Wallace Wooden talk about it?
17 A No, sir.
18
19 Q You saw him down there though?
20 A I didn't see him no time all during the day.
21
22 Q Now, Hones, when we talked the last time you also told me you
23 went down in back of mess hall 700 and threw some coal against the building
24 and while there Robert Greshum was there and some Italian ran out of the
25 building and Greshum and some MP chased him but they didn't catch him.
26 A Yes, sir.
27
28 Q Now, how about Walton. Did you see him down toward the
29 Italian area?
30 A Walton was in our barracks over there.
31
32 Q That was after the fight was over?
33 A Yes, sir.
34
35 Q And he was talking?
36 A Yes, sir.
37
38 Q And he was saying he had been down there and telling what
39 he did?
40 A Yes, sir.
41
42 Q What did he say he did down there?
43 A He said he went in the barracks and hit some of them with
44 the stick.
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAM G. HONES)

1500

203

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q And what else?
2 A That's all.
3
4 Q He just said he went in one of the Italian barracks and hit
5 the Italians that were in that barracks?
6 A Yes.
7
8 Q Did he say he used a knife on them?
9 AQ No, sir.
10
11 Q Did he say anything about driving the jeep into the tent?
12 A No, sir.
13
14 Q Now, Willie Basden. Where did you see Willie that night?
15 A I didn't see Willie Basden.
16
17 Q Who else was it, now, that you saw and recognized down in
18 the area?
19 A Frank Hughes.
20
21 Q And Frank told you what he had done?
22 A Yes, sir.
23
24 Q And you saw what he did?
25 A I seen when he hit one of them with a club.
26
27 Q That was near barracks 709?
28 A Yes, sir.
29
30 Q And did you see this big boy, Robert Mathis?
31 A No, sir.
32
33 Q Did you see Herman Johnson?
34 A No, sir.
35
36 Q Did you see a B. F. Foster?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q Now, who else did you see down there?
40 A I heard Richard Barber and Robert Sanders talking about driving
41 the jeep.
42
43 Q And who else?
44 A And Luther Larkin.
45
Q Who else?

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAM G JONES)

1501

204

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A Hurks.
2
3 Q Sgt. Hurks?
4 A Yes, sir.
5
6 Q And Luther and Hurks were telling what they were doing?
7 A Yes, sir.
8
9 Q And you saw them down there, too?
10 A Yes, they were going down.
11
12 Q And Hurks and Larkin were leading the first bunch down?
13 A Yes, sir.
14
15 Q And Larkin was the one that blew the whistle?
16 A Yes, sir.
17
18 Q And Hurks was the one that came down from the 600 building
19 and joined Larkin near 700 and the two led the first group down?
20 A Yes, sir.
21
22 Q And they got the clubs before they left?
23 A I don't know where they got them.
24
25 Q Who else?
26 A Roy Daymond -- I seen him when he came out.
27
28 Q And Roy had a club as he left the area?
29 A He had a stick.
30
31 Q Who else did you see?
32 A Lee Taylor.
33
34 Q And Lee Taylor, did he have a stick when he was leaving
35 the area?
36 A No, he didn't have anything.
37
38 Q And you saw him leaving the area?
39 A He didn't have anything.
40
41 Q Did you talk to Lee about it?
42 A No, I saw him in the barracks talking.
43
44 Q Who else did you see?
45 A That's all.

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAM G JONES)

1502

205

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who else?
2 A I heard Henry Jupiter talking.
3
4 Q What was he saying?
5 A He said he threw some rocks.
6
7 Q Did he say what building he threw the rocks through?
8 A No, sir.
9
10 Q You just went down inside building 708?
11 A Yes, sir.
12
13 Q In between building 708 and 709?
14 A Yes, sir.
15
16 Q What did you do down there?
17 A Trying to see through the window.
18
19 Q Could you see through it?
20 A No, sir.
21
22 Q Was there anyone in the building?
23 A I don't know, sir.
24
25 Q Weren't there some Italians in there?
26 A It sounded like Italians in there pulling beds up against
27 the door.
28
29 Q Were there any colored soldiers hitting them at the time?
30 A No, sir; the MP's got there.
31
32 Q After the MP's got there, the testimony shows that Herman Johnson
33 and Willie Curry and a bunch of boys went in and beat those boys up.
34 A I came down and saw a bunch of boys there and a bunch of MP's
35 came down.
36
37 Q Who were the boys?
38 A I was on this side of the mess hall, I don't know who they were.
39
40 Q Wasn't one of them Herman Johnson? He's that big fellow. He
41 had a flashlight.
42 A I didn't see anybody with a flashlight.
43
44 Q Didn't the MP's hand him a flashlight?
45 A I don't know.

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAM G JONES)

1503

~~260~~ 206

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q How about Murphy?
2 A I don't know him.
3
4 Q Do you know Willie Curry?
5 A No, sir.
6
7 Q What were they doing in the building?
8 A They went around to the back of the building.
9
10 Q What were they doing?
11 A I don't know whether they went in or not. The light went out.
12
13 Q How many of them were hanging around there?
14 A About ten -- five or ten.
15
16 Q Did they push the door open?
17 A I don't know. I ran down here and looked in the window.
18
19 Q The colored soldiers were trying to get in when you were there?
20 A I don't know whether they were or not. They was pushing beds
21 against the door.
22
23 Q You saw the colored soldiers trying to get in there?
24 A They ran around the back. I don't know whether they went in.
25
26 Q Weren't they trying to get the Italians out?
27 A I don't know.
28
29 Q Weren't some of them thrown through the windows?
30 A I don't know.
31
32 Q Well, you could surely see those boys that were running around
33 the building?
34 A I saw them when they came down the road.
35
36 Q Who were they?
37 A I don't know who they were.
38
39 Q Now, where did you go when you left there?
40 A I went back.
41
42 Q Where did you go?
43 A The MP told me to go out of the area.
44
45 Q Where did you see Ceaser?

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAM G JONES)

207

CONFIDENTIAL

1 A I didn't see Ceaser that day at all.
2
3 Q Well, he saw you.
4 A I didn't see him.
5
6 Q Did you see Clark?
7 A I saw Clark when they brought him out.
8
9 Q Where were you when they brought him out?
10 A Standing right there.
11
12 Q Well, that was when the fight first started.
13 A I know it.
14
15 Q How did you know it was Clark?
16 A A boy told me it was Clark. I hollered and asked.
17
18 Q Who was carrying Clark out?
19 A Robert Sanders.
20
21 Q Did you see him take Snow out?
22 A No, sir.
23
24 Q Where was Clark then when he was hit?
25 A I don't know.
26
27 Q Now, Jones, I want to get the story straight. Is that as far
28 as you went in the Italian area?
29 A That is all I done.
30
31 Q Is that as far as you went?
32 A That is as far as I went.
33
34 Q That's all, Jones.
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

CONFIDENTIAL

(WILLIAM G JONES)(END)

1505

C

208

CONFIDENTIAL

Further testimony of Sgt. Regis Callahan,
taken at Fort Lawton, Washington, on 5 October
1944, by Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.

The witness was reminded that he was still
under oath and of his rights as a witness.

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Q On the night of 14 August, immediately after the fight was
over, were you in the Italian orderly room when a dog tag or identification
tag was found on the floor of that building?

A I was.

Q In what room were you when you first saw the dog tag?

A It was in the large office room.

Q Room X?

A Yes, sir.

Q Did you see the dog tag picked up off the floor?

A Yes, sir; I did.

Q And it was immediately handed to you was it?

A That is right.

Q Did you look at the name on the dog tag when it was handed
to you?

A I did, but I can't recall what it was.

Q Did you then keep in your possession that dog tag during
that night?

A No, I gave it to Major Orem.

Q And previous to your delivering it to Major Orem did you note
the name that was on that dog tag?

A I remember -- I looked at it to find out if it was one of
my men.

Q Did you ascertain the name that was on it?

A Yes, I read the name.

Q And was that name John L. Hamilton?

A I don't know about that.

Q But that is the only dog tag that you delivered to Major Orem?

A That is correct.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CALLAHAN)

1506

209

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Where did you deliver the dog tag to Major Orem?
2 A In the orderly room.
3
4 Q That same night?
5 A Yes, sir.
6
7 Q When you left the orderly room, Sgt. Callahan, I believe you
8 went up toward building 708?
9 A When I first came down to the riot here?
10
11 Q Yes.
12 A I didn't go to the orderly room the first time.
13
14 Q Were you in the vicinity of building 708 during the fighting?
15 A Yes, sir.
16
17 Q And when you arrived at building 708 what did you find going
18 on in front of that building?
19 A It all depends which is the front or the rear.
20
21 Q I will put it this way: When you arrived at building 708
22 what did you find going on at that building at the end nearest building
23 710?
24 A I found a large group of colored men attempting to break down
25 the door of the barracks.
26
27 Q What did you do?
28 A Well, I drew my revolver and drew them off from the immediate
29 vicinity of the barracks.
30
31 Q Didn't you have an MP on guard at that building previous
32 to your arrival there?
33 A No, sir.
34
35 Q Wasn't there an MP present, other than yourself, when you
36 arrived there?
37 A No, sir.
38
39 Q Did you see an MP come up to that building after your arrival
40 there?
41 A Yes, sir.
42
43 Q And do you know that man's name?
44 A Yes, sir. Pvt. Jack Black, 39710382, Attached Unassigned to
45 the Security Detachment.

CONFIDENTIAL

(CALLAHAN) (END)

1507

210

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Testimony of Pvt. Robert Smith, taken at
2 Fort Lawton, Washington, on 5 October 1944, by
3 Lieut. Colonel Curtis L. Williams, IGD.
4

5 The witness was sworn.
6

7 Q State your full name, grade, serial number, organization,
8 and station.

9 A Robert Smith, Pvt., 34797635, 650th Port Company, Fort
10 Lawton, Washington.
11

12 Q Are you familiar with your rights as a witness under the
13 24th Article of War?

14 A Well, to tell the truth --
15

16 Q I will explain it to you. (The 24th Article of War was read
17 and explained to the witness). Do you understand that?

18 A Yes, sir.
19

20 Q On the night of 14 August 1944 were you present down in the
21 area 700 when there was a fight between the colored soldiers and the
22 Italians?

23 A I was present in my barracks.
24

25 Q What is the number of the barracks?

26 A It is Headquarters, but I don't know the number. I haven't
27 been in the Company long.
28

29 Q 672?

30 A Yes.
31

32 Q You were north of that building.

33 A Like you walk in the door here, I was in the 2d bed.
34

35 Q That is building 668?

36 A Yes, sir.
37

38 Q What were you doing when you first heard about the fight?

39 A Sleeping. I was in the bed with a jug to my side and a towel
40 wrapped around it.
41

42 Q Were you sick at that time?

43 A Yes, sir; just like I am now.
44

45 Q What was the first thing that you heard about the fight that

CONFIDENTIAL

(ROBERT SMITH)

1508

211

CONFIDENTIAL

1 caused you to know there was a fight going on?

2 A There was some boys in the place there. Some were in the
3 door and some were in the front. They were making a bunch of fuss and
4 making a whole lot of fuss.

5
6 Q Did you hear a whistle blown there?

7 A No, sir.

8
9 Q Did you hear some of the boys talking?

10 A Well, some of the boys were talking right in front of the door.

11
12 Q What did they say?

13 A I said why so much a fuss going on around here and he said
14 the First Sergeant come to the front door and said the 651st boys don't
15 go down there, the 650th boys are fighting.

16
17 Q Did he say who they were fighting with?

18 A No, he didn't.

19
20 Q Did you see any of the boys in your barracks leave and go
21 down to the area?

22 A No, I didn't pay no attention. I continued to stay in bed.
23 I come to the door, I couldn't get out the door, the boys were standing
24 in a crowd all in the door.

25
26 Q After you heard this noise then and saw these boys assembled
27 out in the barracks you went in and got in bed?

28 A Yes, sir.

29
30 Q When you got in bed you could hear all this noise going on?

31 A Well, I don't know. I didn't pay any attention to it.

32
33 Q Could you hear the window panes being broken?

34 A No, sir.

35
36 Q Could you hear hollering?

37 A Well, the boys in front of the place.

38
39 Q After the fight was over, wasn't there a bunch of the boys
40 came back to the barracks and talked about the fight?

41 A Well, after the fight was over, I was asleep, but one or
42 two days -- the next day -- the Captain calls us in the tent area and
43 he told us "Well, there was a fight last night" -- that's just the
44 way he spoke -- we was all circled around. Over Camp Johnson I heard
45 the boys talking.

CONFIDENTIAL

(ROBERT SMITH)

1509

212

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Who did you hear talking over there?
2 A Well, I can't hardly know their names because I just come in.
3
4 Q What were they saying?
5 A They said, "We was down there fighting with clubs and things",
6 I said, "That's wrong."
7
8 Q Who was it that said that?
9 A Well, let me see. Now, as far as I can get it the names I
10 couldn't tell you. There was a Mitchell.
11
12 Q George Mitchell?
13 A Yes, I think it was.
14
15 Q What did George say about it?
16 A He said he was down there fighting. I never pay no attention
17 to them. There was another boy -- Mathis.
18
19 Q Robert Mathis?
20 A Yes, I think that is his name.
21
22 Q What did you hear Mathis say?
23 A He said he was down there.
24
25 Q Did he say what he did?
26 A No, he never said. He was telling me just like I am talking
27 to you.
28
29 Q Who else was he talking to when he was talking about that?
30 A I just heard a bunch of boys talking.
31
32 Q But Robert Mathis did say he was down there in the fight?
33 A I don't know, but he was probably just talking. I never did
34 see what was doing there.
35
36 Q Who else have you heard talking about it since that time?
37 A I haven't heard nothing since that time.
38
39 Q But you heard Robert Mathis say he was in the fight?
40 A There was a bunch. If I took my training with them I could
41 tell you.
42
43 Q You didn't hear Robert Mathis say he was in the fight?
44 A I did hear him say he was down there. There was a lot of boys
45 talking. It wasn't so many.

CONFIDENTIAL

(ROBERT SMITH)

1510

213

CONFIDENTIAL

1 Q Five or six?
2 A It might have been more than that talking about it.
3
4 Q Did you know Robert Mathis pretty well before the fight?
5 A No, I just come in the Company.
6
7 Q But you knew him well enough to know that he was the man
8 that was talking down there about the fight?
9 A He said so.
10
11 Q You could identify Robert Mathis?
12 A Yes.
13
14 Q I am talking about Robert Mathis. Did you hear him say that?
15 A Him and another boy -- an elderly slim boy -- they was over
16 there in the compound area. They never did say what they done.
17
18 Q If you would be called as a witness you could testify that
19 you heard Robert Mathis tell some other boy that he was down in the area?
20 A Yes, talking in a bunch. Yes, I could say it.
21
22 Q Can you describe for us, without seeing him, this person whom
23 you call Robert Mathis?
24 A Well, he was kind of tall, not so awful heavy.
25
26 Q Tall and slender?
27 A Yes.
28
29 Q You know Robert Mathis, do you?
30 A Yes, I know him when I see him.
31
32 Q Is there anything else, whether I mentioned it or not, that
33 you know about this fight?
34 A Well, no more than I wish the other boys names that was talking.
35 The boys what know I wasn't there, they have gone with the Company.
36 Now, that is Freddie Perry, I was stamping clothes when I got to bed.
37 Joe cut my hair and I gave him a one dollar bill and he give me fifty
38 cents back. I said, "I am going to bed now." Joe Scott and me went
39 to bed at the same time -- big Joe Scott.
40
41 Q Do you know Herman Johnson?
42 A Well, I stayed in the same barracks with him.
43
44 Q He wasn't in there that night was he?
45 A I didn't pay no attention to him.

CONFIDENTIAL

(ROBERT SMITH)

1511

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Q Did you hear him come back in after the fight was over?
A I didn't pay any attention to him.
Q Did you ever hear him say anything about being in the fight?
A No, sir; I never heard him say anything about it.
Q Do you know Wallace Wooden?
A No, sir.
Q All right. Thank you, Robert.

FOR OFFICIAL USE ONLY

REGRADED ~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
BY AUTHORITY OF Per 41

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(ROBERT SMITH) (END)

214

CONFIDENTIAL

1
2
3
4
5
6
7
8
9
10
11
12
13
14
15
16
17
18
19
20
21
22
23
24
25
26
27
28
29
30
31
32
33
34
35
36
37
38
39
40
41
42
43
44
45

Q Did you hear him come back in after the fight was over?
A I didn't pay any attention to him.
Q Did you ever hear him say anything about being in the fight?
A No, sir; I never heard him say anything about it.
Q Do you know Wallace Wooden?
A No, sir.
Q All right. Thank you, Robert.

FOR OFFICIAL USE ONLY

REGRADED ~~CONFIDENTIAL~~
BY AUTHORITY OF Per 41

~~CONFIDENTIAL~~

(ROBERT SMITH) (END)

1512